Declassified in Part - Sanitized Copy Approved for Release 2012/10/04 : CIA-RDP80-00926A003100010005-3 CLASSIFICATION SECRET/US OFFICIALS ONLY CENTRAL INTELEIGENCE AGENCY REPORT INFORMATION REPORT CD NO. DATE DISTR. 29 Jan 1951 . COUNTRY USSR NO. OF PAGES Study of the NKVD **SUBJECT** NO. OF ENCLS. ACQUIRED SUPPLEMENT TO DATE ACQUIRED REPORT NO. 50X1-HUM DATE OF THIS IS UNEVALUATED INFORMATION 50X1-HUM CHAPTER I - The Meaning and Role of the NEVD in the Soviet System The Meaning of the NKVD (2) The Methods of the NKVD (3) The Men of the NKVD CHAPTER II - History of the NKVD Summary of the Mission of the NKVD-MGB (1) Within the Borders of the USSR (2) Beyond the Borders of the USSR CHAPTER III - Structure of the NKVD (1) Administrative Division (2) Local Agencies (3) Central Agencies CLASSIFICATION /US OFFIC NSRB STATE X NAVY AIR FBI ARMY

SECRET/US OFFICIALS ONLY

- (4) Higher NKVD Leadership
- (5) Functions of NKVD Apparatus Components and their Officials
- (6) Chief Administration of State Security Tasks and Structure

CHAPTER IV - The First Special Division of the GUGB NKVD USSR

Operative Recording

Recording of Agents

Agents (Types of)

Recruiting of Agents

Work with Agents

CHAPTER V - The Second Special Division of the GUGB NKVD USSR

Operative Technique

CHAPTER VI - The Inquest Division of the GUGB NKVD USSR

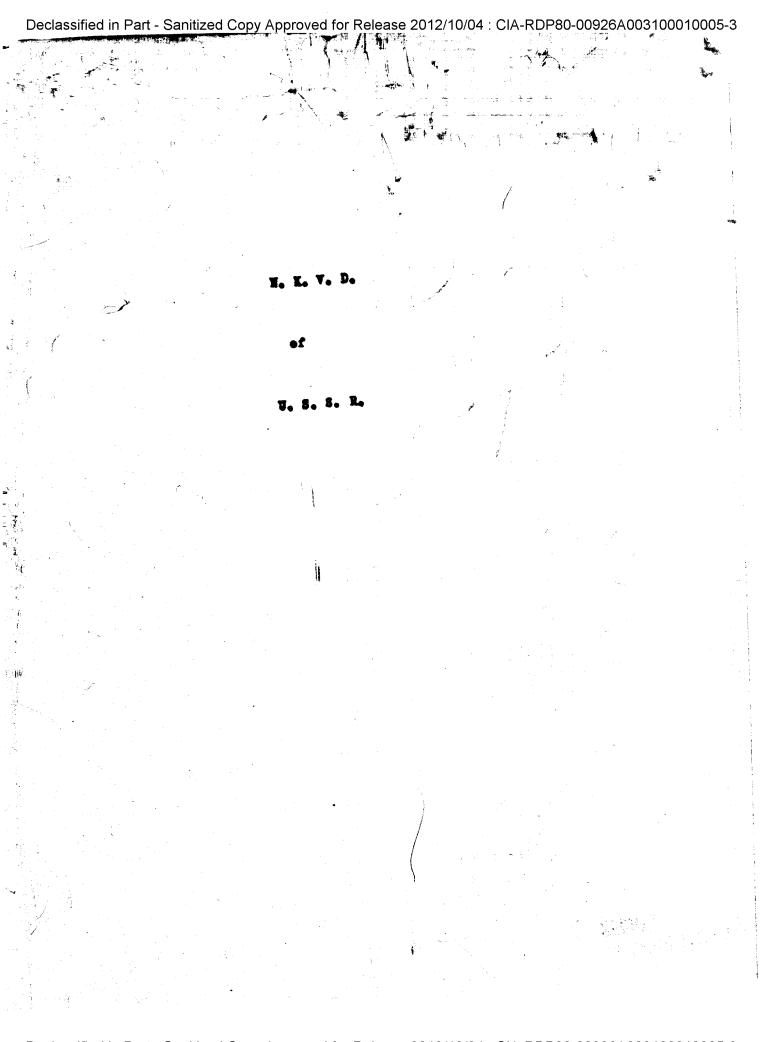
Inquest and Methods of Examination

CHAPTER VII - The First Division of the GUGB NKVD USSR

Mission '

Internal Breakdown

SECRET/US OFFICIALS ONLY



PORTAGED

Every distatorial or, as it is now commonly called, totalitarian regime keeps itself in power mainly by seems of a carefully conceived system of terror directed against the subjects of this regime. The more redical and absolute the character of the dictatorship, the more developed are its organs of terror and oppression.

The 20th Century gave birth to a new form of dictatorships the dictatorship of a party, subordinating to itself the governmental apparatus and forcibly directing the whole life of the country and even the private life of its citizens. Two countries presented a picture of this dictatorship of a party in its most radical and partected forms distional-modalist demany and the Communistic Soviet Union. At present we do not need to point out the similarity of these two dictatorships or even of their apparent autual nostile ideologies. Both of these dictatorships laid down, as the basis of their foreign and domestic policies, the goal of sorid domination and both have made marciless terror the chief weapon of their policy.

permitted world public opinion to become asquainted with all the repulsive details of the activities of the Gestape, SS, and other organs of hitlerite terror. But the activities of the organs of Soviet terror have remained for long years hidden from the world public opinion. Only from time to time has the testimony of individual victims of this terror appeared in the foreign press and attracted some reaction even if only of a seak nature. The problem of Soviet terror was considered as a musclem domestic affair. But now when an ever increasing number of nations fear that Communism will lay on them its deadly pew and when some nations are already becoming acquainted with the SKWD (MGB) in practice, this problem has begun to attract a special attention.

But even now the system of Soviet terror and suppression is known, rather, according to the tespisony of individual victims of the Stalinistic terror. The world is becoming acquainted gradually with the results of the activities of the MEVD (AUS), but not with the inner mechanism of this mest grinder, which exterminates people according to the principle: "If he is not one of us - then he is against us?.

Unly the Russian people can disclose the details of the structure and methods of work of the Soviet terror system, for they then selves have been subjected to the activities of that institutions for 30 years. These people are not deceived by the Kreminsiying propagands about the construction of a free and democratic socialist society in the Soviet Union nor are they misled by the illusions of those who believe that an agreement with Stelin is possible soncerning peace and co-operation.

Only the kussian people may acquaint the other peoples of the world with all the details of the distastful aspects of Communism and only they can perform this work with sufficient knowledge of the matter. This is their moral duty to the suffering kussian people and to all of humanity, but this is, at the same time, their practical contribution to the general struggle for national independence and personal freedom. The deciding moment for the clash between the forces of freedom and forces of tyranay is approaching. In order to halt the attack of Communism and them to destroy this danger it is necessary first of all to know its main weaponstactics and technique of its undermining work outside the Soviet aphere, and methods of terror and suppression inside that aphere. It is necessary to know the most important instruments of the Communist party and of the Stalia dictatorships its organs of "State Security".

The present work is an attempt to analyze the inner structure and methods of work of the Soviet organs of state security. By means of laborious collection of various data, by means of questioning of many former officials of these organs, and from the personal recollections of the authors an attempt has been made to create a picture of the Soviet organs of state security as they existed

on the eve of the world war II. As a matter of fact, in many cases, the authors could not be quitescertain of their data, not to speak of the exactness of details. We have to point out that the work was written not mainly from documents but from the testimony of individuals. Some of them, from the number of former WAVD agents, could have intentionally distorted the picture in order to misinform the reader, but this could mainly be in the details.

The authors set for the emselves the aim of giving a general picture of the organs of the NKVD in a certain limited period of its development; between the end of the "Great Purge" period and the start of the world war II - that is between 1998 and 1941. In this period all organs of Soviet terrorism were united in one office - People's Commissarist for Internal Affairs of the USDA (MKVD). After the war these organs were split between two minimatries - Ministry for State Security (MGB) and the Munistry for Internal Affairs (MVD).

the authors consider that one can understand correctly the structure and methods of work of these two ministries only if he knows, even in general outlines, the basic special structure and methods of work of their predecessor - the akVD. To show the MAVD and to analyse its methods of work - is the sim of this book.

The present work consists of two parts : the text and the "schematic disgress".

The authors

CHAPTER I

THE MEANING AND ROLL OF THE SKYD IS THE SOVIET SYSTEM

1. The Meaning of the MKVD

The People's Commisseriat for Internal Affairs, divided after the war into two ministries, is deservedly called one of the main supports of the Soviet Communist dictatorship in Aussia. The Seviet dictatorship has two main weapons to dominate the people: propagande and terror. The skillful and aggressive propaganda utiliges within the USSk misinformation of the surrounding world, and outside the USSK misinformation of Soviet reality, and in that way gives the Aremlin oligarchy rather wide support among the masses of people, - especially in the west. But the MAVL is the most importent weapon to suppress and dominate the people inside the bowlet Union. For this purpose the akvi concentrates in its names slaust unlimited mesns of control, provocation, and terror. One may say that if the Ubok itself is merely the weapon which Communists are using to conquer the world, then the dave is the mesas of securing the reliability and compliance of that weapon (UCLA) in the already begun struggle for world domination.

Abroad, the MKVD is ordinarily called the boviet becret rolice. This definition is incorrect in substance. It is incorrect because it does not reflect either the true character or the sphere of action of this most important organ of the bolshevist dictatorship. Any police, whether open or secret, is normally an agency of state power. Its mission is to protect the interests of the state, its political security in the first instance. Even the Gestapo, guarding Hitler's dictatorship, was a state police, and not a personal inquisition of Hitler Misself. In the USAR the situation in principle and practice is otherwise. Here are the besic characteristics of this institution:

The state of the s

1. The MKVD is an agency met of state, but of party power. Under this party power one must understand not the Communist Party as a whole, but only its oligarchical and absolute leadership - the Politbure of the Central Committee of the Party, and the leaders of the Party central and local apparatus which help the Politbuto to rule the country: in all, perhaps, some 250-300 persons.

The mission of the akVD is to serve the securing of the interests not of the state, but of this handful of usurpers, who are making kussis their chief weapon in the struggle for the seisure of power over the entire world. The akVD guards the security not of the state as a whole,— that is, of the country, the people, and authority,— but solely and alone the security of the ruling group of persons, which is commonly known under its abstract name—the Soviet Power. This power finds itself in permanent conflict with the majority of the people from the very first days of its birth, as a result of the antideaccratic trescherous coup d'etat of October, 1917. Its policies inside and outside the country are directed against the natural, basic interests of the aussian people and the country.

Those who are inclined to see in this definition some kind of "propagands", are advised to think over the question once more when they acquaint themselves with the fact that the "inti-Soviet slements" files of the MKVD and the system of "GULAG" (Concentration Camps Administration of the MKVD), together embrace nearly all the adult population of the ULAG. **e can mention, to the same effect, the activities of the Economic Administration of the MKVD in preventing the "sabotage" and "diversionist acts", which testify to the compulsory character of the Soviet "building of socialism in one country".

Thus, the first poculiarity of the MKVD is that this type of secret police serves only the interests of the ruling chiefs of the party in power, against the interests of the state which this group rules, contrary to the will of the people which it exploits.

2. The MEWD is an erganization completely independent of the government system in the UBSR, and, partially, of the Party itself. More than that, thanks to their exclusively conspiratorial character, the organization and activities of the MEVD are known in the country only in the most general terms, and then enly, for example, after some facts concerning executions and arrests look out.

It would be wreng to think that the Soviet Government - The Council of Ministers - at any time would discuss the work of the MKVD or would order it to do or not to do something. It is sufficient to say that the Minister of Finance of the USER, who prepares the state budget, and later supervises its fulfilment, does not know the structure, nor the personnel, nor the utilisation of expenses of the MKVD. To the Financial Section of the Gosplan and to the State Budget sector of the Planning Administration of the Ministry of Finance of the USER is presented only the total sum which the MKVD needs. There is no discussion or verification and even this sum does not reveal all the expenditures of the MKVD, because a certain part of these expenditures is included in a special secret fund of the Kremlin.

Hot only the ordinary person, but the most high reaking officials in the USEE know only one thing about the MKVD: that it is
better not to know enything. If this work were to fall into the
hands of a Soviet reader, it would be accepted as a reveletion.
Here is a fact established by one of the authors: Boviet Foreign
Minister Maxim Litvinov did not know what depart@ment of the MKVD
was located in a building which he saw every day from the window
of his office in Djershinsky Street, in Moscow (former imbjanks
Street). One may excuse him, howevers not every official of the
MKVD itself is informed of that which is outside the frame of his
immediate competence. And this fact, by the way, has made extremely
difficult the writing of this work, besed, as was said in the Foreword, on the evidence of former Chekists.

This insulation of the MKVD in the Soviet system of the party - we would say even its independence - is the second outstanding characteristic of the Soviet Secret Police.

3. It would be possible to say, by analogy, that the says is a state within a state. But the insulation of the says within the Soviet state bears a very specific character. It is impossible to understand this if one does not take into account its third peculiarity: the simultaneously insulated and dominating position of the Soviet Secret Police.

This expresses itself in the fact that if the akVD is made a complete secret from other governmental and even party organs (with exception of the very highest - understood to be the rolitaburo and its apparatus), these organs are as well known to the akVD as the palm of your hand; at least they should be I the tentacles of the NAVD penetrate all reaches of governmental and party life in the USSK, beginning with the Council of ministers and ending in the basic party group of some moishos, lost in the Siberian forests. It goes without saying that there are no secreta from the akVD in the private lives of people of the Uson; it is not said in jest that each Soviet citizen has two shadows - one of his own and the other of the NaV...

It is only logical to emphasize that in the covernmental and party system of the USLA special conditions are created in order to favor the spy activities of the AKVD. We may characterize the Soviet system as one in which there occurs a fusion of the state and party, the leadership of which formally is in the hands of the state, but actually in the party, but in this amalgamation there is still one more element, unseen but always present - the MKVD. Its organs are infiltrated into governmental and party organizations, unknown to the latter, in order to fully utilize their oppositunities to check every step of the state and party officials, up to the highest levels of the boviet bureaucratic machine. The most wide spread eace of this fusion, or better to say, permestion of the NKVD in any Soviet governmental institution present the "Special Offices" or "Special Branches" which exist in every factory, in every institution or governmental office.

According to its official regulations (the so called "Stan and tus of the MKVD of the USSR), the MKVD cannot control or, putting it simply, has no right to apy against the Bolshevik Party. Neverthe-less we see that one of the basic links of the NAVD chain, binding the whole country, is the SPO - Secret Political Section or Administration. Its mission is the rooting out of sedition within the party, the liquidation of all and any deviationists, beginning with old time Trotskiptes and ending with the currently modish originators of cringing before the decadent west. The period of the "Great Purge", 1934-1939, shows us that the MAVD can be used against the Party just as well as it is used daily and hourly against the people and country.

4. However, the self seme period of mass extermination of any andall, when the MKVD seized the people, - in the words of Stalin himself, - only for the fact that "they welsed on the same street with Trotskintes" showed that sometimes the Party can be used against the MaVD. we speak of reprisals against Yagoda and all his consorts, totaling, it is said, up to 3,000 avo officials and of the following reprisal against his executioner, leaher.

From this is follows that the NAVE is not the all-powerful mester of the situation in the USSk. Spying against the state poser and even against the party, enjoying a greater concentration them-th of power than the state and party apparatus (in their lower and middle levels), the SEVD finds itself under the thumb of the individual who holds in his hand full power, under the thumb of Stalin. For this aim Stalin uses his own private apperatus, - so called "Stalin's Secretariat", - which operates through the top secret special channels of the Kremlin. Here mealfests itself the famous Soviet system of cross-check insurance, that is a system of a double or even triple control of the and the same person, organization, or action.

Therefore, the fourth peculiarity of the NAVE is that this organ, which arose because the Communists trust no one and under no conditions does not enjoy itself the full confidence of the dictator and his accomplises.

5. Furniter, it must be remembered that the MKVD is a kind of secret police which has its own armed forces, independent from the regular army of the USSA.

The mission of the MKVD armed forces is to support stalin's power within the country against internal enemies, i.e. the people, while the army is designated for defence of his power only against foreign enemies. The bordder, internal, and escort troops of the NEVD are better armed than units of the reguler army; their fighting sbility is much greater than that or regular troops located within the country in time of peace. And this is not a coincidence, -Stelia still remembers the affair of Marshal Tubschevsky. And, in addition to this there are special detechments of the MAVD inside the army. se shall recall only two titles: the "Smarch", with its crew of executioners, and the "stratgle Line retachments", which liquidated deserters and stragglers from the field of battle. nowever, the protection of Stelin, biaself, is not in the hands of NKVD troops, assigned only for the external guard around the Arealin, but is performed by two special units: a) by the so-called "School of the Supreme Soviet", and b) by the First section of the NAVD - both of which ere directly subordinated to the "stalin's Secreteriat" and form a permanent sarrison of the Aremlin.

the NAVL spies against the army, and against the NAVL, spies Stelin, himself. Such is the system. The existence of two armies in one country is the fifth peculiarity of the NAVL, which distinguishes it from the secret police of any other, more normal regime.

6. The history of our times shows that even in the rost undemocratic countries of South America or Central aurope the secret
police, at least formally, are not invested with judicial powers
and the courts are separated from the police. The sixth peculiarity of the MKVD is that it has its own court system independent from
the regular court system of the USSA, but completely subordinated
to directives from the highest Communist Party organs.

The major characteristic of the NAVL court system is that the functions of arrest, prosecution, and adjudication are very often in the hands of one and the same official. The NAVD can Declassified in Part - Sanitized Copy Approved for Release 2012/10/04 : CIA-RDP80-00926A003100010005-3

errest and try by means of its secret "court" any citizen of the USSR. There do exist certain regulations, restricting to some extent the arbitrary actions of the MKWD, but only with respect to those party officials employed in duties of party administration. The entire field of political crime, which is more than wide in the USSR, remains the sphere of the MKWD, and it operates this aphere as it wishes with no control or accounting what so ever, except to the dictator in the Kremlin.

however, the more important political cases remain in the hands of the NKVD only during the preliminary investigation, after which they are decided by the high party leadership. These decisions are then carried out by the NKVD, just as similar decisions and directives are carried out by the regular court system of the USSR.

7. It is necessary to mention here still one more peculiarity of the dkVD, although since the time of the Gestape this ceased to be its monopoly. We have in mind that the dkVD operates all penal institutions. Included in this term of penal institutions are those prisons which hold so many inmates that they are organized as camps. We speak here about the system called GUDAG (Administration of Camps) which operates all numerous concentration and labor camps with their many millions of inmates. All these prisoners find themselves in an uncontrolled power of the HKVD which prescribes the conditions of their confinement, which can change and previous court decision by means of special camp "courts", which operates special may rings inside the camps just as it does in the "free" Soviet society, etc.

to note that in its usage of forced labor the NKVD is semi-officially recognised as an erganisation taking part in the "planned construction of the socialistic economy of the USCH". The same which of the NKVD carries out a number of most important governmental industrial projects - it digs semals, brings into production coal mines and oil wells in the Arctic, cuts timber for expert etc., thereby providing the Soviet Union and the World Communist movement with dellars and gold.

As a result, the seventh and not unimportant peculiarity of the NEVD is its function as a slave owner and colonizer of arctic regions.

8. Jur expose would not be complete, more than that, sould be incorrect if still one more very important aspect of the Mayo were not treated for - its significance to the outer world. If we were to say that the USAs is nothing ather than a case for the spreading of communistic world revolution, then it sould be clear that the Mayo must play its own great role in this unnertaking. Then the reader acquaints himself with the functions of the Foreign Administration of the NKVD, then it would not be difficult to come to the realization that the Mayo may be termed not so much a so-viet as an international communistic secret police. This side of the activities of the Mayo is now cetter known.

Canadian staric say case, that the nave occupies intell only site ordinary espionage for military and economic purposes, so is the case in other countries, the persecution of nussian emplets, the nurser of enti-coviet activists - auch as rectarly, and foreign states and a such as the french president countries, the secretary of the Central Committee of the openish committee, the secretary of the Central Committee of the openish committee there, are such as a constant of mensal fin nuing orang, the coviet emphasisator in maximum co, constantin Omenski, etc., - all these being examples of the days activities working in behalf of the international Communist movement.

one may raise an objection that this field of activity does not present the monopoly of the NAVD and that political morders have been frequently practiced by the accret police of other countries, mentioning as an obvious example the Gestapo activities in Nazi Germany. We do not intend to deny this fact, but the new and principally distinguishing factor in the case of the NAVD is its systematic methods, not just isolated cases. We may say it is a planned system, well thought out, organised, and executed with merciless consequence.

Along with its terroristic and black-sailing functions egainst anti-Soviet organizations outside the USDA, the MKVD plays still another important role for the Kremlin. This is to spy upon Soviet personnel in other countries - such as diplomats, trade representatives, and even Soviet military espionage agents. Included also within its competence are the leaders of the international Communist movement. Just as within the USDA, the MAVD thereby provides for a complete system of double and triple control.

This international function of the MaVL, sithough the last on our list of peculiarities, is, never the less, in its significance one of the most important characteristics of the Kremiin's secret police.

2. The Methods of the MKVL

methods of the MAVD, festures which in meny respects differ from those habitually used by ordinary secret police. It is still possible to say this even though the world now knows the methods used by the Gestepo.

1. From the very first words of Lenin's decree creating the "Cheks", - forefunder of the Present day and (Mus), - it was clearly evident that the Loviet secret police was to be and became a purely terroristic organization. At the present time the period of revolutionary romanticism is past and the Mayo is no longer haried as the "proleterian guillotine" or the "all devouring flame of the ned terror". "Euresucracism, this second nature of the Communistic experiment, has now laid its heavy hand on this apparatus for the hunting and extermination of people. Now people are liquidated according to the "rive-year plans". This will be made clear in the chapter which describes a map hanging in the office of the First Special Section of the MKVD, in moscow, - the map covered with marks indicating numbers of potential victims, that is, the numbers of "ASE" (anti-Soviet elements) in different areas of the USEM.

This map reveals a direct link or connection between the present form of the "red terror" and the construction of war plants and dwells in the wide regions beyond the Arctic circle.

The terror of the MKVD has now become less open. No longer are the names of victims published and slogens advertized. Mever the less, the terror has become even more civel, and the earlier days a man might be openly condemned and shot because as a member of the former upper classes (simply - a "former") he, by the METE-ist definition of classes, either had or would take part in the right against the regime. Now people are liquidated by means of overwork, under the inhuman conditions of the boviet labor camps, only because the regime needs to build a factory or dig a canal. The hunt for people is carried on at present time not only because of danger to the regime, but because of a need for new slave labor power, we are speaking, of course, of tendencies, and therefore do not include the executions of the more active political enemies, such as members of the Vissov movement and the unfortunate rughtives caught and returned to the boar by the Western powers.

2. From what has been said above it is already possible to see the second peculiarity of poviet territies, namely, - the preventive character of this terror. Lenin himself declared the working principle of the Soviet security organs to be directly opposed to the teachings by Christ. That is, it is better that nine innocent should suffer than that one guilty should be allowed to escape punishment. Categories of "sutomatic ariest" was not an invention of the victors over the Masi Germany, for one of the first steps taken by the Cheke at the end of 1917 was the introduction of a system of mass not tages. The difference here is that from those arrested by the Cheke, as a "precautionary measure", - the former officers, aristocrats, bankers, professors, priests etc., - were dragged the victims of the periodic executions.

One can even say that the MKVD has its own sociologists for, by means of the hed Terror, Lenin and then Stalin changed in a drestic way the social and even age-group structure of the hussian population. When Stalin boasted in one conference that in a mussian village one could not find "in day time with a light" the figure; of

the old village "elder", village priest or a kulak, he only paid his respects to the sociological talents of his NKVD.

with an utmost energy throughout all those countries which were occupied by the Soviets during and after the war. And if a new war does not interrupt this new wave of the med Terror, the text-books on elmography will have to cross out the names of such nations as actonism or Lettish, and to a greater extent simplify the picture of social composition of the population in roland, Grech-blovaxia and the Balken countries.

3. In specking of the methods of the ANYD, we must note that the officials of the NAVD can act areitrent and enjoy the complete impunity of action as long as they degrade the people, as long as they torture and murder in accordance with the currently existing political line - the political line of the Polithero. Though, in the office of the Prosecutor General of the Ubak there is a special prosecuting attorney for suppervision over the MAVI, never the less it is a rare case, bordering on a miracle, when a petition is entertained against the actions of some organ or official of the MKVD and a case is reviewed. But even then, no disciplinary measures are taxen against the Chekists even is they are guilty of the ceath of an innocent individual. In these cases, as a great kindness to the relatives, is issued a certificate to the effect that "the above mentioned was penalized in connection with certain sifairs which, upon further investigation, are not substantiated ... ". Such a cartificate at least gives the widow of the penalized one an opportunity to receive work, end his children the opportunity to enter school. etc.

And when the party line changes, it may happen that yester-days torturer-investigators are thrown in the same prison cell with the persons when only last might they had tortured by sheekling to the well or finger nail splitting. It is well known that the occusations of lagoda occasioned by themselves the death, without exception, of all his closest eb-workers, all those Paulers, Trilissers, Borness, Cohens, and Redenses - who had just before been glorified

as the "wonderful Chekist legion". Together with them "walked down the corridor" as enemies of the people" hundreds and hundreds of their assistants; nearly all of whom, through long years, themselves "sent down the corridor" tens of thousands of Bussian people, in the greater part innocent even in the face of the famous 58th article of the Soviet penal code "x")

Though Stalin thought that he was liquidating only his own enemies, in these cases he was putting a bullet in the nape of the neck of the unquestionably real enemies of the people. In his own turn, the downfall of the killer and successor of lagoda - the "Stalinist", "iron" downisser Yeshov, brought about its own bloody purge among those who only just before thoroughly purged the Chekist cadres. All those executors who worked with Yeshov were shet without exception. Stalin know how to emerge from water dry.

Generally speaking, every unsuccessful operation, especially a failure in the secret work abroad, results in the severe punishment of the responsible NAVD personnel. There is no doubt that Canadian justice indirectly caught up with others, in addition to those who set on the defendant's bench at montreals the SAVD dealt severely with all of those people who, being in Canada, were so instentive as not to apprehend Igor Gusenko. It is certain that some of the former collegues of the Emssian school teacher Kosienkine, who jumped from the window of the Soviet consulate in New York, were obliged to pay dearly for her act when they, in turn, had to "jump" from America back into Lubjanks atreet.

actually, suspicion and apy fever flourish not less, but more, within the walls of the MXVD than outside. Schind every Chekist stands another one, if not two, checking on his loyalty. Consequently, the inclination is to trink that the object of this surveillance is nothing more than another "heretofore undiscovered enemy of the people". This spirit of satual suspicion and internal apy fever was successfully exploited by the Japanese intelligences

m) One of many Chekista terms for the death penalty.

mx) This article deals with "drimes" against the Seviet political system.

in the chapter on the "ERU" (Counter Intelligence Administration) we shall cite the case of a successful provocation which resulted in the messacre of Chekists by Chekists themselves.

4. One of the most peculiar characteristics of the MAVD lies in its methods for utilisation of agents. The Soviet secret police relies not so such upon the quality, as upon the quantity of its agents. From the outside it may appear that this manie of the MEVL tends to convert the entire population of the Soviet Union into a gigantic network of its spies. Ministers and neumenaids, generals and immetes of concentration camps, scientists and miners, artists and school boys, people without regard for age and sex, are recruited as egents of MAVL. There is only one restrictions the manual on recruiting "does not recommend the recruiting of children less than twelve. years old" in view of "the danger that they will not obserwe the rules of secrecy". It is understandable that nebody can even approximately estimate the number of NAVE agents. But there is no doubt that they number millions, it not tens of millions. It is sufficient to say that "according to regulations" the ordinary muscow house must have the following number of AEVD agents: the caretaker, the doorman, and at least one agent per apartment ! It is no wonder that in the Soviet Union it is said, helf joxingly, helf seriously, that if two people are chosen at rendom, one of them is a "seksot", that is, a secret agent of the MEND.

The explanation of the reliance upon the quantity of agents lies evidently in the lack within the MKVD of qualified personnel able to properly train agents. We will treat separately the characteristics of NKVD personnel, showing the extremely low level of their general and even police education. These people are very often unable to cope with their tasks, and in order to clear their cases they resort either to beatings of the arrestees or to exhausting by means of endless questioning and special conditions of confinences.

x) This applies to the typical Moseow epartment, which houses five or six families.

According to a Mussian saying, the Cheka makes a virtue of its shortcomings, proclaiming that " the whole people side the MAVDS In practice this means that the Communists and members of the Kemsomol are formally required to collaborate with the MKVD. As Lenin said a "Every Communist must be a Chekist", when recruited as agents they are told that this is their party duty. To use non party people who refuse such work it is hinted that such refusal shows that they are evidently "against the Soviet Power". And if some brave men still refuse to become a traitor to his relatives and friends, they are directly placed in the file of "ASE" (anti-boviet elements) and sooner or later repressed.

As a result, there is created a gigantic net of secret exents of all embracing types. This net covers, without exception, all Soviet institutions, beginning with the Polithero and ending with the lavatory attendents. Using this net, the MKVD "keeps Chexist vigilance", that is, it uses the daily reports of its millions of agents for the operation of its system of preventive terror. Of course, the value of these egents, recruited in large part under threats, is not great and for experienced intelligence agency they, by tuesselves, do not present much danger. On the other hand, because of their very abundance the MAVD reaches its goal, so to say, from the opposite end: knowing that HKVD agents are everywhere and seeing such as agent in almost every person, the opponents of the Soviet regime simply fear to show any activity, not to speak of organizing any opposition. The preventive nature of Soviet terror, in this case, also plays its prominent role in forbidding the very conception of ideas of struggle against Communism.

The system under mich the NKVD uses agents may be compared to the actions of a fisherman who, having only bed mets, fills the entire ocean with them in the hope that in at least one of them he would natch a small fish. But what is impossible for an individual fisherman, however espable or rich he might be, is possible for the MKVD, because it has at its disposal an unlimited number of agents and can at any time turn almost any Soviet divisor into Its agents. The more so, since the agents work for nothing! The sole limiting

factor is the lack of MKVD officials to direct the agents, read their denunciations, and to instruct them. Only in this fact lies the explanation why a certain percentage of the population of this "country of victorious socialism" reasins outside this gigantic net of NKVD agents. Future historians of the epoch of Communism in hussis will undoubtedly take the figure of a miserable and unhappy MKVD informer as a symbol of this period. In other words, this unhappy figure is the real support of Stalin's power. This support has a asse character but is far from being trustworthy.

5. It is hardly necessary to remind of the fact that the MKVD is not too scrapulous about its methods and actions. We have no intention to compare in this respect the AkVD with the famous inquisition or with the westape. We avoid this comparison because no one can give the exact number of about victims of their terture—chambers, and because here the salm of priority undoubtedly belongs to the NKVD - it has as its object much greater masses of population, and the energous territory or the Soviet Union and it has been in operation for a longer period of time, but there is one more peculiarity in the methods of the NKVD which has no precedence, even in the most sinister institutions or this kind.

Hore we have in mind the artificial fabrication of culprits and forged cases or, using the NAVD terminology .- "sctivisation of suspects". Certainly, even the principle, laid down by Lenin misself, that it is better to punish nine innocent persons then to let one guilty to escape punishment - even this ominous thesis stimulstes the felse accusations and incorrect court decisions. But the MXVD has invented something which is much worse than the condemostion of a person whose guilt was not proved, or who is known to be innocent but who was forced, in result of the tortures and unbearable conditions in the prison, to blacksail himself. The MKVD invented the method of provocation. Formally, the usage of this method is forbidden. But practically, - the provocation is the chief method of work in the MKVD. For without this method of provocation, the MKVD would hardly be able to collect even one per cent of the human rew material meefied for the disgusting meet grinder in the Lubyenke squere.

- 16 -

without a proper number of victims, the MKVD would never receive its prestige of a "chastising sword" or "the body-guard of the conquests of October", while the Chekists would not be able to enjoy their good life, their numerous orders and governmental rewards, and all those numerous privileges which transform these hangmen into the Soviet elite. One must not forget that as a merit of work of every individual Chekist is taxen the number of enemies" he has discovered, revealed and punished in a certain period of time. If this number is big enough, - then the Chekist is good. his vigilance is high, and his loyalty to the case of Lenin-Stalin is blazeless. But if this number is small, - then this Chexist has to forget any orders, promotions, a separate apartment, or a car this dream of every Soviet careerist. Just in the same way, every culet of an administration or a local organ of the MAVD is eager to demonstrate, by seems of a number of "coffine" that the "unit. trusted to him" is successfully fulfilling the program of the rarty and the government, and "is holding sloft the banner of Chexist viallance".

But what to do if there are no real spies, trotskyltes, and wrackers? Then they are being "activated", according to a wonderful thekist term. Inis means that certain previously marked victims are being provoked, with the help of some special agents, to make some remarks or to conduct some actions, which can be interpreted later on as anti-boviet ones. Shen taking this into account, we can definitely claim that at least a half, or may be even three-quarters, of all the victims of the MAVI are composed or the victims of these provoked "activizations".

But we shall not blame here the Chekists alone. As we shall see from the chapter dealing with the activities of the "SPU" - Secret Political Administration of the MAVI, the entire work of this branch, in its struggle against the "anti-rarty deviations" and in applies against the ruling Communist party, is prescribed by special instructions of the Poliburo, channelled through

The Chekist term for those doomes to execution.

the Special Sector of the Central Committee, or coming from Stalin himself. These instructions normally prescribe to "activate" that or the other "deviation" according to Stalin's political needs. To-day he decides to hit those whom he considers as guilty of Protakylsm, and the "EFU" immediately "activates", by means of provocative conversations, leeflets etc., those communists who are marked for subsequent "liquidation". To-morrow he needs to "render harnless" the former opponents of Vyshinski at the Institute for poviet kight, and the SiU "activates" the "scum of resnukania", that is those Soviet students of law who repeated, siter mark, that under these Communism the state is bound to "die out".

The monstrous processes egainst Linoviev, Assence, asdex, butarin - all these are simply the examples of times counterfelt cases which Stelin needs in his own political interests. The example of this kind of forged cases represent all those numerous transdies when millions of innucent people are being sent to the MAVD camps, simply because the Complan decided to dig a certain channel or to bore some new bil wells. Following Stalin, every individual Chemist starts to forge similar counterfeit cases, but in his own interests. He knows only too well, that Stelin trusts only those setch-dogs which bite the greatest number of by-passers.

their clumsy character, he have already spoken of the lack of qualified, intelligent, and good workers that in one stroke turned the Cheke-NKVD into a torture chamber, then we find that the majority of people falling into the nands of the NKVD do so not as a result of any sly or well thought out secret police combination, but because of simple denunciation concerning their careless words or actions which might be interpreted as "sabotage", thanks to the reports of the ubiquitous informants of the NKVD. After falling into the nends of the NKVD, a man, somer or later, signs, a confession; again, not as a result of artful fine work of the investigator but as a result of beatings, torture, coercion, prevocation, promises and other methods, in a large part of a physical nature.

If one were to open the doors of the gloomy buildings in the block between the Lubyanka and Myssnitskaya streets, one would be convinced that the implements of torture which are to be seen in a museum are no more than children's playthings. The MEVD has its own means of physical persuasion, made to its ewn specifications in its own work-shops. If to this method is added that the guiding principle of the MEVD is that every arrestee is an "emeny of the people" whose guilt must only be made official and his accomplices found, then it is not surprising that a "false arrest" in the USLR is almost impossible. Events of any one escaping with a laconic document of "released by the NEVD" can be counted on ones fingers. Outside the wells of the MEVD everyone swears of his love and devotion to Stalin. Inside these walls every one confesses to his "criminal plots" against Stalin ...

Such is the system of the Soviet terror, the flesh and bone of the Communist system.

3. The Men of the NEVD

Although executioners are necessary at all times and to all regimes, the profession has never been considered particularly nonorable. However, the USSk has in this has its own word, for the first organizer of the Communistic torture-chamber, leader of the Soviet hangmen-Chekists, Felix Djershinsky, was called even in his lifetime "Knight of the proletarian revolution", and Lenia and Stelin directed their most flattering epitaphs to the Chekists. Here are a few examples :

"Chekists - threat to the world bourgeoisie", "Highest and first sons of the revolution", "No higher or more honorable name than that of a Chekist" (Lenin), "Chekists - bodyguard of Socialism," "Eyes and ears of the Party", and so forth.

Not only smong the Communists themselves, but among all the people there is cerried on the uninterrupted work of preising the "difficult but noble profession of the Chekist" (Stelin), setting up the Chekist as an ideal for other workers, as an "example of

messes of literature, the object of which is not only to direct the enthusiasm of the people toward the preise and love settheir handham, but also to incide the people to help them in their dirty work of espionage and treachery. Even in the chgildren's readers one finds descriptions of the "brave deeds" of various Chekists and praise for their activities, which are aiding socialist construction by the "liquidating of all of its enemies". Djerzhinsky, Kirov, and Beris are "beloved" heroes of children's textbooks, songs etc., with the help of which the Communists are polsoning the growing generation.

The libelous designation "Charlet" which is pronounced with fear and caution by the man on the street, was accepted arrogantly by the boviet regime as a bange of the most nonorable profession in the Soviet Union. The Charlets call themselves therists, and for the most outstanding of them there has even been established a special emblem "honorable Charlet", - a sword, surrounded by a laurel wreath, mounted on a rhombold, bjerzhinsky was possessed with the idea of creating out of his henchmen a sort of closed caste, resembling a monastic order: with severe, ascetic customs, shoost isolating themselves from life.

Djerzhinsky, a Fole by birth, and as it heppens, a Catholic, obviously borrowed his idea from Ignatius Loyola. Not long before his strangely sudden death in 1926, Djerzhinsky even ordered work started on the writing of special "Chekist Status", that is, a collection of rules of conduct, a codex of morale, so to speak. Although the word "moral" is definitely out of place in this instance this fact did not disturb Djerzhinsky and his successors. All the more, mince Leain gave such a definition of morals : "The basis of Communistic morals is the struggle for the strengthening and fulfilment of Communism".

and this definition was later completed by Stalin thus:
"From the viewpoint of Communist morals, that is moral which contributes to the extermination of the old regime and the strengthening of the new, socialist order". Consequently, the fellows from

The state of the s

Imbysnks Street consider themselves as some sort of "Stakhanevites of Communist morels". And so they cabble about Chekist ethics. In the first piece in "Chekist ethics" stands the idea of devotion to the Party. This means that a Chekist must torture, torment, and kill any body whom the Party considers or might consider an enemy. This notwithstanding the fact that tomorrow any and everybody might be proclaimed "enemies of the people". It is a known fact that by order of Stalin, Yagoda and his closest collaborators, among whom were all of the members of the Collegium of the MXVD, were shot, not by ordinary henchmen of the MXVD, but by their closest subordinates.

be vigilant and "undefatiguably uncover and destroy the enemies of the people". If we substitute the word "preventivence" for the word "vigilance" then the question will become clear. A classic example of vigilance, depicted in all Chekist textbooks, is how a member of the Politburo, Lazar Assenovich, salving at that time as the right hand of Stalin, "uncovered the camouflaged enemies of the people".

In the late thirties, Assanovich supervised the construction of the subway in Moscow. It one of the tunnels two sorkers, semiliterate pessents, father and son just arrived from the country, decided to drink water from the fire hose. Having left they failed to turn off the fauset, As a result of this, a section of the tunnel the next day was flooded. An agent - representative of the MKVD - reported to Assanovich, that the offenders were already arrested. But Kaganovich ordered the arrest also of the chief of the subway section. "In the first place he was negligent toward his work - his duty was to supply the mines with drinking water Sountains. In the second place - added Assanovich - investigate thereughly his background". After two weeks the unfortunate engineer confessed, that in the past he was an officer of the tearist army. Hence it was made rather easy to make a conclusion about the assbotage.

As regards to the third demand of the "Chexist ethics", their "incorruptibility", one has to recognize, that, as a rule, in the MEVD this requisite is respected. But this is because of the simple reason : the Chekists are much better off materially then their vietims. In those few cases, however, when the victims have valuable stones or gold (and this occurs rerely in the USSE), this does not produce an impression on the Chekist; wealth in the Soviet society plays an insignificant role - the power of money there is exchanged fully for the force of power.

It is necessary to note still enother requirement which is presented to the Chekist. This requirement is - to be merciless toward the enemy. As in the above case, this principle of the "Chekist ethics" does not present in practice any sort of difficulty. We have already mentioned this, while speaking about the methods of work of the Soviet secret police. On the contrary, sometimes the leaders have to ask the Chekists not to be so energetic in following their "ethics of mercilesaness". So, for example, neris, having replaced the drazed Yeahov, in a special order pointed out to the almost creased supordinates of leahovs "One can she even must best, but it is not necessary to best every one".

In this case Belia was least of all led by the feeling of humanity to be human means to be a poor Communist. The reason was simply that the prisons of the NKVL were filled with victims of the wild terror during the time of Yeanov, all these people were clearly innocent of the crimes, to which they had confessed only because of the methods of questioning of the "Iron reople's Commisser". A special commission re-examined their cases, and not desiring to set free the witnesses who had seen the former, gave the them a comparatively light punishment — such as benishment to the timber cutting in the extreme north, however, the besten, tortured, elmost crass, people firmly held to their previous confessions, extracted from them during the days of leshov. They repeated, for example, that they wanted to mill Yeshov himself (at that time already proclaimed as an enemy of the people), or that, they were spies for the long non-existent state Austria-nungary.

ordinary Not only among cample people, but also snong the Communists. among the very highest circles of the Soviet state and Party dignitaries, the very word MEVD brought fear; carefully screened from other of course, under the pretense of hypocritical praise & regards to "our glorious Chekists". Therefore, ususelly: they stoop and crewl in order to try to gain the favor of the Chekists. The uniform of the Chekist is equal to the master key of a thief - to this man, with the crimson braid on his collar and with a blue top on his hat, are svailable all of the goods of the meager boviet life: a room in the hotel, a berth on the train, a ticket to the theater etc., - and ell this without quelng, this plague of simple Soviet mortals. It goes without saying that to bring's suit in court against the Chekists - is a thing unthinkable in the USSE. In a country, in which laws exist only on paper, there is one unwritten but strictly observed laws the NAVD is above the Law, the NAVD is authorised to do as it pleases because it is the NKVD who creates the laws.

It is not surpising that, under such conditions of unlimited arbitrariness, the members of the NAVD feel themselves semi-gods. The secret character of the work, coupled with self isolation in private life (as a rule the Chekista live in houses of the NAVD or in special separate apartments), led to the forming in the USSA of a particular closed caste. In their own country, the Chekista live similar to the Americans in their occupation some of wermanys they have their own mode of life, their better supply, their places for relaxation and rest, and last but not least their own courts.

All this, taken together, gradually forms a special type of men. The experienced eye can unmistakebly guess whether a stranger has any relation to the "organa" or not. And this not only by conversation, but by his behaviour, even by appearance.

lestly, we must note the mational composition of the Chemists. From the very first days of the Soviet power this question began to play an important role in the internal politics. It must be explained that, as the leaders of Belshevism, also the management of the

E) In the Chekist slong - EKVD.

control Soviet institutions, including the Cheke-CGFU-MEVD, in the majority of cases were people of non-Mussian origin. This fact was particularly apparent during the years of the leadership of Yagoda. It is well known that during this time there took place the cruel reprisals against the Russian peasants (liquidation of the "kulaks"). In the spees eyes of the population, MEVD and its work acquired a definite significance.

The second of th

The picture changed radically after Stalin liquidated the opposition, the leaders of which, basically, were of non-Russian origin. The place of Yagoda and his companions in the MXVD was occupied by new people, whose acceptance depended largely upon three conditions: they had to be, if possible, of Russian nationality; they had to come from the inferior regions of the Soviet Union: and they were to have neither relatives nor close acquaintances abroad. This was a tribute to the apy fever which gripped the Kreelin in the middle thirties. One of the first results of this delivery of the "avenging sword of the proletariat" into the hands of people "from behind the plow", - the boviet expression meaning simple and poorly educated people, with a low mental development, - but "to the bitter and devoted to the case of Lanin-Stalin", was a significent lowering of the effectiveness of the MKVD.

Having lost its experienced agents and investigators, the MKVD was forced to use the most primitive methods of a provincial police establishment. There began a period, when the entire task of the MKVD was achieved simly by beating prisoners. Formerly, the MKVD was joined "by calling", that is, by those who had a taste for bestial, sadistic blood shed, How people joined the MKVD as a result of "Party mebilisation", i.e. at the directive of the Party. It is not surprising, that many of them proved to be absolutely unfit for the "specifis" work of the MKVD, the of the erters of the MKVD mentions with indignation, for the squastion of others, that one of the new batch of Chekists, having acquainted bimself with the demunciation of a former Trotakyite, called him into his effice

end began to admonish him : "it is not good to engage in anti-Party propaganda, Comrada Party didn't you, in the old days, sign on cath to be loyal to the Party?"

only by slow stages could the MAVD re-establish a cadre of qualified egents, spies, and technicisms of secret work. Mowever, the war with Germany once more found the poviet secret police in a state of complete disorganization. This explains such bungling methods in the fight against the derman espionage as the wholessle errest of all people with "German manes", or the banishment to middle Asis of the entire population of the Autonomous Jerman Volganspublic. They did not know how to ferret out the actual spents, and besides, they did not went to be pothered with "trifles".

mare is reason to believe that only by the very end of the war was the AKVA able to conduct some limited activity in German territory. This can be seen, for instance, in the attempted assistantion of waneral Visasov in 1944, even those ejects who were successfully infiltrated into other countries were very poorly qualified, no, notwithstanding the broadest co-operation, which are solved to the poviet repatriation missions in the Western zones of bernany and Austria, the majority of the anti-hoylet elements and deserters from the poviet union have successfully secreted themselves, either within the masses of nearly of their their because economy, it must be believed that the meanness of their own cadres until now mas compelled the AkVi-hos to run the risk of a wider use of local fifth column members in the "capitalistic" countries.

CHAPTER II

HISTORY OF THE NEVE

During the three decades of its existence, the apparatus of the poviet secret police experienced a whole series of re-orbamizations and even changed its name five times. This fact did not by one lots change the essence of Stalin's secret police, one of the principal means to organise the world-wide Communist revolution.

The following is a chort mistory of the date

Volution in Mussis, the Council of People's Commissers of the March created the "All-Mussian extraordinary Commission for the fight against counter-revolution, sabotage, and speculation". This agancy was ordinarily called, in abbreviation, Co.A. and therefore received, among the People, the colloquial designation "Cheke" or "Chrezvichsika". The first chairman of the All-Mussian Cheka was the showe mentioned Felix Djerzhinsky, at Whose instigation the Commission was created.

The total med Terror was begun by the where in august, 1918, after the murder of the chairmen of the retrogred Chere wishell (2018) Uritsky and an attempt on the life of menin.

From this time on the functions of this bloody instrument of the Bolshevik dictatorship were clearly determined. So, for instance, in the proclamation of the retrograd boviet on the occasion of the attempt upon the life of Lenin, it was said: "For the murder of Comrade Uritaky, and for the attempt upon the life of the leader of the world revolution, Comrade Lenin, the proletariat will answer the rotten bourgeoisie with death blows. Not with an eye for an eye, but with a thousand eyes for one. A thousand lives of the bourgeoisie for the life of our leader. Long live the med Terror!"

tor the literation of the messes lies in the extermination of exploiters. That is the task of the Cheka."

the executive of bjershinsky in the Cheks, one of the most bloody henchmen of the kussian people; a Latvien, Latsis, - was still here iranks "The struggle is One of lite and death. If you do not kill, you will be killed. Therefore kill, that you may not be killed!

from the time of Stalin there appeared in use a number of new, but not less expressive slogens, here are some of thems

"AAVb - The vindictive sword of the proletarian revolution!"

turing the period of the Civil war of 1918-1922, the med terror cost many millions of lives. After the termination of the Civil war and after the Bolsheviks had consolidated their power over mussia, this terror not only failed to cease, but with each year it consumed more and more victims. System of accusies of superession and compulsion was continually sidened and penetrated deeper through-out all the pores of administrative, social, and economic life of the country.

Others) was represented into the otate rollitical administration (chara) was represented into the otate rollitical administration (considerativeness Politicheskoye Opravienie), in aboreviation -GrU, which quickly was renamed "Unified Litate rollitical administration" (corU). The essense of this reorganization was that the system of vindictive organs of the Soviet dictatoranip was significantly extended and a new system included additionally: border guards, transport guards, administration of places of confinement, and also make significantly widened the net of secret agencies within the med are say and the Communist Party. Beside that, by 1922 the Communist was expanding its large activity. Correspondingly, the outer-political teams of the GPU sere to assist the Comintern in certain special apheres of its activities. The Cheka are designed to act only within the country, while the GPU, from the very first day, stretched out its tentacles beyond the borders of the Union.

Salah Sa

This reorganisation had also a great significance in principle: the Cheke was created, as an extraordinary measure, for the defense of the Soviet power during its most critical moments; but the UFU, at the moment of its creation, was conscived as a permanent organ of the Bolshevik distatorship. Thus, it was directly recognised, that the mass terror is an inclienable part of the devict system. In the course of twelve years, from 1922 to 1934, the Soviet power openly recognised this situation.

On June 10, 1934, the OGFU was reorganized into the MEVD of the USER. This abbreviation comes from the full sussian title of that institution - Merodny Komissarist Vautrennih Del MSEE. Formally this reorganization was explained by the fact that the period of struggle against the counter-revolution had ended, that the Moviet power was definitely strengthened, and therefore there was no more need for the existence of a special organ for the suppression of counter-revolution and opposition within the country. However, the "Great Purge", - beginning shortly after this reform, - with its millions of victims, showed that this official explanation did not in any measure correspond with the actual reason of the transformation.

The actual reason of this reorganization was that at this time the apparatus of the OGPU again so widened, complicated and expanded, that it could no longer be packed into the frame of one administration. The system of universal trailing and spying covered all of the country. This was no more, and by no means, one single organization. This was a complicated net of specialized organs of terror and spying, penetrating to the very deepest corners of the wast territory of the Soviet Union and far beyond its borders.

The essentials of the reorganisation of 1934 were, that besides the complicated act of political suppervision system of the
OGFU, a new system of the MEYD included also the administration of
the police and criminal inquiry, passport administration, administration of the fire department and administration of the transport, even
a department for the recording of the acts of the civilian state
(EAGS). Besides that, the MEYD united and subordinated into one system all the numerous and widespread prisons, places of preliminary
confinement, correctional labor colonies and correctional labor

camps (the Edviet numerous and extraordinarily complicated sumiliary enterprises and institutions.

The basic departments of the OGFU, which performed the trailing and apping within the USBR and beyond its borders, were preserved, generally, in their former structure and were unified into the system of the "Administration of State Security" (UGB MIVD), which in the period of the "Great Purge" (1936-38) received the title of the "Chief Administration for State Security" (GUGB MIVD)-"Glavmeye Upravlenic Gosudarstvennel Besopsanesti", Apart of this most important administration, in the system of the MIVD was created a number of other branches and administrations, which apheres of activity will be examined in the following parts of our work.

The fifth of February, 1941, the MKVD was divided into two semisseriats: "The People's Commisseriat for Internal Affairs" (MKVD) and "The People's Commisseriat for state Security" (MKVB). This reform become indispensible after the period of the "wreat Parge" and as a result of the forced annexation by the Moviet Union, in 1939-40, of a number of new republics. The apparatus of the MKVD became exceptionally large and complicated, and there was no longer room for this enermous apparatus in the structure of one commisseriat. As a result of this reform, the personnel of both new commisseriats grow yet more.

This reform took place by means of the separation from the MKYD of its principle edministration - that of the Chief Administration for State Security. This organisation was given an independent existence and elevated to the rank of a People's Commissariat for State Security (Maredaiy Kemissariat Gosularstvennoy Sesepasmosti, or MKGS). To it was given several necessary services : an edministrative and service branch etc.

Under the control of the new MKVD were left the following : the administration of places of confinement and corrective-labor camps (GULAG), transport, militim (police); and passport branch, LAGS (civil status registration office), fire-brigades, highway transportation, administrative and service branch with its senitary section, the numerous sanctorial and rest-homes for Chexists etc. As a result, the MEVD was transformed into a subordinate organization with secondary functions, but the "Sword of Revolution" was entrusted to the MEGS, that is, this new People's Commissarist for State Security reserved for itself the exclusive field of espicance, terrorism and suppression, and at the same time keeping its eye on the activities of the new MEVD.

Almost immediately efter the beginning of the war, that is July 20th, 1941, the MKVD and MKGB were again united into the one MKVD under the direction of its former People's Johnissar, Levrenty Berla, who, at the time of the previous division, had been appeinted Stalin's deputy in the Council of People's Commissars of the Ubi R, with the task of co-ordinating the work of these two Commissariats.

The NKVD existed in this form until the end of the sorld War II. The reason for this unification could be found in the necossity of simplifying in time of war the administration of the complicated apparatus of suppression and terror. There is also no doubt that Stalin wanted Beris, as his personal friend and confident, to resssure at this critical moment the single-handed soutrol of this most important part of the Soviet system. In addition, this new reform was influenced by the feet that during the four months of their existence, these two new Commisseriets did not have time to delimit fully the s, here of their setivities. Under the conditions of military debacle and retreat, this could have led to the loss of control behind the front lines elso. This was the situation in regard to the MKVD until 1945. Reviewing these re-organisations, we do not take into consideration the "SHARSH" ("Death to Spice") which was created during the war within the frame of the MAYD, but as a semi-independent institution.

After the end of the war, the MKYD, was again divided into the MKYD and MKQB and in March 1946 these Commissariate were remembed the "Ministry of Internal Affairs" (MVD) and the "Ministry of State Security". This was accomplished in accordance with the

trensformation of the Countil of People's Commissers of the USSE into the Council of Ministers. The principle of division of the MKVD after the war was the same as it had been in 1941: the Chief Administration of State Security of the MKVD, with the Administration of interior troops and border guards of the MKVD, and some servicing organisations became the Ministry of State Security (MGB), while all the remaining administrations and divisions of the former MKVD passed into the hands of the Ministry of Internal Affairs (MVD).

According to the information which the authors of the present work have at hand, the internal structure of the separate divisions in the MVD and MGB remained almost the same as it had been in the mystem of the NKVD in 1939-1940, to which period refer the materials introduced here. The authors were able to register only one major change: "All former "Administrations" of the mystem of the Chief Administration of State Security have been given the title of the "Chief Administrations" in the MGB. There have been no essential changes in either the methods or practice since that time, only the scope of activity has become even broader. In those isolated instances where the functions or the structure of these or other MKVD divisions underwent serious changes, these changes will be noted additionally. For this reason, the authors have permitted themselves in this analysis to use the present tense of verbs rether then the pest, although the NEVL formally ceased to exist in 1946.

Union-Republican Commissariat and therefore its local organs must subordinate themselves to the higher organs of Soviet power in the republica, areas, regions and districts. But actually, the local organs of the NEWD are completely sutenanous and are subordinated only to their own top-level agencies, while the NEWD itself, in all important questions of its activities, is subordinated only to the Polithure. The Council of Poole's Commissars of the USBE (new the Council of Ministers) has a former control over the NEWD only in financial matters, - but even this is merely an ephemeral prerogative. Practical control over the NEWD is carried out by the

Polithure through the Esceial Section of the Central Committee of the All-Union Communist Party, through a special group of the Party Control Commission (KPE CE VEP/b/), located since 1936 in the MEVD building, No 2 Djershinsky Square, in Moscow, and through some other special agencies subordinated directly to the Stalin's "Personal Secretarist".

In a purely abstract case of political divergence or conflict between the government of the USER and the Politburo of the Central Committee of the Communist Party, the MEVD, now the MUS, is obliged to carry out only the orders and directives of the Politburo and the General Secretary of the Communist Party, that is of J.V. Stalin. Such a case took place only once, in 1937, when by the order of htelin, the MEVD arrested and brought to trial the former chief of the Soviet Government,— the former chairman of the Council of the People's Commissars of the USSE, Alexei I. Mykov (it is true that by this time Mykov was "only" the Commissar of Communications). This example clearly illustrates that the MaVD is a governmental organ in form only, but factually it is an all powerful instrument of the party dictatorship, that is, of its supreme agency, the rolliburo of the Central Committee of the Party.

The two ministries remain as the same instrument of Party power, as in the time of the MAVD. The fact that they are subordinate to Beris, who is a deputy chairman of the Council of Ministers, changes nothing at all, in so far as Beris is at the same time a member of the Politburg. It will be proper to recall that already in 1934 the transformation from the OGPU to the MAVD was explained thuse instead of a party organ there would be now a normal state organ; however, in reality, this re-organization was not followed by any change whatsoever in the character of the organ itself.

Cheks-OGPU-NKWD-NGB are actually different names for the same instrument of a terroristic system, heretofers unpresedented in the history of humanity. The only difference between them lies in the ever growing widening of their functions and apheros of activity.

-

Carlo Sant

A STATE OF THE STA

In summery, we can say that the mission of the MKVD-MGB

1. Aithin the borders of the USSE

- a) The uncovering and liquidating of all political movements and groups, even individuals who are hostile or in opposition to the Party and Soviet system, or even those who take a neutral stand.
- b) The sefeguarding of the accomplishments of party decisions and undertakings by all organisations and individuals without exceptions; this is done by secret observations of the activities of all governmental, economic, social, and in certain cases, even party organizations, and always and especially the armed forces of the USCR.
- e) remanent control of all correspondence to and from foreign countries, both official as well as private, and periodical and selective control of correspondence within the USDE.
- d) In co-operation with the party, a preventative censorship of all printed matter in the User, notwithstanding its character or significance - beginning with the official Communist party publication "Prayds" and ending with the trademarks on cigarettes.
- e) Frotection of Stelin and other leaders of the Party and the Soviet government.
- f) Security of the USSR's borders from the point of view of political as well as customs.
- g) Protection of important military objectives, such as factories, bridges, etc.
- h) Counter-intelligence work and observation of all foreigners in the USSE.
- i) The management and protection of concentration camps and the exploitation of alave labor for the realisation of the Five-year plans, chiefly in the Far Borth.

A Secretary Secretary

the same

2. Beyond the borders of the Usak

- a) Political intelligence and diversionary-terroristic activities in accordance with special instructions of the Politburo and in co-operation with the so-called "Sister orbanizations" ("Smezhnie organi).
- b) Co-operation, according to the decisions of the "Actorov Committee" of the Polithure, and the secretarist of the Committee (Gominform), with the leadership of the foreign Communist parties in their struggle against the governments and hostile political parties of their countries.
- e) The disruption, by infiltration, of all anti-boviet political organizations abroad.
- d) Spying on all members of the Soviet diplomatic, commercial and other representatives and delegates of the Ubsk, and also on Soviet military spies.
- e) Spying on all leading personnel of the foreign Communist parties.

CHAPTER III

STRUCTURE OF THE SKYD

1. Administrative Division

In accordance with the 1936 Soviet constitution, the MEVD was an Union-Republic People's Commissariat just as the MVD and MGB are Union-Republic Ministries at present. This means that there is a central Union-Republic Commissariat (or ministry) in moscow and that there are Republic People's Commissariats (now ministries) in each of the 15 republic capitals (for example: Kiev, Minak, Baku, Miga, etc.) which are directly subordinated in all most important features to the Union-Republic Commissariat (or ministry) in Moscow. Only formally, and even then only in certain secondary administrative and budget questions are the Republic MKVD (now the MVD and MGB) controlled by the Councils of Recycle's Commissars of the corresponding Republics (now) the Councils of ministers)

Sec the diegrem No 1

The RSFSR did not have its own MKVD (since 1947 there are MVD and MGB of the RSFSM). The duties of that organ were carried out by the office of the first deputy of the recopie's Commissar of the MKVD of the USSR. The functions of the MAVD of the MSFSM for regions located in the European part of that republic were ordinarily carried out by the MKVD regional administration for Moseow (abbreviated : UMKVD MO - Upravione MAVD Moskovskoi Oblasti). However, the UMKVD-MO did not dispatch orders in its own name to the regions, but administrated such regional administration of the MKVD (for example, Tale) by sending orientations and inquiries with references to the orders of the Deputy People's Commissar or of the People's Commissar himself.

The autonomous republies did not have their own People's Commissaries for Internal Affairs, but only the regional administrations of the MKWD of those Union Republies to which the given autonomous republic belonged. So, for example, the Abkhasian ABAR,

SCUBEL BROKKICIALN CKLI - 15 c

complising a part of the Georgian SSR, will have the Abkhasian regional administration of the NKVD of the Georgian SSR. Autonomous republics of the HSFSR had the regional administrations of the NKVD of the USSR, while those sutonomous republics having small population and no significant military or economic importance, might even come under the jurisdiction of the regional administration of the MKVD of neighboring regions of greater importance. Wo, for example, the Northern Caucasian autonomous republics of Northern Osetia and Kabardino-Balkar and the autonomous region of Karachaev were "served" (to use the Chekist terminology) by the Urdjonikidse (former Vladikavkas) area administration of the MKVD of the USGR. Note: The above mentioned autonomous republics were liquidated during the Norld Amr II for the anti-woviet activities of their population.

The structure, that is the personnel complement and functions of the NKVD of a Union Republic were determined by the size, as well as the strategic and economic importance of a given republic. In such extremely important republics as the Ukraine and Belorusais, their People's Commissariats for internal Affairs represented somewhat smaller replices of the All-Union MKVD in Moscow.

See the disgres No 2

In the less important Union Republies, the MKVD of the republics were organised and worked, actually, according to the authority of the MKVD regional administration. Marlier, they were termed the "fully empowered representations of the Ouru (aboreviated-PP OGFU - Polnomochnoe Predstavitelstvo OuFU). In such Union Republics the importance of the local MKVD could even be less than the authority of an administration of the MKVD of large regions. For example, the Moldavian Nepublic's MKVD, by its size and importance, could be dessidered a much lower level than the MKVD regional administrations of Moscow and Leningrad.

مالانتيان بنوع

2. Local Agencies

Same Same

See the diagrams No 3 and 4

In general, the regional administrations of the MAVD have an identical atructure and are fully empowered to resolve all local problems. For the Ababa, the first bejuty of the reopie's commission of the All-Onion MAVD and the office of the Chief Administration for State Security in Moscow furnished the directives for the local abencies of this republic. The remaining 15 epublic MAVDs administered the local MAVD agencies located in the cortesponding republics.

of these regional soministrations. Italin personally gave special attention to the furthering of the effectivenes of their preventive-terroristic activities. In his language this was cynically called: "making the anvolutions of the activities activities—by these local or emizetions of the activities of the cover the entire country if carrash, the are the pasis of the Italia regime. The center only directs their activities and, at that, on the basis of apterial received from the local accuracy.

stritions of the ways give divided to Follows:

- 1. District sections of the anvi ("isjotuel" mave),
- 2. City sections of the anve,
- 3. Sperational branches of the any ("S, ersektor anyt").

ine importance and role of the district sections of the wave does not require any special explanation at this place, they are organized in every district of any region ("object") or steam ("grai") of the Unit corresponding to the scalaistrative civision of the Soviet Union.

city sections of the MAVD exist in all cities and industriel centers of the Up h which in importance are above the level of district centers. They work along the lines of an operational branch. In the last years before the war, in such pow rful cities as Moscow, Lemingrad, Kiev, and others, in the efforts to delineate and divide the work, were introduced city administrations of the MKVD (as in the party system); for example - there were "The Moscow Legional Party Committee" and "The Moscow City Party Committee". In the same way there were: "The Moscow Regional MKVD Administration" and "The Moscow City MKVD Administration". These city administrations directed the work of the NEVD agencies only in the city itself, not considering the surrounding districts.

The operational branch could be compared to a district office of the NKVD ("raiotdel" NKVD), but having certain special
duties. The structure and personnel complement of these branches
are different. Their insuguration is this or that region was dietated by the presence in a given region of some special population group, which could not be dealt with by the ordinary district
office of the NKVD and so a special "service" was required from
the side of the NKVD. For example, within the moscow regional administration of the NKVD there was created such an operational
branch in connection with the existence in the darpukhov district
of two or three settlements of German colonists (farmers).

The structure, personnel staff, and activities of the regional, city and district MKVD offices and those of MKVD operational branches will be treated in greater detail in following parts of this work.

Each organ of the NKVD, from the People's Commissariat down to the district office, has its own Party organisation. In the local subordinate organs it is the "party group", in the sections - "party collective", in the important divisions and administrations there are "party committees", and in the People's Commissariat of the NKVD is the "Party Committee of the NKVD of the USBR".

From the regional or republic agency of the MKVD, and up, the Party organs publish their own news-papers. The newspaper of the Party committee of the People's Commisserist, titled "The Chekist", was published by the central printing office of the MKVD, in Moscow, and its birt' and back to the line of Djershinsky, i.e. to

the early twentigg. There are emissions that the first editor of this newspaper was Djershinsky himself. The secretaries of the party organisations, beginning with the "party committee", are occupied emalusively with their party work and are freed from any other duties. All lower level party secretaries work in the party organisations and, at the same time, perform their basic duties in the organs of the SKYD.

In Wistination Swen all other Soviet (i.e. governmental or public) organisations, the party organs of the MKVD occupy only a secondary position. In view of the secret character of work of the MKVD, the local party organisations cannot give either any kind of directions or cannot control the activity of the whole MKVD or of sec its separate parts, or even of individual Communists in the MKVD. Therefore, the sphere of activity of local party organs in the MKVD is limited to political-educational work (orientation of Communists in the spirit of Marxism-Leninism), carrying on political campaigns, as before the 1st of May, for example, etc.

3. Central Agencies

See the diegrem Ho 5

At the moment of its division into two People's Commisserists in 1941, the HKVD of the USSK in Moscow had the following central agencies (with their sub-agencies in all Union Republies and in the HKVD administrations of areas and regions):

Chief

- 1. Sendoni Administration of State Security (abbreviated GUGB MEVD Glavnoe Upravlenie Gosudarstvennoi Besopasmesti MEVD assR):
- 2. Chief Administration of Border Guards and Internal Troops (abbreviated: GUPYO MKYD SEGR - Glavace Upravlenie Pogramichael Chrony 1 Veyak MKYD SEGR);
- 3. Chief Administration of Comps of the MEYD (abbreviated) OULAG MEYD 886R Glavnos Upravlenie Legarei MEYD 886R);

20 W. Carendario

- 4. Chief Administration of Militia and Criminal Police (abbreviated: GUM MKYD SSER Claynes Upravlenie Militii i Ugo-lovnogo konyaka MKYD SSER);
- 5. Chief Passport Administration (abbreviated: GPU HKYD Glavnoe Paspertnoe Upravlenie HKYD SSSR) this agency was suber-dinated to the Central Administration of Hillsia:
- 6. Chief Administration for Civil Status Registration (abbreviated: ZAGS NKVD SSSR Glavnoe Upravlenie Zapisiń Aktov Grashdanskogo Sostoyania):
- E. Chief Administration of Fire Guards (abbreviated: GUPO MKVD SSSR Glavnoe Upravlenie Posarnoi Ohrany);
- 8. Ghief Administration of High Ways Construction (abbreviated: "Glavehosdor MKVD" Glavene Upravlenie stroitelstva Shosseinyh i Besrelsovýh Dorog MKVD SSSE).

In addition to these basic administrations, central agencies of the MKVD included also the sport society "Lynamo" and a series of service edministrations and agencies such as, for exemples administration of personnel, finance administration of the MKVD, "house-keeping" administration with the sanatorium section, which operates the senstoris and rest homes of the MKYD, etc. All these service administrations are organised according to the ordinary type of the similar institutions in other People's Comisseriats of the USSE, and there is no especial interest in enelysing them. These service edministrations have sub-sections in all lower organs of the MEVD, but for simplification of the pioture, the internal sub-structure of these service agencies will not be explained in detail. There will be exceptions to this only in separate cases, where the work of a service organ of the MEYD has some sort of special interest, as for example: the administration of personnel or the financial administration.

The structure, functions, and aphercof activity of each one of these basis administrations of the HEVD will be dealt with in detail in subsequent chapters of this work.

hat the

4. Higher MKVD Leadership

Just as in any other Soviet People's Commissariat, the SKYD was headed and directed by a People's Commissar with the help of the so-called "Cellegia", i.e. his deputies and their staff - secretaries, edjutants, etc. But in the SKYD in the years prior to the war, the collegia as such, that is the permanent council of the People's Commissar with his deputies and assistants (so called members of the collegia) did not play the same role as in other governmental organs. The authors do not even have information as to whether the collegia convened to undertake any decisions from the time of Yeshov (1937-38), - as, say, was the case in the time of Yagoda (early thirties), when it was openly declared: "this one was executed by sentence of the collegia of OGPU".

Judging from all available evidences, the collegia in the MKVD was madelitated by many different agencies created gradually around the People's Commissar in connection with the increasing volume of the "work". Among their number were the agencies which comprise the so-called "Administration of the People's Commissar".

See the diagram No 6

This directorate seems to have been a super organ of the MEVD and consisted of the following: the Commissar himself, his secretarist, four (4) deputies, a special agent-representative for the Commissar, a special tribunal for the commissar, an interim control council and a central engineering-construction bureau.

First deputy of the People's Commisser. Ordinarily he is the chief of the Chief Administration of State Security (GUUB HIVD), and, at the same time, directs the regional and local HKVD administrations in the MSFSR. Semetimes he acts as the chief of the Moscow regional administration of the HKVD. Hemely therefore, when the Moscow regional administration of the HKVD issues orders to other HKVD regional administrations throughout the RSFSK, this is always done under the authority of the deputy of the People's

Commisser; and not from the chief of the Mescew regional MEVD administration (UNEVD-MO).

This post was occupied : 1935-35 by Frekofiev; 1936-37 by Zakovsky, 1940-41 by Markulov, who after the war became the first minister of the MGB.

The Second Peputy of the People's Commisser. He directs a the First Section (Perviy Otdel) of the MKVD - protection of the leaders, the Personnel Section, the Communication Section (Feldevyss), the house-keeping administrative offices, and the office of the administrative supervisor of the MKVD (the letter effice performing the role of chief executioner of MKVD victims). Excluding the important problem of protection of the Kremlin and Belehe-vik leaders, this deputy is responsible solely for the inner and administrative problems of the MKVD itself. In 1939-41, Kruglev escupied this post; after the war he was appointed minister of internal Affairs of the USSR (MVD).

The Third Deputy of the People's Commisser. He directs: the Chief Administration of Militis and Criminal Folice, the Chief Administration of Concentration Camps (GULAG), High ways and transportation administration, ZAGS (administration of civil etatus registration) and other establishments of the MVD type. In 1939, Kabulov occupied this post, and after the marger of the commissariats, in July 1941, he was appointed deputy to Beris in commanding the combined SKVD.

The Fourth Deputy of the Feople's Commissar. He directs the Chief Administration of the border guards and internal treops of the MIVD, the administration of the border passport control points and all questions of so-ordination of activities of these administrations with other ministries of the USSE, primarily with the Ministries of Armed Forces and Foreign Trade, here must be noted that until 1937 the prisoner escort troops were under the joint jurisdiction of the MKVD and of the Commissariat of Defense. In 1937-38, Frinovsky occupied this post.

The Party Committee of the HEVD Poople's Commissariat. It eccupies, as already stated above, a secondary position of importance. This is explained by the fact that, in addition to the comfidential character of the HEVD work, the Commissar, himself, his deputies and the directors of the most important administrations are members of the higher party ergans, up to the level of the Contral Committee of the Party and the Polithure. Therefore, they are not obliged to account for their activities sefore the secretary of their party organization.

In the lower level organs of the MKVD the party committees enjoy somewhat greater importance, but even there they do not have a shadow of that decisive role which is characteristic in all other Soviet establishments, offices, and undertakings. In this we see still one more confirmation of the fact that the MKVD is not a governmental but purely a party organ, we recall that in the Central Committee of the Party, itself, there is also a Party Committee (which runs mostly the party activities of the sumiliary personnel of that office) which play an identical secondary role.

Special Council. This is a higher permanent judiciary agency of the NKVD. According to its official status, the Special Council consists of a the People's Commisser of Internal Affairs of the USSE (HKVD), one of the secretaries of the Central Commitee of the All-Union Communist Party, and the Attorney General of the USSE. But the Special Council convenes itself in this form only for the exemination of affairs of exceptional importance. Ordinarilly, it consists of less important officials of these three agencies, seting with enthority and on behalf of their superiors.

The MEVD itself ordinarily is represented in the Special Council (Oceboe Sevenhenie) by some important official of the commissariet, but necessarily seting with the full sutherity and on behalf of the People's Commissar Abanha himself. This person represents the investigative aspect of any given case. The second member of the Special Countil is the representative of the Atterney General of the USSR - fulfilling the prosecutor's functions. Sometimes, and rather often, this role is being given to some semior:

with the MKVD. The third permanent member of the council ordinarily is the secretary of the Party Committee of the MKVD, acting with full authority of the Secretary of the Central Committee of the Communist Party. According to this model are organized the Special Councils of each republican MKVD in the Boviet Union.

desling with the activities of the so-called "troiks's". Here we have only to state that the "Special Councils" and "troikes" close that victous ring, by means of which the NAV. becomes the supressementer of life and death of every seviet citizen - it acts as a spy, police officer, investigator, attorney and judge simultaneously!

Special Agent-Representative for the recule's Commisser. It is an official given a complete authority within a defined jurisdiction.

To this duty ordinarily is appointed one of the important operational officials of the central organs of the MKVD, his mission is to settle offenses of personnel of the commissional itself. In all the republic and regional administrations of the MKVD there are also special agent-representatives who settle the offenses and other misdeeds committed by officials of the local MKVD organs.

The apparatus of the special agent-representative is composed of a special operating section, having 8-10 operative agent-representatives, all of whom are officials of higher authority such as majors or it colonels of State Security. The offenses can be of a most varied nature: from reports of disciplinary offenses to secusations of belonging to the opposition or counter-revolutionary activities and plots. All cases of this type go through administrative channels of the MKVD and if the aspect of offense or crime is not fully apparent or is extraordinarily serious, then they are referred through the chief of the administration or section to the office of the special agent-representative for settlement. This special agent-representative presents his conclusion to the chief of the regional administration of the MKVD or even commissar hisself for final decision.

Curiously enough, according to Chekist customs, appeal to such senclusions and decisions is considered as "not ethical". The reasons of these unique "chekist ethics" are truly characteristics the investigations are conducted by the "conrades" themselves, the decisions undertaken by the chief of administration, against when nothing can be done. As to complaints to the Control Committee of the Party, they are out of question because they would immediately became known, and would result only in complicating the affair, in a scandul (with possible expulsion from the Party) and at any rate would result in dismissal from one's work and transfer somewhere to Archangel or Cheliabinak, if not werse.

Inside the MKVD the special agent-representatives are either feared and avoided or the people attempt to carry favour with them by flattery and small gifts; that is to say, within the MKVD, the relations of the rank and file Chemists towards the special agent-representatives are just the same as the attitude of the populace tion of the USUR towards all members of the MKVD.

when a special egent-representative, himself, gets in trouble, then all the other officials of the MLVD do not miss a chance to repay him for all fermer trouble occasioned in them by this individual. So, in 1958, by order of the deputy commisser Makovsky, the special agent-representative of the Moscow region, Hypolytev, was arrested. He was incarecrated in the Teganski prison, in the common cell block, and then was shot. During the time of the investigation the efficials of the administration, who carlier had cought his favor, went in droves to the prison in order "to slap him in the face".

The office of the special agent-representative has no agent not of their own.

Structure and personnel, in general, as have other secretariates of People's Commissariate (or Ministrice) in the USBA. Mithin the secretariat is a control commission for the verification of activities of various edministrations and for the clarification of

possible conflicts and misunderstandings among themselves. Linked with the Secretarist, also, is the effice for investigating petitions to the People's Commisser. In the building of the KKVD, itself, (erdinarily in the office for entry permits) just as in all other Soviet Commisserists and Ministries, hangs a bex for petitions, in which each visitor "may" drop his "petition", the ambiguous term delicately applied to complaints in the USSR. In view of the conditions prevailing in the USSR in general, and particularly in the MKVD, the existence of this office and of the bexes seems only a synical frauds since who, would dark to make a complaint against the MKVD (especially to the MKVD, itself). The single type of "petitions" seem, therefore, confined to denenciations.

The Engineering-Construction Bureau, This bureau play as important role in the large-scale business entopprises, which are found in the undertakings of the MKVD. To this bureau come all technical inventions and projects, worked out by inmates of camps and prisons, spread throughout the whole territory of the USER. In special cases, this bureau has authority to free prisoners essential for its work. But in the majority of cases, those priseners who initiate important projects or inventions, simply are transferred from the jurisdiction of the prison or comp sutherity to the jurisdiction of this bureau, but still remain in the same prison or camp. Sometimes such prisoners are transferred to a special section of the prison. In such cases the prisoners can act as assistants in special sections, have automobiles, better previsions. but remain in strict isolation and fully out off from any link with the outside world. In such circumstances, for instance, was the well known designer of steen boilers, Frof. Kemsin, imprisoned in the early thirties at the trial of the "Fromparty" ("Industrial party"), and world renowed eviation designer A.M. Tapolev, arrested by the MKVD in 1937, and later freed during the war for copying the American 3-29.

This bureau now comes under the jurisdiction of the MTD. There is reason to believe that the Soviet experimentations on stonic energy games under the expervision of this body.

5. Prosting of SKYD Apparetus Compensate

By a more enumeration of components of the SETD apparatus, one can see that there are two basis types of SETD agencies, namely:

- e) Operative,
- b) Administrative or accompdative.

Operative sections (divisions or departments) and administrations(that is their official title - call to your mind the signature on the pass issued for foreign diplomats for entering the Red Square or the Kremlin) are such agencies of the MEVD. which directly fulfil the terroristic functions entrusted to them by the Kremlin, eligarche, - i.e. the Chief Administration of State Security (GUGB) in the MIVD system and the Ministry of State Security (MGB) nowedays. All other MKYD departments are only secomodeting, in that or other form, these operative organs. So, for example, the Administrative and Supply Department supplies the operative agencies with stationery, special lamps for making the eyes of the exeminees smart, silk stockings - through special Chekist PZ - "Co-operative for NKWD efficials and troops", etc. The Financial Department pays out the salary to the officials and empleyees, and gives out special sums for conspiratorial purposes according to: the femous per. 9. The Senitary Department enables the Chekists, were out by testuring their victims, to pick up their health conceivers in the luxury of the fermer paleon of prince leasonper in Cereis, in the Orince.

Binilarly, the EKW efficials (we are considering here only those EKW efficials who are on the personent staff) are divided into two categories: operative efficials (setrotain) and ordinary officials.

There are four grades of the SETO operative officials:

e) Assistant operative agent-representative (in Assisma pomoshnik operativnogo upolnomoshomogo)

STATE OF THE STATE

- b) Junior encretion agent-representative (in Musclen) mladahi operativni upelacacchemni);
- e) Operative agent-representative (in Baseign: operatival upolacochemni):
- d) Senier operative agent-representative (in Russians starshi operativni upelnesechenni)

In Enseign, using the Chekist slang, the operative agentrepresentative is briefly called the "eperupelasmochemniy"; for am ordinary Soviet citisem it is one of the most terrible words that he knows, for it rocks of arrest.

The assistant operative agent-representative is the lowest estagery of operative officials. Usually, all novices begin their career in this capacity. But if the newly admitted official has been previously graduated from one of the numerous MKVD schools, he is appointed straight away as junior operative agent-representative after the grade of the Senior operative agent-representative. After the grade of the Senior operative agent-representative the MKVD officials are maned in accordance with the denomination of the operative unit they are supervising; thus, the official supervising a branch, is called "the chief of the MKVD branch",— and official, engaged as assistant chief of the administration, is called "Assistant Chief of the Administration", etc.

But prestically all these titles are usually abbreviated, and in official correspondence they are written like that:

"pen.mach. IEO" (assistant chief of Fereign Division) or "mach.MOZO (chief of the Administrative department). In the certificates of of the HKVD efficials (a little block eard made ofcardboard and doubled up) for the sake of compiracy it is only mentioned :

convade so-end-co is "assistant chief of the Division of the HKVD UNEX? or " section chief of UNEXD LO (Lemingred region administration of HEVD). But we will give more details later on.

Since 1937 the militery renks, as existing in the Red Army, were also introduced in the NKWD in addition to the official titles. The essential difference was only in the fact that the scale of

and the

military renks in METO was always one or two grades higher than in the ermy. Time, for instance, the sergeant in the METD, i.e. as non-commissioned efficer, corresponded in reality to the second lieutenent in the army both so to the rights and to the amount of salary. A lieutement in the REVD (Lieutement of State Security) equals to a captain of the Red Army, and E captain of State Security equals to an army colonel. In other words, here a certain discrimination of the officers of the Soviet army took place. They are morbidly evere of this fact, especially as the officers of the Seviet secret police are much better provided for. This is one of the reasons for a certain hostility between the army and the HKYD units; for instance, you will never see army officer walking togother with MKTD officers. But this is exactly what the Seviet regine moods so bedly: two ermies exist in one country, jealously apping after each other, and such a situation is considered by the Krealin as the best guarantee egainst a military plot.

As to the methods of work of the MKVD from the ermanisetional point of view, so, of course, they differ in many respects from the usual methods, enong them the methods of military institutions. More than anywhere, the decisions is a large part of cases is made resulting from personal or telephone convergations; these are, for the most part, such cases where secret ergans are involved, where no traces have to be left, i.e. the meanest cames. often connected with personal interest of the officials etc. But even in this citatel of secrecy and conspiracy, the bureaucrecy has found a stable seat. The typical maledies of the Soviet buresearcey - the unwillingness to take ever the responsibility and the tendency of "reinsuring" encools (perestuctories) by getting a written seaction of the superiors, thrive also here. Not without reason. in the days of mass nessecres, one of the most melicious masters in the art of butchering, the deputy People's Commissor Zakovsky (emocuted in 1936) issued "esders about abolition of written erders" in a whole series of cases and especially insisted on the liquidation of "rot topo and bureaucrosy" in cases of condometion to doubt. Be himself brought the treetment of such cases

to the highest grade of simplicity, putting only six letters "MM. Sek." (Typeheye mere makesenia - highest degree of punishment - Sekovsky).

In the recent years the practice of guidance by means of the so called "eperative conferences" has been widely spread. Such conferences, arranged according to administrative units (administration - division - section - branch), are usually informed about the important orders of the People's Commissar or about some other urgent arrangements when immediate steps have to be taken. It means that any instructions of the MKVD leaders may be carried into effect on the vast territory of the whole Seviet Union literally in the course of several hours. Juring the regular, i.e. not so urgent mandameness operative conferences the current problems are usually discussed, the instructions given, the reports heard.

The verbal instructions of higher authorities are called "settings" ("ustanovka"). *ritten orders usually confirm such settings, given formerly. Besides orders, local organs of the SKYD regularly get the so called "orientations" from the center. For the most part these orientations comprise data, received from the agents, about the activity of foreign spies and diversionists. These data may serve for the purpose of their detention if they appear on the terribery of a certain BKYD agency, but there are also orientations of a general character; especially eften the erientations of this kind are given to the local agencies and to the Berder Guards, stationed on the frontiers of the Soviet Union. Such general orientations are called the informative enes.

The connection with local agencies is realized by means of correspondence, delivered by special armed courriers (field liaisem - "Feldsvyes"), with the help of telephone net work of the NKVD, by means of usual telephone network (for non-secret conversations), by telegraph (using code) and radie, through the special redic-network of the NKVD. It has to be mentioned, that the communication section of the NKVD does not work exclusively for its own ministry, but is also evailable for all governmental and party

USER is afflicted by a "secretomenia", it is not difficult to imagine the scope of work reserved for the MEVD in its capacity of letter-carrier.

eand Ministry of communications in the USSR; it is enough to say that even the diplomatic sail going abroad or coming from abroad is delivered by the courriers employed by the MAVD and not by the Boviet Foreign Office. The telephone connection is achieved through a special telephone network, both for local purposes and for the trunk line telephone. For this purpose special cables are used. Besides all the leading officials of the EKVD have in their offices the so-called direct line, connecting them with their immediate subordinates in other cities of the country (for example in Lemingrad, Minsk, Riev and in other capitals of Union sepublics). One has to believe that now the direct line, connects also the capitals of all Boviet satellites with Moscow, at least through the diplomatic missions of the USSR in these countries.

The telephone station in Moscow is connected with the generel city network. The city telephone network is obliged to give an immediate connection with the NKVD switch-board. By automatic telephone exchange the HKVD headquarters in Moscow may be reached by setting up "K-6" or "0-4". The SKVD telephone net work is selfproviding and does not depend on the city. Besides all the leaders of ecutral governmental institutions have a direct line connecting them with the MKVD. So, for example, in Stalin's secretarist an MEVD telephone apparatus has been installed bearing the number 57-61, but for his conversations with the People's Commisser and other prominent MKVD officials Stalin uses normally the Kremlin emtometic telephone exchange, the so-called "whirligig". As to the telegraph connection, the MIVD sends eighered telegrams using the general line, but they are given in a special room reserved for governmental correspondence. The workers of this department are MIVD men, but for the sake of conspirecy are on the payrell of the Ministry of Communications. Telegrams, sent by the MCMD, are

forwarded as governmental ones, according to the series "M". As to the radio connection, more details will be given in the chapter dealing with the 2nd Special Division of the MKYD.

In conclusion we have to mention the MKVD archives where "cases" of all persons, are kept (persons whose turn has not yet that or other form, are kept (persons whose turn has not yet come are registered with the 1st Special Division). These archives are used for reference, which may be necessary in connection with the inquest of some new case, and are situated in the cellar of House 2 in Lubjanks (old building). It includes the so-called reading-room where the MKVD officials may get acquainted with the cases, but for this purpose they must get permission from such a prominent worker as chief of the branch, sometimes even from the division chief. The Foreign division has its own archives which may not be used by employees of other MKVD agencies.

b. Chief Administration of State Security

Tasks and structure

See the Disgres No 7

The Chief Administration of State Security (GUGB MAVD SERIE) is the essential and most important agency of the enormous system of Soviet political terror, that has so many ramifications. Strictly speaking, the MKVD or MGB is the Chief Administration of State Security as such, for all other links of the MKVD system or "organs", if we use the Chexist alang, play only an suxiliary part. The "chastising sword" is the GUGB. Just this Chief Administration of State Security is responsible for discovery, isolation and liquidation of real and imaginary "enemies of the people". The land especially potential antegonists of Communical and its distaterial leadership. The GUGB Chief is always the First Deputy of the People's Commissar for Internal Affairs. After the war, the Chief Administration of State Security was transformed into an independent Ministry of State Security as we have already meantioned above.

The general structure of this administration did not suffer any considerable changes since the time of the UGPU, and it
was accepted by the new ministry approximately in the same shape.
Anyhow, one has to consider, that, though the structure was preserved, the numeration of some divisions was changed in the course of time, and by the end of the thirties most of the GUGB divisions were remand as administrations, though the MKVD men
continued to call these administrations divisions. This circumstance creates certain difficulties at the classification of the
GUGB structure. Therefore the authors draw the attention of the
readers at the possibility of some errors and inaccurations in
this respect.

As far as we could find out, at the moment of transforming divisions into administrations (approximately beginning sith the year 1937) the G GB had the following structure :

ist Special Division - a center of statistical operative recording of anti-Soviet elements

(ASE) and MAVD agents:

2nd Special Division - a center of operative technics; 1st Division - protection of the leaders and of the Krealin;

2nd " - counter-intelligence (KkO);

3rd " - economic (EKO);

4th " - secret political (bio),

5th " - "Osobly Otdel" (OU) - spy work in the Army:

6th " - transport (TO);

7th " - foreign (INO);

8th " - prisons and places of detainment

Inquest Office of the GUGB

In the course of expansion and re-organization of the MKVD system, such divisions as counter-intelligence, economic, secret-political, foreign and transport were renamed into administrations and their staff was correspondingly enlarged. The authors of this work have no information available as to the transformation of the "Osobiy Otdel" into an administration, though tasks and

functions of this division "secondating" the amy and the mavy immensely increased for the last 10-15 years. Further, both in the text and in the album of schematic diagrams the following denomination will be used for the GUGB central agencies:

Counter-Intelligence administration (KEU), Economic administration (EKU), Secret-Political administration (EFU), Foreign administration (IMU) and Eransport administration (TU), but the term Special Division ("Osobiy Otdel" or "OO") will not be changed. To complete the picture, the accommodating agencies such as Maintenance Administration and Financial Administration, with their branches, are shown on the diagrams, but no analysis of their work will be made as they have no essential meaning for the understanding of characteristic features of the MKVD, and their structure, upon the whole, is following the same pattern as its leaves in all the other reople's Commissariats of the Ubbas.

with the exception of the first and the second opecial Divisions and of the lat Division of the GUGB, the numeration of divisions and administrations will not be mentioned either in the text or in the album of diagrams, as the have frequently changed the numeration for the sake of conspiracy, as is was mentioned before. The last change in the numeration was made by the transformation of the Guis into the Aus. As a result of the above mentioned facts, different materials which were made available to the authors, were often of controversial nature. According to one information, the pecret-Political administration which formerly had number 4, received in the MGB the name of the 3rd Another source indicates that the title of the administration. 3rd administration was reserved for the Counter-Intelligence administration, which was formerly called the 2nd administration. approximately the same picture may be observed in the cases of the Foreign and Economic administrations. Under such circumstances the applying of numeration of schinistrations would only lead to misunderstandings and disorientation of the rester.

Mark Sales

The second second second

The authors are fully aware of the fact that the giving up of the use of numbers for denominating divisions and administrations, will be a serious defect of this work, especially as, approximately since 1937, all divisions and administrations of the MKVD-MGB are usually designated only by numbers in the whole official correspondence for the sake of conspiracy. In the certificates of the MKVD officials the name of the division where they are working, is never given.

the general festures of the structure of susinistrations that were part of the GUGE, were not changed in the last fifteen years; the administrations of the MuB are based upon almost the same schome that was made out for the corresponding divisions of the Ouru. The difference lies only in the scale, i.e. the admimistrations of the MGB are more cumbersome and have many more employees than the OGPU divisions. But the number of people on steff is not constant in that or another administration. Such staff may be either increased or diminished depending on the fact, which administration has the largest portion of work at the present soment, or, according to the picturesque expression of legods, where the "GPU God" is sested, i.e. the terrorization of which part of the poviet population is more important from the point of view of the rolithuro at a certain time, so, for example, during the first Pive-year plan and collectivisation the residence of this "GFU God" was the Economic division, after the murder of Alrov he moved to the Georet-Political division, before the war his presence was distinctly felt in the Foreign administration, but during the war he moved again to the "Deebly Otdel" and to the Counter-Intelligence edministration. In such cases, some of the personnel of edministrations and divisions less important at this peried of time, are transferred to that administration on which the Particular attention of the Politburo is concentrated at the moment.

In special cases separate administrations may be temporarily joined in order to fulfil this or another special task set by

the Polithuro, but the structure of each remains unchanged in the principal features. So, for example, during the war a special administration "LakkSH" ("Smertj shpionem" - death to spies) was formed. Many foreign observers entoneously took time somenistretion for the Counter-Intelligence som nistration of the sed Army General staff. In reality it was only a union of the "Usobiy Utuei" with the Counter-intelligence soministration of the MKVD under the general direction of the Leputy leople's Commisser of the akvi and Chief of the "Osobly Otdel", General-Colonel V.C. ADBRALOV who during the AMP WEB directly autordianted to Stelling es recyle's Commissar for betence. Because of this, a mistake was made abroad in connecting the "damph" with the denotal staff of the ned army. After the resignation of Stalin of his functions of recrie's Commisser for befonce, "Lakanch" ass inquicated and the soministrations of the havb (now wor), out of which it was formed, resumed their previous structure with only some minor Charless.

neral structure of the Good NAVD of the Cook as as follows: (See the Diagram No 7) -

1st opecial livision - hegistration of agents and operative recording of anti-poviet elements;

2nd opecial Division - Operative technics.

1st Division - protection of leavers and of the Aremilu;

KKU - Counter-Intelligence edministration (former 2nd wivi-

SrU - Secret-Political administration (former 4th or 3rd bivision):

EKU - Economic administration (former 3rd or 4th Livision);

00 - "Jaobly Otadel" or Special Division (Idnaer oth Div.);

. murbeillages in the hed Army!

TU - Transport administration (former oth bivision);

INU - Foreign edministration (former 7th Division);

Administration of prisons and places of Setaution - (former Sth Division)

Inquest Division - (former inquest Uflice);

- 56 -

The guther cars wheir reeders from confusing the Transport administration of the GUGB ("Transportnoe upravionie GUGB MKVD ESGR) with the administration of Highways of the MKVD ("Glavahoedor NKVD SSGR"), which will be considered in the later chapters of this work. The first of these edministrations is concerned with maintaining of State Security rules on the rail read and water transport, while the second one controls the auto roads and highways as the MKVD supervises them also from the technical point of view.

CHAPTER IX

THE PIRST SPECIAL DIVISION OF THE GUGS MAYD USSE

Distres No 8

The terroristic activity of the MKYD inside the Seviet Union is based upon the registration and classification of two elements of the Soviet population: 1) MKYD agents, 2) the so-called anti-boviet element ("ASE" - according to the MKYD abbreviation).

The first form of recording is called the agent-net registration ("uchet agentury"), the second one - the operative registering ("operuchet"). The recording of agents and "Ank" is
the concern of the 1st Special Division of the utub akvD, shose
subdivisions or branches are to be found in all territorial agencies of the NKVD. The work of the 1st Special Division of the
GUGB is closely connected with the Central Archives of the MKVD,
where all the cases that have been dealt with by the Soviet punitive organs since the time of Cheka may be found on the files.
But the work of the Central Archives is not doubled by the 1st
special Division, as the main task of the latter is the service
to the operative organs of the MKVD in their current work.

In the People's Commissarist (now Ministry) as such, as well as in all territorial agencies, it consists only of two sectors:

1) kecording of agents, 2) Recording of anti-oviet element "ADA".

These sectors may be considered as independent divisions and are subdivided into sections or branches, according to the character of the contingent of the population that is being registered or is subject to such a registration. Besides, in both sectors there are statistical sections that have to deal only with general numbers; general number of agents according to different moments—tures, number of "ASE" etc.

The "eperative-statistical" section of the second sector systematises the figures according to the summary ("svodka") compiled by all local operative agencies of the NKVD about the "political-meral" frame of mind of the population and about its reaction to these or other events inside the USSK and abread. If no particular events took place, the "operative-statistical" section only systematises the regular summaries of the operative agencies, and on their besis compiles reviews for the whole territory of the USSR and then turns to other problems: for instance, compiles a summary based on the reports of the local agencies of KRU about the anti-Soviet opinions, expressed by the former smaslem emigrants who had returned to the USSK. A selection out of these summaries is regularly forwarded to the Central Committee of the Communist Party for the information of corresponding party organs.

OPERATIVE ENCORDING

Operative recording or the so-called special recording of the anti-Meviet element is the concern of the 2nd Lector of the 1st Special Division GUGB MKVD UBSK. Its tentecies enbrace a huge number of the Soviet citisens and it is based on the individual card of special record, that is on the file for every person who is under suspicion of the MKVD.

All persons, registered with AKVD, are divided into categories, or, using the MKVD terminelogy, have their "tints". The corresponding entegory or "tints" is entered on the registration card of the recorded person; so, the registration eard of a person, who uses to relate political with is marked by letters "AKR, put in the corner - it means that the "tint" of this person is "AR"-enti-Moviet. The number of these entegories or "tints" is very great. The basic ones are

- AS enti-Seviet element;
- B "bieliy" "white" (former perticipents of the white movement in 1917-1921);

- PR "pretivale" entegonist. (This sategory comprises

 members of former political parties in the pre-revolutionary Bussia. The party membership is indicated
 by putting after this "tint" some additional letters
 so, "PE/M2, or "PE/E" -will denot in the first case
 former "Menshevik", in the second former "Eser" bocislist-Revolutionary.
- ER Counter-revelutionary:
- TS "terrevnik" a man connected in some way with the church. Besides priests, this group comprises all believers who are active in their religious communities and in church matters. The sectarians (dissenters) are not recorded under the "tint" To, for they are forming a separate group.
- g "sektanty" sectarians (disseaters). From the operative point of view this group is considered equal to PR (antagonists).
- P "povetentel" insurgents. This group comprises all persons who took part in any rebellion at the time of Civil war, military communism and collectivisation periods, and also persons sho have shown seditions tendencies in later periods.
- A nationalists of all shaces.
- il "svyes s inostrentsemi" connection with foreigners (personnel of foreign embassies, exchange of letters with relatives abroad, etc.)
- suspected of espionage on the basis of their correspondence, connection with relatives abroad, etc. it represents, so to say, the next stage of natural development after the person was registered as "SI".
- T terrorist.
- D diversionist.
- Prev. "previye" the rightists. Members of the right opposition in the Party (Bukharinites).

Tr. - The Trotskyite. The same symbol is used for the adherents of Eisoviev and other participants or supporters of the left opposition.

This list of recorded "tints" is in me case complete and it may be admitted that, in the years of war, it was made considerably longer by adding such new "tints" as F- fascist, H - adherent of Hitler, B - "benderist" (Ukraimien metionalist), Vl. - "vlasevete" (member or adherent of the Vlassov movement), ws. - "niskepoklemnik" - servility to the bourgeoisie etc. but even the list, given above, shows what a large part of the population is under the constant supervision of the MIVD. At the same time, it also shows how wide spread is the struggle of the people of the USSR against the Soviet regime. Together with all armestees and millions of persons who are being "punished", the aik imminently remind stelling of the fast that his regime is the most terrible but, at the same time, the weakest in the whole world, for it is opposed by the huge mass of the population. All those persons, on whose cards the symbol of their "tint" has been drawn, are sutomatically set under a supervision of the MIVD egents.

Once more it has to be repeated that, in case of a corresponding directive from the Politburo, all persons sharing that or another "tint" are arrested, and their further fate depends not on their real guilt but on the "general line of the Party" for the present period of time.

Date, gathered by the agents during their watch (during "rearchotks" - "elaboration" in the Chekist terminology) of a certain person who has been recorded with the special MAVD registration, gives a start for building up a "case".

"Cases" are divided into the following groupe:

1. "Agenturacya resrebetka" (egent eleboration) which is efficially called "egenturacya delo" (egent case), and embraces a group of persons sharing the same views, who are tied together by periodic encounters, conversations or personal friendamip.

2. "Delo formuliar" - (service list case), where only eac principal person who is under suspicion ("figurant" according to the Chekist terminology) is being "elaborated", and all his commections are being recorded only to complete the case. In most cases the "service list case" is sooner or later transformed into an "egenturnoye delo", or (provided the "figurant" shows any setivity) leads to his arrest.

The everwhelming majority of cases of "figurents" who are being "elaborated" by the operative MEVD organs, are on the records as "service list cases". Under normal conditions, the group cases are comparatively rerely recorded on the files of the 1st Special Division.

- 3. "U-D" ("Webstroye diele") "hegistration case" is brought egainst less active "figurants". Usually as a basis for such a case serves some instruction from the center ordering to make records about a certain group of population. For example, in 1935, after the customary purge in the party, a considerable percentage of the so-culled "hangers on" ("primasovahihaya") was excluded from the party, as being not fit for this high privillage. On the ground of a special secret instruction all such persons were registered as "U-D" in those cases mean they were not accused as Trotakyists, or when their ASK registration cards had not been previously marked case with some other "tint". Later on, following a new special secret directive, a sempaign of liquidating the people registered within this group, was carried on, and ... par.169 of the Criminal Code of the MSFSM (ill-intended fraud, or forgery) was incriminated against them.
- 4. "Liternoe diele" "Lettered case" is usually concerned with a certain industrial or some other object. This case includes all lists of persons on the staff of this enterprise, different data of official commissions, correspondence with trusts, acts of audits, materials of Party purges, different declarations, anonymous statements and other easual materials up to the infersation that this enterprise does not fulfil the program of the output, reports about the breaking out of fire, about danages etc.

All this is completed by a special list of persons, included in this "Lettered Case". Such a special list usually does not show persons that have already been recorded according to some "tint", Usually this list is composed of the names of persons, about whom the KKVD has some material of small importance, 1.0. ananymous denunciation, expulsion from the Momeomol because of the loss of the membership card, or even some suspicion. All these persons are specially recorded and registration cards are made out marked with the ayabol "L-D" ("Liternoye dielo"). This category is considered to be the least entire one, still the presence of a card, marked with "L-D" on the files of the 1st Special Division, is already like a brand and puts certain restrictions for the person concermed both in his social life and his activity. For instance, if such a person is casually included in a list of guests to be prepent at a nession of the Supreme Boviet of the Used (and the names of such guests are invariably checked with the special registration files) he will never get the invitation card for the session.

The center for special recording of anti-boviet elements is the 2nd sector of the 1st Special Division of the 3CLS MAVOUSER (now MSB USSA). In its hands detailed statistical data as to "tints" and so to the spreading of themse tints in republics, regions and districts of the Soviet Union are concentrated. Usually, besides collecting statistical data, the 1st Special Division makes out special geographical maps according to the "tints". This enables the leadership of the People's Commissariat at any time to orient themselves in directing the work of the AAVO agencies in the whole USSR and in separate republics and districts.

not only the "tint", but rether detailed data about the recorded person are marked on the registration card. (See Appendix).

In the local subordinate agencies of the HKVD the registration
card of the recorded person is filled out in three copies; one
copy is forwarded to the agency that is conducting the "elaboration";
the second one is sent to the 2nd Special Division of the Regional
administration of the HKVD - to control the "elaboration", and the

third one goes to Moscow, to the 1st Special Division of the center, statistical section.

Statistical records of the 1st Special Division of the Poople's Commissariat and of the 1st Special Divisions in local MEVD (MGB) administrations are kept in absolute secret. According to an order of Lavrenty Beria, issued in 1940, the chiefs of regional administrations were prohibited to give any information in this respect even to the secretaries of the regional committees of the Commist Party, who could obtain these data only through the Central Committee of the Party. For this purpose, the chief of the 1st Special Division in Moscow had to adapt and filtrate thesenate . and forward them to the Central Committee of the All-Union Communist Party only when they acquired special wording. It was well known in the MKVD circles that this order was provoked by the fast that new secretaries of the regional committees of the Bolshevik party, who took over this work after the "Great lurge" and who were often recruited, in this period of time, from the MKVD men, in a series of cases made such demands to the chiefs of the regional mannatheess akVD administrations and received the wished information. This is a clear Illustration of the fact, that the MAVD does not reveal its secrets even to official representatives of the ruling party, with the exception of its highest organs.

In the HKVD (MGB) regional administrations the staff of the 1st Special Livision is divided between two branches (operative recording and registration of agents). The employees proof these branches enjoy the rights of the operative agents— representatives and their assistants, but in fact they are functionaries, clerks and statisticians.

In addition to the data of special records, all operative agencies of the HKYD-MGB are sytematically and regularly compiling summaries about the frame of mind of the broad masses of the Soviet people and their reaction to certain events inside the Soviet Union and abroad. These summaries are forwarded to the

"operative-statistical" branch of the 2nd sector of the 1st &pecial Division GUGB SKVD for the purpose of systematising the pieture of moral-political state of the population throughout the whole Soviet Union. Here is one of specimens of such a superry after the governmental decree about the abolition of the retioneard system is the USSR, all the regional MEVD administrations through their operative agencies collected reports about "megative attitude in connection with the decision of the Party and Government to abolish the ration-card system". These summeries depict in short the character of statements made by separate persons, giving their "tints". The mest characteristic facts are reported to the chief of the regional EKVD administration and certain measures are taken - up to the arrest. But this is not the most inportent thing. Much more essential is that the chief of the administration, having received the statistical picture of the frame of mind of the population in his region, sends a copy of these figures, in the form of a ciphered telegram or radiogram, to the "operative-statistical" branch of the center, in Moseow, where these meterials are summerised and forwarded to the RKYD People's Commissar for a report to Polithure, or simply for his information.

This double system of constant operative recording of "tints" and regular summaries about the frame of mind of the population fully enables the leadership of the NKVD-MMB to dispose the forces of their network as it is needed by the concrete situation in the country. In fact, it is nething else but a constantly active and very intensive reconnoitering of forces and disposition of the enemy, where their own people is meant under this term. This is the principal difference between the system of the operative recording in the NKVD-MGB and the similar methods used by police agencies of all other countries of the world. The matter is not only in the scale, and not in the fact that in the Until the punitive organs carry out a special registration of such elements of the population, who in no case could be classified as "crimainels" in any other country of the world.

-65-

The peculiarity of the Soviet eperative recording lies first of all in its preventive character, i.e. the registration eard of the HXVD-HGB is filled out for a sertain eitisen of the Seviet Union not because he or she committed any crimes or offences, but only because the personnel of the Soviet punitive organs considers him, or her, to be able to commit such crimes or offences in the future.

The second peculiarity may be seen in the fact that a registration card, once filled out for a certain person, is never destroyed even if the "tint", marked on it, is not substantiated or is a result of an obvious calumnity. The man may be acquitted in the court, may be fully rehabilitated by the party organs, but the files of the NKVD-MGB will brand him for ever. The All-Union Communist party and its punitive organs do not apply the nation of the "term of limitation" to the actions of their pelitical antagonists, and the NKVD-MGB may at any time resume the persecution of any person for actions performed twenty or even thirty years, ago. If this happens, it is only necessary to "renovate" to some extent the case of suchs person, and this is one of the main tasks of the Soviet operative recording. This is what is called the "record of the figurent's activity".

The third, and say be the most essential, peculiarity of the soviet operative recording is that its data are never checked up by anybody else. The Commission of the Party Control in Moscow may check the activity of the EKVD-MGB, but there does not exist such an organization in the whole USSE that could check the equity of data, filling in millions of registration cards in the numerous recording sectors of the punitive organs, scattered all over the country. The lack of "vigilance" is severely punished in the USSE, but the Bolshevist rulers will never blame their punitive organs for the oversealousness in this respect.

The People's Commissariat as well as the local MEVD administrations strictly stick to the principle that in the 1st Special Division a cortain employee escupies himself with one definite "tint" and does not get in touch with work and data of other

branches. The officials of other SKVD divisions and administrations have no access to the files of the 1st Special Division and they can contact this agency only through their secretariats, which are directly subordinated to higher MEVD organs.

The operative-statistical recording is the basis for all pelitical and operative work of the whole complicated network of MAVD-AGB agencies, that appeal their sticky cobweb over the whole country. If any pelitical discontent of anti-communist nature arises in the country, the geographical files of the operative recording will immediately show where this "tint" was most active for some time past, and where the principal, or most dangerous from the Kremline point of view, center of such a movement is leated. All HEVD forces will be disposed there, the agents among persons of this "tint" will be recruited and thus the discontent will not be allowed to turn into a direct resistance movement.

The access to the map of "tints" is free only for a very limited circle of the most premiment officials in the Soviet secret police. Neither its whereabouts nor even the fact of its existence is known to the majority of the MKVD men. Probably, from time to time this map is shown to Stalin. It is even more probable that he has either a copy of this map, or his own map which has been compiled by a special "MKVD" inside the MKVD — by a Special Sector of the Central Committee of the Party.

In the days of war the "Generalissime" made his decisions as to the plan of military operations, bending together with Eke-kov and Vassilevsky ever a secret "operative map" showing the dislocation of Hitler troops. This map was drawn for his by the 4th Administration of the General Staff. In the days of peace he examines in the same way, tegether with Beris, Merkulev and Eruglev, a map showing the dislocation of enti-communist setivists emong the peoples of Bussis - the map drawn for him by the 1st Special Division ...

This system of constant and secret "operative recording" makes possible for the MKVD-MGB to leave to its mercy the whole of the population in the USBR. The MKVD-MGB registers every libel,

every anonymous denunciation and, without a special order from the Kremlin, does not show either to its victims or to the court, on which data its actions were based.

A real liberation of the peoples of the USSE from Bolaheview will be completed only at the moment when, after the liquidation of Chekists and their Kremlin bosses, all files and archives of the Soviet punitive organs will be destroyed.

Recording of Agents

If the operative recording of ASE (anti-Soviet elements) is basic for the distribution of forces and direction of actions of the Soviet punitive organs, the work with agents, their recording and classification is the principal element in the operative work of all AKVD-MGB agencies. The constant tension inside the country and the fact, that the Bolshevist potentates are fully sware of the hatred they have inspired to all strate of the population, led to the creation of a mass net of MKVD agents in the USSE. This net consists of many millions of secret agents belonging to different divisions and administrations of soviet punitive organs.

It may be supposed that the principle of the Garman counterintelligence service, siming at creating a possible wider net of
agents, was borrowed to a cartain extent by the Setting up of a
Soviet network of agents. But the Soviet system proceded considerably further, and a network of mass agents was set up not only
by the Counter-Intelligence administration of the AKVD, but also
by the rest of its administrations and divisions, first of all by
the Secret-Political administration, "Deobiy Otdel", Meanonic administration and Transport administration.

The system of recruiting, classifying and recording the agents in all these administrations is almost the same, though first of all it is worked out by the counter-intelligence administration. Still it would be erroneous to refer all the work of agents to the counter-intelligence branch, as it is done in all other countries of the world, as far as the Soviet Government

leads a constant war not so much against external enemies as against peoples of its own country. The essential forces of the Soviet punitive organs are just concentrated on this internal struggle with the population.

The statistical and operative recording of agents employed by all MKVD-MGB agencies is the coasern of the 1st Sector of the 1st Special Division of GUGB in Moscow and corresponding offices of republican, regional and area administrations of the MAVD. All territorial and specialised agencies of the NEVD-MGB fill in special registration cards for all their agents (see appendix). Copies of these cards are forwarded to the files of the 1st Special Division in Moscow (1st bector) for further classification and statistical recording. This is the center of recording for agents of all MKVD-MGB organs throughout the soviet Union, and therefore it is more convenient to make an anlysis of principles of the classification of agents and the work with them, in connection with the enalysis of structure and field of operation of the 1st Special Division of the GUGD MXVD USER (now sub Up.A). But, of course, it does not mean that the recruiting of egents and the work with them is the concern of this MAY, branch. This practical work is carried out by different operative egencies and depends on the tasks they have to fulfil. The 1st opecial Division of the Center, in Moscow, and its local branches are concerned only with the operative recording of agents.

Agenta

There are several grades of sgents, differentiated by their field of operations, compenses and their significance in the MKVD-MUB system. The principal categories of the agents are the following:

Usual abbreviation:

- 1. Resident
- 2. Agent
- 3. Special agent
- ngs nags
- "sp/ag"
- 4. Agent of internal observation "ad/V" ("Vnutrennly" internal)

- 69 -

5. Secret informer

- "s/e" ("eswiedomitelj" in-
- 6. Secret informer for lodging "80/K" ("kwertire"-lodging)
- 7. Tenent of conspirative quarters Ch/KK ("Chemyain"- tenent)

These categories of agents have the following poculiarities:

1. Resident. Is usually member of the Communist Party or a former Chekist, failing this - a Kensonol. He may be also picked out of capable and reliable informers, but he sust invariably have practical experience in comspiracy and agent's work. Carrying on his usual efficial tasks, i.e. being the Chief of the Secret Department of some factory, Chief of the Personnel Section of some works, Assistant Commander of a military unit as to political work ("pompolit"), such a man is at the same time an HAVD man, "accommodating" this industrial or military object, i.e. supervising it.

A special personal file is kept for every resident with manifold characteristics and check-ups, including a check-up with the files of the 1st Special Division of the regional administration and center. In this file are noted and checked all his connections and acquaintances, whoreby his family and all his relatives are checked in the most careful way. Sees anti-Soviet statements, i.e. any critical remarks on the address of the Seviet government made by persons, connected with this mean or their faformer social background, can be no obstacle for this mean to be appointed resident. But if the registration cards of the persons connected with him, are marked with such "tinta" as "ShP" (apy), "T" (terrorist), "KR" (counter-revolutionary), "Frav." (rightists), or "Tr" (Trotskyist) - he cannot be appointed resident.

A resident is connected with a "network" of 5-8-12 agents and secret informers, when he receives according to a special time-table, instructs them and collects their information. Only the resident is usually paid for the work. As to the "network", this or another method of compulsion is used, and people work

out of fear for the consequences of not fulfilling their obligations, which these secret agents and informers have signed in the MKVD agency that recruited them.

Residents are future official employees of different MAVI-MGB agencies; There are no specifications as to the terms of their work as residents.

2. Agent. Usually secret informer, but invariably beloaging to that or another registered group of "tinta", having connections with the ASE-group. So, for instance, if an agent is seeded for the "elaboration" of the Trotakyists, a Trotakyist is picked out for this work, and especially such a Trotakyist who is in full confidence of the group to be elaborated. The agent is recruited with the help of some constrate compromising material and invariably is brought to a stadium where he has to make his decision, having been told - "NKVD work or prison!". Operative expenses of the agent - for trips, entertaining his friends, etc. - are usually paid. Dometimes agents receive some periodical rewards for their work. But upon the whole, sgents work out of fear, i.e. trying to save themselves and their families from possible reressions by loyal apying for the MKVD.

3. Special agent. There are two categories of such special agents according to the character of the tasks they have to fultil, though these categories are not mentioned in the operative recording. The first group is composed out of specialists in some branch of national economy or industry, such as chemists, mettaliurgists, building engineers etc. The task of these agents is to control the work of some enterprise or trust and to expose all elements of sabotage, wreckage etc.

The second category of agents-specialists includes pickpeckets, burglars, specialists for opening safes and other highlyskilled criminals. These agents-specialists fulfil various tasks.

For instance, an agent-representative has to make a secret perquisition (called "vyenka" by the Chekists) in the home of a
"figurant" whose "elaboration" is in process. For some reasons
this perquisition is appointed for "17,00," but usually the owner

of the lodging comes home at that time. It is necessary to detain his in some way so that he does not see the agent-representative making search is his room. For this purpose a specialist-beoligan is summoned. He waits for the "figurent" somewhere in the street and, using some rind of pretent, attacks and beats him. A scendal breaks out, both are brought to a police-station, the case is investigated; for 2-3 hours and at last the victim of the assault is set free. In the meantime the perquisition is brought to an end. The agent-representative rings up the police station and the egent-bendit is set free. Though this method is very mean and exnical, nevertheless it is rather often applied by the HKVD men.

The first group of special agents work without pay and exclusively under computation, but the agents-criminals get their rewards. The same group comprises cheats, prostitutes, jugglers etc. These "useful services" of the criminal underworld to the operative agencies of the MKVD are partly responsible for the fact that these "socially-close" elements are granted different privileges and advantages in the prisons and camps, and they are even promoted to different administrative posts, including that of camp commanders. The USSR is the only country in the world where bufglers and murderers command the imprisoned professors, engineers, actors and writers.

A. Agent of internal observation. This is a non-active agent redruited from the immediate environment of the "figurant" (very often from his own family), but who is not registered with the "tint", marking the registration card of the "figurant". As such an agent may serve the sister of a Trotakyist, who is in permanent contact with him and knows or may know more about him them anybody else or may help in earrying out some measures that would lead to the activation of his "elaboration". Buch persons are recruited after a very careful study, and usually some very important material, mostly of private character, is applied; the fear of revelation: forces these persons to work for the MKVD. Thus, these people/ are simply victims of blackmail. If such material is not eveilable, it is prepared artificially. Very often such a

condidate for an agent is persuaded that he must work in this branch for the sake of safety of the very person, who has to be the object for this special observation.

the MEYD, where forged papers are shown to her while she is being told, that the MEYD agencies are sware of the fact that somebody wants to recruit her brother or helf succeeded in doing this. But this is not so important, they say, - "he know that your brother is a good man, but we must take held of the persons, who want to entangle your brother into their dirty meshes. You must help us in this report for the sake of safety of your brother" ... The unfortunate woman gives her consent and, not knowing herself, helps the MEYD to ruin her own brother. Such plotting led and leads to many terrific personal tragedies, but the people "who are guarding the conquests of the revolution" are not at the least embarassed by them.

The work with such kinds of agents is very delicate and requires a lot of test and shrewchness. Therefore, it is usually entrusted to experienced operative agents-representatives or even deputy chiefs of the branches. Such agents are usually rewarded for their work, but not necessarily with money or material goods. A frequently applied form of reward is a promise to facilitate the fate of relatives or intimates of such an agent.

5. Secret informer. This is the most widespread and the less specialised species of SKYD-MGB agents. Ahen millions of agents of the Soviet secret police are mentioned, one refers just to this category. Secret informers are resruited by the MKYD-MGB organs out of all strate of population, whereby no distinction of age and sex are made. Asserting to a secret instruction, issued at the times of Yagada (1934-1937), only children below the age of 12 cannot be recruited for this work - they do not stick to conspiracy. As to all the rest of the population of the Seviet Union, the MKYD-MGB agencies consider it to be a gigantic reservoir for recruiting secret informers. This recruiting is usually done by means of blackmeiling, threats, bullying and, in loss frequent cases, mostly when young people are concerned, by

influencing their petriotic feelings.

As strange as it may seem, but directly this misorable figure of a secret informer, terrorised and despising bimself, is essentially supporting Stelia's dictatorable. Experience has shown that Stalin cannot trust either workers or peasents, or ermy, or even his party - all hate him and would secrifice all to overthrow his edicus tyranny, he can fully rely only upon this miserable secret informer. Of course, the latter also hates "the beloved leader", and may be even more than emphody else. But he has nowhere to go - he is entangled in the MaYD mesnes, he comstantly walks with a loop around his neck and therefore, even egainst his will, he is forced to carry out the orders of his termentors. There are millions of secret informers - they are recruited among workers, party members, intellectuals, collective farmers, students, pensioners, housewives. The overwhelming majerity of them work out of fear and do not get any rewards. Their exact number is unknown, but legion is their name.

6. Secret informer for lodging. This special category of secret informers has only the task of controlling who enters. a certain house or lodging, when, how long he stayed and what nappened then in the lodging. Besides that, such an agent way be entrusted with getting letters, things etc., from a person, who lives close by and is "elaborated" by the MKVD. This category includes first of all housemesters and house-managers, whose duty is to notify the MKVD in a regular way about all events, happening in their houses. But frequently some lodgers of "ecomunal" i.e. common lodgings are recruited for this purpose, especially housewides and penaloners who spend much time in their lodgings. In many cases domestic servente are recruited to apy after their masters. They are usually paid for this kind of service.

Quarrels and squabbles among families occupying common lodging are frequently used by the recruiting of these agents. In some cases such agents get a reward, but in most cases they give their information with the wish to do an ill turn to their

seighbour whe lives in a better room, has better food, tends in the redic late at might etc. Seviet conditions of life create ideal grounds for recruiting such agents, but all their information has to be carefully filtrated, for it often bears strong traces of personal feelings.

Z. Tenent of a Genepiration Cuarters. Usually he is a Communist, a Konsonol or at any rate a person who was well checked up. The principle requirement - limited circle of connections (all of them have to be checked up) and a lodging, suitable for conspiration meetings with residents or agents. Such a tenent is regularly paid. All members of the family have to sign a promise of silence. If there are any children, conspiratorial quarters cannot be established.

Every operative worker must have at least two such conspiratoric questers; one of them may serve for meetings with agents and informers, the other - only with residents (for the sake of coaspiracy). Usually for meetings agents two or even three lodgings are evallable, but agents suspicious or even dangerous as to double-desling are usually seen in hotels. As a rule, operative workers and residents see no agents at home and do not conduct any work there.

General John E. Deen, describes in his book "The Strange Alliance" some of his meetings with leading officials of the MKVD foreign edministration, General-Lieutenant P.M. Fitin and Major-General A.P.Ossipov. The purpose of this meeting was to establish a working arrangement between the American O.S.S. and the Soviet Intelligance agencies. The American general was greatly pussed by the fact that these two leading workers of the Soviet secret intelligence never met him at the same place twice and always took the greatest processions when arranging these meetings. Once the driver of the SKVD car who had to bring him to this meeting, arranged a true race along the Mescow streets trying to lose the private ear of the American general, the Sussian driver of which was following the SKVD car at the heels.

Coviously in this case Fitin and Cosipov did not want to give up the usual principles of their work, and besides they pre-bably had instructions to arrange these meetings without any supervision by the agents of the "external observation" (L-MH) of the 2nd Special Division of the GUGB MKVD and "SMKKKH" administration, whose agent was, probably, was the private imagina driver of the American general. The circumstances under which these meetings took place greatly surprised the American general, but they were typical for the MKVD principles of work. In this case Fitin and Ossipov met their American counterparts under the same circumstances, as an average MKVD operative agent-representative meets his residents and agents. There can be me doubts that all this had been done deliberately and after some serious discussion in the highest quarters of the MKVD. What was the secret aim of all these tricks — is hard to say, but there had to be one.

Restuiting of Agents

As a rule, the recruiting of an agent is preceded by checking with data of the 1st Special Division, and, in more important cases, with files of all operative divisions and their special archives. Enquiries are invariably sent to : 1) place of birth - about the social origin of the parents and their background;

2) MKVD agency, "accordating" the region where the candidate lives; 3) MKVD agency, "eccommodating" the industrial or any other object, where the candidate works. Besides that secret characteristics of the candidate are demanded from the local party organisation (this is very often canouflaged so as if these characteristics are about for by the regional military commiscariat, police-station etc.), then a "setting" ("ustamotka"), i.e. checking up is made in his place of residence — usually through house managers, house-masters and other "agents for lodging". All these data are used as basis for a "Seport for recruiting"

The recruiting of a resident must be senctioned: in regional administrations - by the chief of the division or administration in Question in Question

الفردة فيسريها والمعافرة فيوطينها والم

The recruiting of an agent is senctioned in the same way. If the agent has been picked out of the number of "figurants" of a certain "elaboration", for which, of course, he is recruited, his recruiting is senctioned by the deputy chief of the SKVD administration. Recruiting of other estegories of agents are senctioned and approved by less responsible officials, usually by chiefs of the branches or sections.

The "report for recruiting" must contain the data for the "setting" of the recruited person (i.e. the conclusions drawn from the materials dealing with his person); besides it must be mentioned where and how the actual recruiting will take place, who is recruiting and for what purpose, and also what ateps will be taken providing the recruited person will refuse to work for the MKVD.

The actual recruitings are usually based either on the socalled loyalty to the Soviet regime (residents, tenants of conspiretorial quarters, in some cases - secret informers) or on some compromising material which is either available or artificially. created. If a "figurant" is recruited out of a certain "elaboration", he has usually to chose : either work for the MIVD or arrest with all its consequences. If the material is erested artificially and the recruiting is based on blacksailing, some additional material of this kind is usually available which is used if the first method of recruiting fails. If the candidate still persists in his refusal to work for the MKVD, he must sign a promise of keeping silence about the megotiations and then he is recorded as an "antagonist", thus being put in the seas level with oppositionists and sectorious. The refusal of work for the AEVD is usually followed, some time later, by the arrest of the unyielding candidate.

There are cases when agents that have been recruited, either commit suicide: or perform some other desperate deeds. So, for example, in 1957 L.Krasotina, relative of late Pobedomesteev, the former attorney general of the Holy Synod, took

peison in Moscow, after having signed her consent to work as an agent of "internal observation", i.e. for spying against her clesest relatives. In 1941 a Hungarian girl K. threw herself out of the window of her lodging after having given her consent to work against her fiance: Such tragedies occur for the most part when a certain person is recruited to work inside his or her own feasily. Both these cases, mentioned above, were threshed out on the operative conferences of NKVD divisions, and the Chekista who actually carried out the recruiting in these cases, were dississed and sent to some less responsible work — as punishment for "went of skill in recruiting" but not as surderers of two innocent human beings. As far as it is known, the operative workers are always punished in some way for failure at the recruiting.

Curiously enough, according to the MaVI materials, the most difficult categories for recruiting consist of former bocish-we-volutionaries (Ma-er), Mensheviks and churchmen. The most easy task is considered in the MaVI to recruit agents out of the number of Trotskyists and highlists.

while being recruited, the candidate has to sign his consent, and, if he is supposed to be an agent, he is immediately asked to give his first material. Secret informers are gradually introduced into the course of their future activity. At first, their contributions are limited to the information bearing seneral character, and only after some time they receive definite and concrete tasks. But there are no firm rules in this respect, and in every separate case the operative worker himself must find individual ways of approaching agents and secret informers of his team as he thinks is best.

Special registration cards are filled in for every recruited person and forwarded to the lat Special Division of the corresponding regional EKYD-MGB administration and to the lat Sector of the lat Special Division of the eenter, in Moscow. The lat Special Division of the MKVD-MGB regional administration sends a numerated case for the agent or secret informer which is

EN AL POSTEDIA

×

further carried on under a special anonymous sobriquet as "Bel-shevik", "Master", "Fighter", "Ivan" etc. All "Agenturaya resre-betks's" (agent elaboration) and "Service-list cases" are also conducted under sobriquets.

fork with Account

As a rule, operative workers of the MKYD are in "direct sentest only with residents and agents (of all three estegories). The work with ordinary secret informers and "secret informers for lodgings" is usually carried on by the residents. But also here no general rules can be applied, and from time to time the operative workers who are on the staff of the MKYD-MGB, see themselves the secret informers (usually in the presence of the resident, to whose team they belong).

The operative worker gives regular instructions to his residents according to his own materials as well as in conformance with requirements of the higher quarters. All operative workers have weekly time-tables for meeting agents, and they are obliged to give a copy of such a time-table to the chief of their section or branch, so that he may know where (in which conspirating) quarters) his subordinates are at a certain moment. From time to time the chiefs of the branches have to see agents together with their operative workers in order to control them.

The residents meet their mass net-work of secret informers usually semewhere near their places of work or residence, but here is also no general rule, everything depending on local conditions. But this is always done seconding to a shedule the copy of which is being sent to the operative worker who may sometimes central such meetings.

The encounters with the agents are arranged in the conspirated lodgings or, depending on the circumstances, in various places: in the streets, in squares and gardens, out of town etc.

The HKVD premises may be used only for seeing residence (rather infrequently) or "itinerant agents". The latter denomination is used for a special group of agents employed by the Secret-Political administration of the HKVD. This group is being recruited from a certain "tint" and is supposed to travel in the domain of their "tint". Buch agents are usually informed by phone that they must visit a certain person, and then the encounter is arranged in some of the HKVD quarters. But even in these cases the encounters do not take place in the very premises of the HKVD regional administration, but in some less conspicious, though subordinate to that administration, place.

The general principle of Soviet work with agents may be expressed in few words - "No stone must be left unturned to achieve the sim". Any lies, any provocations may be used for recruiting agents, and any crimes may be staged for the same purpose. All this is called in the MAVD slang "agenturnays kontinuatelys" (agent work combination) and is carried on according to approved plans. It is also the principal subject in the course of training MAVD officials in special schools - in the Central MAVD school in Moscow, in inter-regional MAVD schools in different cities of the Soviet Union and in the Higher behool for border duards MAVD in Moscow.

Note: The authors once more call the attention to the fact that the theme concerning MayD agents was worked out in connection with the work of the 1st Special Division therefore as this problem is common for all divisions and administrations of the GUGB MKVD USER. All operative work work with agents, including recruiting and training, is carried out by the operative organs of the MKVD-MGB, while the 1st Special Division is only concerned with the operative-statistical recording of agents and supplies the People's Commisser (now Minister of State Security) or the Chief of the MKVD-MGB administration it belongs to with operative-statistical information of all kind. It may also give simils: information to other MKVD agencies and to the

Party, but only according to the indications of the secreterist of the MKYD People's Commisser or the Chief of the MKYD regional edministration this particular 1st Special Divisions belongs to, and only in the working wished by the above mentioned MKYD insitutions. The same error was preserved when the SUUB HKYD was transformed into the Ministry of State Security.

and the second of the second o

DE THE CHAR SAID THE SO

Marten So 9

The activities of all engans of the State Security of the USAR, or, strictly speaking, their operative work with agents, is besed, upon the whole, on four principal foundations, mentioned below according to their succession:

- 1. Operative recordings
- 2. Agents:
- 3. Operative technique,
- 4. Inquest.

These are, so to say, four corner stones of the whole MKVD-MGB system supporting the entire practical work of its operative agencies or "organs" (using the Chekist terminology). The operative recording gives a full, manifold and detailed picture of how and where the real or potential centers of resistance to the Communist dictatorship are disposed throughout the country. An intrieated and manifold network of agents, that knows no bounds in attaining its purpose, gives full possibility of locating beforehand the centers of such a future resistance, defining its forms, and exposing its participators and possible leaders. The organisation and functions of these two first elements of the dovict state security have been discussed in the previous chapter in conmection with the analysis of the structure of the 1st Special Division of the GUGS SKYD USGR.

The inquest is the final stage of the whole complicated work, performed by the organs of state security of the USSE, and will be discussed in the following chapters of this menuscript.

As to the operative technique of the NKYD, it is a system, not less intricated and manifold than the operative recording

"operative technique", applied to the MEVD-MGB, only if one takes into consideration that the Stalinist distatorship is the only and exclusive master of all meterial and technical resources of this vast country and that the organal, accurring the accept of this distatorship and preventing the outbursts of hat-red of the enclaved people, may at any time use any of these unlimited material and technical resources. The MEMD may also fully dispose of such extensive technical means, and has in its hands such an elaborate and complicated appearatus for making the most of them, that the punitive organs of all other countries easnot even dreem of maything like it.

From the operative point of view, the whole of this diverse and exceedingly intricate apparatus, including various technical means, is the concern of the 2nd Special Division of the GUGB MEVD (now MGB) and of its subdivisions in all republican, regional and area administration of the MEVE-MGB.

Formerly the functions of the 2nd Special Division comprised also the protection of the Bolshvist leaders and this task was entrusted to the 1st subdivision of the 2nd Special Division. But by the end of the thirties this subdivision was reorganised into the so-called 1st Division of the GUGS MKVD, the structure and functions of which will be discussed in Chepter 7. However, as regards the operative functions, the 1st Division is still elosely connected with the 2nd Special Division, and their fields of operation are so interlink? especially in someon, that in many cases it is difficult to draw a line of demarcation between them. The importance of the 2nd Special Division is revealed by the fact that in the period of the "Great Purgo" it was headed by Erugley, who compled the post of the 2nd Deputy to the Foople's Germineer of Internal Affairs of the USGR after the war.

The eperative or apocial technique which is the concern of the 2nd Special Division of the GUGS SEVD is usually denominated

> ALGER HE PERIODE PONCE

in MEVD-MGB documents "us "levter" ("litera"). The most important of such "letters" are :

- MN ("narushnoye meblisdenie") external observation;
- I photography;
- M membrane control of the telephone metwork;
- E esvendropping, i.e. listening in by means of special devices and microphones;
- PE ("perliustrateia karrespondentail") consoring of letters:
- P ("pelengatsiya") control, search and location of illegal radio receiving and transmitting sets;
- Sh ("shifrovanie") ciphering;
- RSh ("reschifrovke") desiphering.

Sections and subdivisions that are concerned with all these branches of operative and special technique, are usually denominated by the abbreviations, mentioned above, while letter "L" (abbreviation from the word "litera" - letter) is added to them. Thus, for example, a subdivision, concerned with consoring of letters, is nessed "L-PK". Each of these subdivisions is, if it possible to say so, something like a trust, comprising a series of very cumbersome and therefore nearly independent industrial objects.

Let us take a closer view of some of these "letters".

"L-MN" - External Observation or Outside surveillance.

The task of this service is the securing of an all-day-round, constant and persistent observation of all persons who are at this period of time "elaborated" by the SEVD. In Moscow this is the consern of the 2nd Special Division of the SEVD People's Commissariat, in province - of the 2nd Special Divisions of NEVD regional and area administrations, in the capitals of Union Republics - of the 2nd Special Divisions of Republican MEVD-MGB. For this perpose a special brigade of agents of external observation is exceeded for trailing after every "figurent". A car, a motor cycle if necessary, is assigned to this brigade, and it is equipped with technical means, meeted in every concrete case. The observa-

tien

- 84 -

is extended not only upon the "figurent" hisself, but upon all persons he may meet and speak to in the atreets or in public places. According to the Chekist terminology this is called the "setting of the figurent's sommections" ("ustamovas sviszel figurents").

The "setting" seems that every person, whose the "figurent" greets or addresses, is followed by an agent - member of the brigade, whose task is to establish the identity of this person, his place of residence, his profession and place of work. In the Chekist sleng it is calle "to bring the connection up to home". Then the agent makes a short report about the results of his observetions, and this report is called the "setting". Later or, such a "metting" is forwarded to the 200 sector of the 1st opecial wivision where it has to be checked whether this pursue has been specially recorded and what is his "tiut". If the answer is a posttive one, these date are copied in the "setting", which in then filed with the "figurant's" case. but even if such a "setting" does not provide any compromising seterial, nevertheless it is filled for the purpose of "mounting" in case of needs the daugh proceedings are as follows: by the end of the day the nava-man, heading the brigade, compiles a "summary of external observation of the algument", fixing to it all "settings" with cate obtained efter the checking up with the 1st opecial siviations As agout ou duty (in expecially important cases there may be several agents) is posted near the dwelling of the "figurent". This secut has to apy on all persons, coming in and out, and make "settlings" for ti.ea.

mention "figureat" the external observation invariably extends upon all foreigners.

service "h-an" does not include spying elter the "lightent" at his places of residence and of sorn as well as in the quarters of his friends, this is the teak of a network of secret informers or agents belonging to the team of the uperative and of this or resident who is concerned with the "elaboration" of this

"figurent". "L-M" ("narushas" in the Chekist slang) is not even informed about the essential part of the case of the person under their constant observation. Ususally the activity of the brigade is directed by the operative MKVD official who is entrusted with the "elaboration" of the "figurent" in quention. But if the "figurent" is a foreigner or case from some other town, the whole sork of observation is performed by the "L-MS" subdivision, and only the results of the work are reported to a certain MKVD division or administration.

It is very difficult, and may be even impossible, for a simple mortal to imagine the scope of work of the "h-in", for instance, in Moscow. This "Moscow NA" means, that many numbereds of "figurants" of different "elaborations" are secretly watched day and night, while this secret observation is entrusted to a brigade of j-q, and sometimes more, persons in each case. Mesides, posts of external observation are needed for watching several dozens, and sometimes hundreds, of conspicuous "figurants", coming to Moscow on their business. These "figurants" are using "elaborated" by different regional administrations and republican MKVD People's Commissariats, who often notify the 2nd "pecial liviation about the necessity of watching certain "figurant" just on the day of his arrival to Moscow.

Hut that is not all I according to a special instruction of the MKVD People's Commissar, a constant external observation has to be carried on every member of foreign missions, embassies, consulates, all military attaches and their employees, all foreigners coming from abroad, and especially all correspondents of telegraphic agencies and foreign newspapers. It seems that foreign tourists give the least trouble to the organs of "L-MM" as they are always following established routs and are invariably accompanied by an Inteurist interpretor who is always in an eyent or even an official on staff of the organs of state security. At any rate, the special section of the Intourist, and not the "L-MM", is responsible for the behaviour of foreign tourists and for their inter course with Soviet citisens in the atreets and public places.

But some foreigners give a lot of trouble to the 2nd Special Division.

so, for example, before the war the secretary of the Japanese military attache, a certain Kembo Sasaki, was in the habit of going for a quotidien walk. Evening was his favourite time for this purpose, and he usually followed the same route - down the Okhotny Ried and along the Gorky Street to the sushkin monument in the Boulevard King. He used to have an unlit digarette in his teeth and saked every men he met for light. Thus he addressed 30-40 persons during his walk, besides he came up to different stalls, flower girls etc., and everywhere entered into short conversations. It is difficult to imagine how many meents were needed to compile a "setting" for everyone he had talked to. Summary of external observation of this wasaki alone included daily up to 50-60 "settings", checked up with a colal records. It was well amoun in the center that it was sheer mockery from the part of baseki sho tried his best to give as much trouble to the savu es possible, but nevertheless the external observation of passki persisted in the same scope.

Germans, as well as representatives of the neighbouring countries of the Esstern Europe, dit not give too such trouble. but the Americans were at first a true places for the "Lad". Usually, having not the slightest notion about the real state of things in the soviet Union, and enjoying full liberty back at home, the Americans strived to preserve all their mabits in domes and persistently tried to study the life of the Soviet Union applying the same methods that were habitual for the study of all other countries. They visited all public places, were in a hurry to make private acquaintances, and deaks of the reopie's Commissarist of Foreign Affairs were piled with their applications to get the permission of travelling all over the Soviet Union. Not texing into consideration all other ressons, this peculiarity of Americans, that annoyed the MEVD so much, could be expisined by the fact that the USA established the diplomatic relations with the USAR nearly 15 years later than all other great powers, and the American

representatives tried to get into "contact" with Soviet citisens directly at the time when the main point of the MEVD; activity was just to cut off any connections between the Soviet population and the foreigners.

It was not easy for the "L-MA" to handle William C. Bullitt. the first ambassedor of the USA in Messow (1935-1936). He was very fend of sports and often attended the "Byname" stadium where he tried to make acquaintences with Soviet sportsman. By the way. ur. Bullitt was the first who taught dovict officers to play pelo. Thus, taking into consideration such nabits of the American ambassador, a special intensified brigade of the external observation was required, and several dozens of "settings" mire compiled every day. To make the work of the AKVD easier two special agents were attached to Mr. Bullitt : s record runner and a tends player that has represented the UBSR at international games in France, an exceedingly slender woman whose good figure attracted general attention. But the combination with the tennis player and not pass. shen the winter case, Mr. Mullitt started skiing out of toms, and this drove to dispair agents, attached to his, who could not sai well. At the time he, like other Americans, was often discussed by the MKVD men, for there were piles of MM "settings", trying to fix his connections. The MEVD could breathe freely only when Mr. Bullitt "nibbled" et an attractive beit - the renowned ballet dencer Lepeshinskeys, sgeat of the 2nd byedist bivision, purposedly sent on a secret message, and spent all his free time exclusively in her company.

Besides all the above mentioned esjects, the external observation is estrict on for all scents of the foreign Administration of the SAVD and of the Intelligence Administration of the General Staff of the Soviet army, during their stay in the USAR. Many of the Comintern workers were exposed to such a control observation, which is periodically extended even on the MEVD-MUS men, to check their behaviour and their connections.

All these various tasks explain the fact that only in Moscow there are many thousands of "L-MH" agents. An exception in all other countries of the world, this extensive "external observation" is a daily practice in the USER, the usual routine of the "L-MH" section of the 2nd Special Division of the MKVD-MGB.

"iel" - Photographing

Letter "P" comprises not only the photographing of objects and persons, but also the preparation of photostat copies of documents, drafts, projects and even complete books. Microphotography and photosounting, i.e. preparation of one photure out of several ones, are also within the province of this branch, supplying first-rate "proofs" for lawsuits, recruiting of agents etc.

A classical example of applying such forged photographs is the well-known action against the "Industrial Party" ("Prompertiya) in 1930, when, during the lawsuit, "secret instructions" of the French 2nd Bureau, mounted from the documents dating back to the period of the First world war, were produced. As another colourful example of applying such "proofs" in the Unix may serve a widespread trick of producing to the accused, denying his acquaintense, let us say, with some leader of the antistalinist eppearation in the Communist Party, a photomounting, on which he is represented conferring with Trotaky or Bucharin.

The team of the "i-F" includes also a special sub-unit, the printing one, that is able to prepare any certificate or vise in any language, with any stemps or signs. So, for example, during the reception of Molotov in the British Mouse or Commons, in 1942, the galleries for guests were inveded by armed British communists, who used cards that had been forged in moscow for the purpose of entering the House. The same team may forge any technical draft or calculation in an extraordinarily short time.

Let us again turn to examples: once, in suscer 1937, an agent of the Secret Intelligence administration of the People's Commissarist of Defense, who was at the same time employed on the staff of the Japanese military attache in Moscow, informed his administration about the necessity of an urgent interview. The

THE PARTY OF THE PARTY.

latter took place in the wime evening, approximately at 22.00 in the neighbourhood of the Timiryesev Agricultural Academy. During the interview the agent stated that the assistant of the military attache had just received a parcel with the following stemp:

" All-Union Communist Party (bolsheviks), Central Committee, Military Department", and locked it in his safe. The agent was ordered to bring this parcel. Approximately at 1 s.s., a second interview took place and the agent handed the parcel to the official of Intelligence administration.

Some 20 minutes later the percel was passed to the 2nd upecial Division of the MKVD for an urgent preparation of forged documents to be returned to: the safe of the Japanese strache. At 5.30 in the morning, at a third interview, the sgent received the percel back, and did not even suspect that he got a copy, which had been considerably changed in comparison with the original. This forged copy was passed off for the use of the attache. The envelope contained some ten documents, including 5 drafts, which had been a proved by the recole's Commisser for belense industry, the deputy recole's Commisser for Lefence, and by the Chief of the Military Department of the Central Forty Committee. The matter was in the switching of a giant plant on the production of a new type of the shti-birefft guns. Forged calculations and drafts were prepared for the misinformation of the attache. The signetures were made so well that they did not call out any suspicions, but in the case of a graphological analysis they sould not be identical and the document would be considered as a sample of forgery, made by the foreigners.

By the by, it has to be mentioned to the credit of the Japanese Intelligence Bervice, that the military attacks got into the personales of the documents only one hour and a half later than the director of the plant, who received them personally from the secretary of the Military Department and scknowledged their receipt with his signature.

The "L-F" functions include also copying and changing of letters, compiling of forged diaries, different forgeries in financial

accounts otc. For instance, a letter from a certian Prof. Kluchniboy was sent to the address of his acquaintence, a lawyer Kolchenoveky, employed in the People's comisseriet for Foreign Affairs, who was at that time being "elsborated" as a conspicuous "figurent". In this letter Kolchenevsky was invited to call on the professor and pick the book he was in most of. This letter was intercepted at the post-office by a "L-FX" agent and forwarded to the "F" branch where it was changed and then posted again. This time the letter requested the "figurent" to take an inglish book from the library of the People's Commissariet for Foreign Affairs and give it to Kluchnikov's domestic worker, who would come a -cially for this purpose from the summer cottage of the professor. Two days later Kolchenovsky was susmoned to the MKYD where he was told that a secret document of the Commissariat, employing him. was found in the book which he seat to the professor. This document was even shown to the penie-stricken Kolchanovsky, and soon thereefter he was recruited as a NKVD informer and gave detailed statements about his business conversations with poviet Foreign Commisser Mexim Litvinov and his deputy Karakhan, both of whom were also under secret "elaboration" of the Secret-Political administration of the MAVD.

Such forgeries do not emberses in the least the postiffs of the Soviet "justice", and are systematically studied in all MKVD schools as examples of "operative work combinations".

"I-IX" - Censoring of Letters. The scope of work of this branch is so extensive that it is impossible to give a detailed description of its functions. Covering themselves with the formal garantee of inviolability of private correspondence, stated in the "Stalinist Constitution", the "L-PX" agents constantly open, weed and even make photographs of the correspondence of the Soviet sitisens with their relatives or friends abroad, as well as of the whole correspondence of those categories or "times" of the population which are being "elaborated" by the organs of the State Security at this period of time. In the course of mass purges and

repressions or at some particular mements of international or internal tension, the "L-PE" agents road all letters in the USCR.

All major post-offices (up to the district enes) have special officials who are consering the correspondence. But the pest-office chiefs are not aware of this fact, at least met officially. Usually it is done in such a way : the chief of the special branch "recommends" to the head of the Regional Administration of Post and Telegraph to appoint small "Courses I." as a telegraphist or se a clerk to a certain post-office. This man appears before his new chief showing simply a paper from the provincial office of Post and Telegraph. For some time he carries on the usual work of an ordinary clerk and is completely subordinate to the chief of the post-office. Then he is instructed to get into contact with a certain group of employees of this post-office, and proceeds to his special tasks, not reporting about them to the chief of the postoffice. Usually this work is entrusted to letter-carriers, employees sorting out the correspondence or taking the letters out of the letter-boxes.

Copies of the letters that are characteristic in any way are forwarded to the district section of the MAYD, and in provincial effices - to the chief of the 2nd Special Division of the MAYD administration for this region. Depending on the "general line" of the Party and on the MAYD instructions, the utmost attention may be paid to "alien elements", to persons connected with different kinds of epposition, to "corrupt elements" in the army etc

In the army this system is completed in such a way that every military unit has its own letter-box, and all soldiers and junior officers are obliged to use it for mailing their letters (officially it is done to have the letters posted free of charge). All these letters are read by the officials of the SKYD Special Section ("Osebiy Otdel") or of the political section of the military unit. During the war such a system occounted for the fact that a letter sent through the field post at Pulbove (five miles from Lemingred) received the addressee in Lemingred only in ten days.

All correspondence of "figurants" of special "claborations" is under a constant central of "L-FK", and summaries of this central are being separately forwarded to the 2nd Special Division. The "L-FK" team sometimes includes special agents, controlling the work of the "L-FK" men. These agents belong to the group "sp/ag" - special agents - and are specially paid. Ordinary "L-FE" men usually work as secret informers, i.e. without pay, but from time to time they may get some rewards.

As a result of this complex system of all-round and selective conscratip without informing the chiefs of the post-offices, the letters in the USSE often disappear or reach the addressess with a considerable delay. This system creates most favourable conditions for abuses on the part of post officials. With an obvious purpose of facilitating the work of "L-PK" agents, long before the war in the USSE an obligatory rule was introduced that the address of the sender had to be written on the obverse side of the envelope. In all telegrams the address of the sender had to be invariably mentioned.

relling the telephone conversations. The center of its activity in Moscow is the special section of the central telephone station, in the capitals of the Union Republics and in regional centers - special sections of local telephone exchanges.

The operative technique "N" may be considered as one of the most popular means of the "elaborations". Sausley the number of the "figurant" is taken for centucl, and any call, even from the automatic telephones, is easily checked up. The number of the phone is sutomatically recorded after the conversation by means of the operative technique "N", and theffere the "N" summery always shows on which telephone the call was made and where this telephone is altested, if the call was made from a booth with automatic telephone. There is nothing now in such a method, and it is regularly applied by the police agencies of other countries, but there, in the time of posce, it is used only for the expecition

and seisure of particularly dengerous criminal offenders, while in the USSR it is a constant and exceedingly remificant, system for assisting the Party in its daily struggle with all elements of opposition in the country.

The operative technique "M" is particularly often applied for the "elaboration" of prominent "figurents", as the bureaueratic circles of the Soviet Union make a broad use of the telephone network. The Soviet people know very well that the telephone conversations are tapped, and therefore they get accusteand to use a code for their telephone ealls. But exactly this
endified character of the simplest telephone conversations is
accessary for the MKVD, being just the proper thing for the
"elaborations", blackmailing and bringing charges, sometimes of
a phantestic and improbable nature.

The case of the former head of the Central Council of "Osoaviakhim" (the semi-miliraty organization for development of serial and chemical defence of the Soviet Union) General R.P. Eldenen, who was executed together with Mershal Tukhachevsky in 1937, may serve as a characteristic example of the work of "L-M" branch. It was known in the circles of the leading AKVD officials that at the soment when the Tukhechevsky plot had been exposed, no compromising material was available for Eideman who had only arisen some suspicions. Bideman was a close friend of General Kork, the Commanding Officer of the Frunse Military Academy, who was also executed later on for having been involved in . the Tukheshevsky plot. The following trick was used to expose Eidemen : an MKVD agent rang him up through a local telephone exchange of the "M" brench, and, calling himself Kork, "warned" him of the impending denger of an immediate arrest. An MKVD man was selected for this conversation, whose voice had exactly the same timbre as that of Kork. The well informed MKVD officials mentioned afterwards that Eldemen took immediate steps to disappear and was arrested at the moment when he was ready to get into his car.

Division of the GUGB ischarev who was present at the inquest of Ridman, told his intimate friends that Rideman immediately started to make confessions after having been directly asked where he wanted to floe and what were the reasons for his flight. Then Rideman gave an evasive enswer, probably to gain time, he was asked without beating around the bush; did he receive a warning about an impending arrest? Then Rideman enswered in the negative, the investigator declared that he was lying, that the apparatus of the control telephone station was used for this communication and that he spoke with a MKVD man and not with Kork.

Then Eidemen confessed that such a conversation had really taken place, and that having been warned he decided to flee, but did not know where. After that he was questioned about the reason of his denying the call and the warning (all persons, examined in the EEV), have to sign all their answers without any delay) and he had to explain, why he, a person without any sense ofguilt, decided to leave his summer cottage near Moscow and to flee not knowing where?

Thus, such a measure provided the investigator with concrete material, and on its base, one hour later, Aideman gave detailed depositions; still later, the same kideman convicted others, including Kork, at the cress-examinations.

The listening-in of telephone conversations is called "passive measures" in the instruction about the operative technique "M". But the "M" tasks of the 2nd Special Division include also the column "setive measures" where following steps are emmarated: "to cut off the conversation", or "in case of a conversation about some appointment to make it one hour later, urgently notifying the section ..." or "to switch off the telephone from...

till... " etc.

Besides "figurents" the "I-M" constantly tape the following estegories of stickets:

- a) foreign embessies and consulates;
- b) private telephones of all foreigners,

- e) all telephones of such hotels as "Moscow", "Metropol" and "Sevey";
- d) all telephones of People's Commissariats of Foreign Affairs, of Defence, of External Trade and of the Executive Committee of the Communist International (Commissar).

As to the governmental telephone metwork, the so called "Kremlin Automatic Telephone Exchange" (or "whizligig" in the Chekist slang), the "i-M" control desc-met extends were only very few of the highest leaders of the USSE. They are put on the list by Stalin himself and the list is forwarded through the special Sector of the Central Party Committee. This sector is supervised by the member of the ORGburo Shkisyatov.

Prench comprise sending of eighered radiograms from the central MKVD administrations in Moscow to every corner of the MAVD agencies, receiving of such ciphered radiograms from local MAVD agencies, discovering the presence of underground radio-stations on the USEE territory and locating them, as well as muffling of all undesirable broadcasts what over their origin may be.

The section "L-P" has its own redio-stations and radio location posts as well as other devices for carrying out these various and complicated tasks. Before the war the Central MAVD radio-station was located in the hamlet Monino near Moseon, but in October 1941, when the German troops draw nearer to the Seviet capital, it was partly evacuated and partly destroyed by the descrition detachments of the MAVD. The authors of this manuscript are not informed about the location of this radio-station after the war.

Already before the war, the functions of the "i-P" sequired which a stope that it became accessary to bring into effect a fundamental reorganisation of the whole breach.

So, for instance, the new functions of the "i-P" included the propagate breakcasts in foreign languages which were received and re-breakcasted further through secret redis-stations of local

Communist parties. A great stress was put on this work in relation to the Letin-American countries (Cube, the region of the Penama Channel, Bresil, Chile etc.). The habitual time for such broadcasts was the period from 1 a.m. till 5 a.m. (Mescow time). The so-called "white spots" appeared for that period in the regular breadcasting program of the Moscow redio-counities, and new thing was officially known about these "spots".

The using of the short-wave stations of the VSER for current instructing of the foreign agents of the Foreign MEVD Administration, the Intelligence Administration of the General Staff, and the Communist International (now Cominform) is another function of the "I-P" branch. Usually a code is used for such transmissions Amyhow, in a series of cases - for example, instructions to the Spanish guerilla in Asturia in 1939-41 (and now, undoubtedly, to the Greek ggürillas), - such broadcasts wer made openly, but, of sourse, in the name of the Central Committee of the corresponding Communist party. So, for instance, it is known, that the order for the dismissal of Harry Pollitt (British Communist party) in as the result of his testical error at the moment of the declaration of the war, came through radio directly from Moscow.

The information intended for the agents is usually received by the eighering branch of the Soviet embessy of of the Soviet emmercial representation with the help of "PPSh-38" radio set, and is transmitted further in the same way, i.e. to the receiver of the agent, which has, as a rule, only one wave for transmissions, thus making possible the control of the setting from some other point.

The scope of work for deciphering or simply for tapping of foreign broadcasts and radio-telephone communications was also increased in an unusual way. Already before the war, a special section for recording the radio-telephone communications between the Fereign Departments of Lendon and Washington was organized in the "L-P" branch. There are also some evidences that the first successful attempts to intercept the transationtic talks between Shurehill and Resouvelt took place in 1940.

Finally, the "L-P" was transferred into a huge erganisation with international staff of workers. These were mostly numbers of foreign Communist parties who were went to Moseow En the result of a secret mobilisation which was personally performed by the secretaries of the Communist parties abroad. The eld premises in the Malaya Labyanka Street were too small for this department, and in 1941 it was transferred into a specious building in Lenin Hills by Mescow. The whole central Comintern apparatus had been transferred there from the Seposhkov Square somewhat earlier, in 1940. As to its erganisation, the "L-P" still belonged to the SEVD system but practically it was subordinated to the Special Sector of the All-Union Communist party Central Committee.

"I-B". The work of this branch consists in overhearing the conversations in different precises with the help of special devices. The central Moscow hotels are the principal field of eperations of this branch, for they usually give shelter to foreigners and most prominent party men, coming to Moscow from the provinces.

The most habitual method of listening-in is the installation of special membranes-dictophones into the switches, ventilators, elocks, table legs etc. Hidden wires go from these membranes through the intensifying sub-stations to the Control center (in Malays Jubyanka Street 7).

The "L-E" branch pays even more attention to the buildings of foreign embassies, missions, consulates and different commercial and cultural representations. But this portion of work belongs first of all to the field of operations of the MKVD Foreign and Counter-Intelligence Administrations and will be discussed in more details in the corresponding chapters of this mammin book.

Special Division of the GUGS MEVD USER. The specific features of its work account for the fact, that each of its branches has a considerable independence and the Chief of the Division only co-ordinates the functioning of different kinds of operative technique. Like the 1st Special Division it does not perform any

operative work of its own and is intended to angist all operative divisions and administrations of the SETD whorever such an anniations and administrations of the SETD whorever such an anniate ance might be needed. This is true for Moscow and for all SETD regional administrations, such of which has its own 2nd Special Division, substitution of the Moscow SETD headquarters.

Formerly the functions of this division comprised also the protection of leaders, but some years before the forld Her II this task ment over to the newly created 1st Division of the GUGB. The 1st Division of the HKYD USER exists only in Moscow, and the protection of all provincial leaders is still entrusted to the 2nd Special Division, or, to be more exact, to its "L-HH" branch.

The majority of the workers of the 2nd Special Dividuos are the MKVD staff officials and they measure are on the MKVD pay-roll. This division usually hires "special agents" for the needs of operative MKVD divisions and administrations - thieves, burglars, pick-pockets, specialits in kicking up a row in the street, and other criminals.

The abundance of technical devices in this division and their complexity accounts for the fact that this branch is one of the most expensive in the MKVD system. According to some data the "technique" absorbs up to 50% of efficial budget appropriations for the MKVD needs.

The organisation of the 2nd Special Division is shown on the diagram No 9.

CHAPTER VI

OF THE GUGS MEYD USES

Diagree He 10

It has already been mentioned above that the work of the MKVD organs is based on four principal foundations: operative recording, agents, operative technique and inquest. To avoid a gap in the unity of exposition, we place the analysis of structure and principles of work of the MKVD inquest organs immediately after the analysis of structure and functions of the 1st and 2nd Special Division and previously to the study of the activity and structure of purely operative agencies of the MKVD.

First of all, let us call to our mind that by a normal legal procedure the inquest is the preliminary stage for the expesure of the circumstances of the crime and for the establishment of the identity of persons who might have possibly committed it. and the conclusions of the investigator are in no way obligatory for the decision of the court. The investigator cannot take part in the proceedings of the court or influence them in eny way. The bedy of the crime has to be irrefutably proved, and only under this condition the verdiet of guilty may be passed. Furthermore, the court cannot be influenced only by indirect proofs and evidences when passing in a verdist. In inward conviction of the jury that the escused really committed a certain crime, act substantiated by any proofs, cannot be a reason, sufficient for passing a sentence. Those elementary rules of local procedure are obligatory for judicial organs of normal countries but not for those of the Seviet Union.

In order to understand the role of Soviet inquest organs and methods of their work, it is necessary to dwell upon the principles of judicial proofs in the Soviet law. The next detailed consideration of this problem is found in the book of the

former Astormay Semeral of the USER, now Minister of Foreign Affairs A.T. Vishinsky "Theory of Judicial Proofs in the Seviet Less" (first edition - Moscow, 1941; second - 1946). Vishinsky was awarded the Stalin premium of the first grade (200,000 rubles) and the title of the regular member of the Academy of Sciences of the USES for this work. This book served also as an initial point for the compilation of new criminal and civil codes of the USER (this work was begun in 1947). Vishinsky does not set out any new standards or regulations in his work, but he lays down in very plain and precise terms the fundamental regulations of the Soviet legal procedure already used in practice.

These fundamental regulations may be briefly formulated as follows:

- 1. The Soviet jurisprudence is permeated by party-spirit and is based upon the Mrxist- Leminist methodology.
- 2. The Soviet state (i.e. the Communist party) is the begetter of the Soviet court which is flesh and blood of the new Socialist society.
- 5. The inward conviction of the Soviet judges is connected with their socialist interpretation of the law, with their communist conception of law based upon the social-political world outlook of the working class. The sentence passed by the sourt is based upon this conviction of the judges, but this conviction has to be persuasive being supported by the Marxist-Leninist principles of the Soviet juridical science.
- 4. If there is a lack of direct proofs or if they are insufficient to state the body of the crime, the decisions of the Soviet court may be based upon indirect proofs or evidences.

These four regulations make the Soviet court a simple tool of the ruling party, one of the organs of the Stalinist dictatorable. The Soviet court may condom a person even if the direct proofs of his guilt are looking - and this is its principal peculiarity. Analyzing numerous facts, purposedly selected out of practice of Soviet courts, Vishinsky rather symically states that if the indirect proofs are applied correctly, the court-

examination may be absolutely reliable and the results, thus achieved - veritable and persuasive. This statement of Vishinaky is acthing but an attempt to lay a theoretical foundation for iniquity and elub-law of the MEVD-MGB "judicial boards", "special councils" and "troikes".

In the Soviet Union the system of public legal procedures — with their pleadings, debates, with leaving the accused the right of defending himself, with citation of witnesses etc. — is pactically reserved only for "People's Court" ("Marsud") that considers only criminal offences, unimportant misdemeanours or litigations, and controversies between separate citizens or institutions. At the trials of these insignificant offenders the Soviet courts adher to the usual standards of legal procedure, and this enables the Soviet government and its numerous naive or dishonest friends abroad to demonstrate the fairness, legality and even democratic character of Soviet justice.

However, in all cases when the Soviet government itself or the Communist party plays the role of the accuser - and this happens in the absolute majority of cases and leads to the most drastic sentences .- this normal standard of legal procedure is not followed, the trial takes place behind closed doors, even without the accused and his defenders, and is practically reduced to the approval of accusing materials or "notices", that had been prepered by the investigator beforehend. *e have already dwelt on this procedure when we mentioned the Special Council attached to the People's Commisser of the MEVD. This kind of "triel" is nothing but mockery at all norms of legal procedure and at the very conception of justice. But namely this was the practice of condenning millions of imaceunt citisens of the Soviet Union to execution, long years of imprisonment or deportation. In all these cases special NEVD-EGS "courts" have passed their vertiets on the basis of indirect proofs, as in majority of such cases the MAYD investigators are usually unable to discover any direct proofs of the "milt".

Then the setions of the SEVD-MGB follow the line of a new compaign of political terror proclaimed by the Polithure, and

this is mostly the ease, - the inquest is not the preliminary but the final stage of the court-exemination (if we can apply this name to the procedure, hebitual in the USSR), and it concludes the process, that had its beginning in the operative recording and the so-called "elaboration of the figurant". The "notice" submitted by the investigator to the judgement of the "apecial board" usually encloses not only the material, provided by the inquest itself, but also the indictment and a suggestion as to the punitive measure, in the form of a certain paragraph of the Criminal Code of the Milkil or some other Union Republic. The work of the "Special Council" usually consists only in approving of the investigator's conclusions or in the selection of some other clause of the Criminal-Folitical Code with the corresponding changes in the punitive measures. The "legal procedure" of the "troiks" is even more simplified (See chapter "hegional Organs of the NKVD").

Usually, in the practice of the NAVD work the operative part is not separated from the inquest (especially at the periods of political campaigns and purges). One and the same NAVD operative worker begins the elaboration of the case, i.e. organizes the trailing after the "figurent", collects preliminary data and is very often charged with detaining of this person and making a search of his lodgings. After the errest of the "figurent" or of a group of persons involved in: the same case, the operative worker is temporarily transferred to the inquest department. He personally askes the examination and having completed the investigation, he reports on the case to the corresponding NAVD court. Having completed and closed the case, the operative worker returns egain to his operative unit. This may be illustrated by the fellowing example:

The operative recording of the 1st Special Division discloses a group of tearist officers, noblemen and other "have beens" smong the lecturers and prefessors of the Leningrad university.

The "elaboration" of this group is entrusted to the operative

agent-representative of the secret-political division of the Lomingred MEVD regional edministration. We organises the trailing, fixes the network of agents, succeeds in his efforts to secure the expulsion from the party of all persons who "wriggled" into the renks of the Party, and finally arrests them as "enemies of the people".

Having completed all these preliminary stages, he is transferred to the inquest division of the Leningrad MAVD regional administration and starts to obtain from the arrestees such "confessions" of the crimes which seem to him to be the most suitable ones in this case. Having completed the investigation, he compiles a "reference notice" ("sprayks") which is announced at the meeting of the "troiks" of the Leningrad MAVD regional administration. Thereafter the case is considered to be closed, and the operative worker in question is again returned to his permanent work in the secret-political division. If the case is brought before the "apecial Council", this operative agent-representative, having compiled a "notice" and the indictment, leaves for Moscow and personally reports his material at a meeting of the "Special Council" of the MEYD USER.

Such an order of carrying on the investigation is especially favourable for the inequity, slub-law and fabrication of false cases and forged accusations, as the operative agent-representative carrying on the lawsuit, is personally interested in condensing persons whom he has been "elaborating". This is a kind of a chain reaction and the only possible result is the conviction of all suspected persons.

Prectically, a person is convicted already at the moment when his none appears on the registration eard of the 1st Special Division. The only question is how long it will take to liquidate his and what forms will this liquidation assume. Having received the order for the "elaboration" of a certain person and being in personness of the data, provided by special recording, the agent-representative must obtain the confirmation of these materials,

securing the conviction of his victim. Already when he starts working of the case, he is aware of the fact that if he does not get the required confirmation of the data, provided by special recording, the case will not be closed, but passed ever to another HEVD man, and he timself will be recorded as a "complice" of this "figurent" and will be liquidated sooner or later.

Therefore the question of the real sulpability of this man does not exist for the agent. He must be guilty, if the agent-representative wants to be safe and sound. The oulpability of the "figurent" is a settled thing for the agent-representative electly at the moment when the "elaboration" of this person is being entrusted to him. "The MKVD does not arrest for nothing" - such is the standard answer, given to all, trying to protect their relatives or intimates who got into trouble, and expressing a naive hope that it is only a mistake, a misunderstanding.

From the very beginning of the "elaboration", the suspected man becomes the personal enemy of the operative-agent-representative as the well-being and security of the later depend on the "success" of the elaboration. The Chemist-spy-investigator-judge persecutes his victim with the obstinacy and fury of a hound trying to hunt him down as soon as possible.

After the arrest of the "enemy of the people" the operative agent-representative assumes the role of the investigator, and he must prove that the arrest and all the accusations of the "figurent" have been justified, otherwise another AKVD man will be entrusted with the inquest, and this operative agent-representative will be punished in some way for his failure, at least losing his efficial position. In this stage he is not even interested in getting to the bettom of the matters the accused has to be convicted and the difficulty lies only in the best "mounting" of the cape. If several cases have been successfully sounted and their "form" was found to be adequate, this investigator, i.e. the operative agent-representative, will be promoted and rewarded; if the mounting is found to be poor, he will stay without premotion or

will be even reduced to a lower rank. The NKVD-NGB releases its victims from its deadly grip only in those rare cases when the supreme party ergans have some reasons for sending general instructions to reconsider cases of all persons, whose arrests have not been substantiated, and rehabilitate them. This happened, for instance, in 1939, when Beris replaced Yeshev in the post of the head of the NKVD.

The structure of the inquest division is comperatively simple and it reflects in general lines the structure of the NKVD-MUB operative agencies (See diagram Me 10).

Rech MKVD administration or division has the inquest section or the inquest branch which is subordinated both to this MKVD administration or division and to the inquest division of the center, in Moscow. It is more convenient to make an analysis of this structure using, as an example, the inquest make an enalysis of the MKVD regional administration. In this case the inquest branch is composed out of several sections, depending on the number of the operative divisions of this MKVD regional administration. Usually it consists of the following sections: 1st - Secretariat; 2nd - "serving" the Counter Intelligence Division (KRO); 3rd - serving the Secretariotical Division (SFO); 4th - serving the Economic Division (ERO), and 5th - serving the Special Division ("Osobiy Otdel").

divided in accordance with the number of operative sections accommodated by this inquest group. Thus in 1938-39 the 3rd group of the inquest branch of a large regional AKVD administration consisted t least entired 8 senior investigators, and was organized in such a way that one of them worked with the 1st section of the SPO, the other - with the 2nd etc. In such a way the investigators are specialised on cases of a similar type, and besides it is very helpful in respect to the compinery, for only one person is inferred about all cases under the jurisdiction of this section.

Usually every section of the provincial inquest branch consists of only one senior investigator with the rank of an operative agent-representative, and of several investigators having the rank of assistant operative egente-representatives. But, as we have seen

in the above mentioned examples of a branch serving the Secret-Political Division (SPO), the number of senior investigators may be considerably increased depending on the attention paid to a certain operative division or administration of the MEVD. This example refers to the persion when the essential attention of the Communist party and of the MEVD itself was drawn to the Secret-Political Administration.

The staffs of the branches in the central inquest division in Moscow are such more numerous and the investigators have higher ranks there. Besides, there is a special inquest branch serving the 1st Division of the MKVD USER, i.e. considering the cases connected with the protection of the members of the Soviet Government, party leaders and the Kremlin.

Every central edministration of the GUGB (now MGB) also has its own inquest section or inquest branch which is subordinated to the inquest division of the GUGB NAVD USAR. It consists of subsections which correspond to the division of this central administration of the GUGB. Thus, for example, the inquest section of the Economic Administration of the GUGB is composed of sub-sections concerned with ell industry, fishing trade etc.

Inquest and Methods of Examination

We have already discussed above the particularities of the inquest in the MKVD practice. Its purpose is not the finding out of the feet, under which circumstances the real crime was committed, and not the ascertaining of the persons who have possibly committed that crime, but only the maintaining of decorum in the retribution of the arrested "enemy", who usually has to be liquidated only on the basis of some general instructions of higher Party ergons and of the data of the operative recording and of his previous, "elaboration" by the MKVD agents. In the observable majority of cases the MKVD-MGB investigators succeed only in squeezing out of their victims the confessions about some crimes they intended to commit, but very solden the arrestees admit that they have really committed these crimes.

Formally, the HIVD investigators must stick to certain norms of the legal procedure, but prestically they never adder to them and nobody prevents them from applying any "methods of physical influence". i.e. tertures to their victims. The most horrid tertures the besting and termenting of arrestoes were always practiced by the Chake-GPU-MKYD-MGB, but they eshieved unheard-of dimensions at the times of Yeshev - this period is called the "Great Parge" abroad, but - the "yesovahine" in the Soviet Union. Tenhev's predecement on the post of the MEVD People's Commissariat, Yegoda attached a very great importance to the operative technique and to the work with agents. He was an adherent of applying chiefly the psychological and not the physical methods of influence. Just when he was heading the MKVD, a masterly system of trailing, apying, blackmeiling and provocations was set to work. He used to say that if the investigator beats or tortures an arrestee. he asknowledges his own utter inability of extorting a confession from this arestee by any other means. Of course it does not mean that at the times of Yagoda the MKVD investigators behaved like gentlemen with their victims; tortures and bestings always took place but they were not the only or the essential method.

all these "correnomies with the ensmiss of the people" were completely rejected in the fearful period of the "Great Purge" and of Yeshov's reign. The deputy to the MKVD People's Commisser Zakovsky behaved with particular brutality. In 1937-38 he introduced a system of mass bestings and murders during the inquest. At the same time Zakovsky held the office of the Chief of the Moseow regional MKVD administration, while prior to that he had been heading for several years the MKVD administration of the Lemingred region. As an illustration of the inquest methods introduced by this dreadful man in Soviet punitive organs may serve the beastful declaration of Zakovsky himself, at a meeting of leading MKVD efficials in Moseow, in 1938, that "in aix weeks he contrived to drew a confession out of 11 thousands of spice in the Lemingred region". It is very significant that the horrid period of 1937-38, called "Yeshovshina" (Yeshov's reign) by the

Seviet people, was usually nominated "Sekershebine" in the Chekist eireles.

By the end of this period the number of arrestees was so great, that no apy-work of agents ("agenturneys rebots") was possible before the beginning of the inquest in prison. People were arrested by hundredsening on the basis of the data of operative recording or as a result of a libel, squeezed out of some prisoner by means of horrid tortures. For several years an ignorant, cruel and dull investigator became the "MKVD God" while the leg of a chair, the handle of a revolver or simply a boot or a first, combined with dirtiest swearing and most fearful insults were his "methods of inquest". When "softhearted" Beris replaced Yezhov, he declared : " it is not forbidden to best, and it is necessary to best, but not everybody as he was done before".

In all periods of the boviet regime in Mussia the investigators of the punitive organs have acted and still act more secording to the principle of "revolutionary consciousness" than escording to juridical norms. Besides all reasons, mentioned above, this is elso explained by the fact that the investigators (1.e. the MKVD operative agents-representatives) very often have no notion about these norms in general, and if they refer in the end of every case to the clause 206 of the Criminal Code (about the conclusion of the inquest), they do it only because it has been ordered by the office of the Attorney General to do so. They are directed in all their actions by the simple rule that "purpose justifies the means", and if the "enemy" has already been errested he has to be forced to make his confession by any means. The usual and the most widespreed method of the Soviet investigators of screwing real or, much more often, felse confessions out of a prisoner, may be briefly represented in the following femule : 1) terrerising of the prisoner by bringing against him the most phentestic escusations; 2) a systematic exhaustion of all physical and moral strength of the prisoner; 3) arousing hopes and striking of a psychological bargain between the investigator and the prisoner.

This method reined the lives of thousands and even millions of Mussian people. After the war the same method is applied to the new hundreds of thousands or even millions of victims of the Seviet regime in the countries of the Central and South-Mastera Murape. Therefore it deserves to be studied in the most detailed and attentive way.

The authors of this work have interviewed several dozens of persons, former prisoners of Soviet places of detention and concentration camps as well as former MEVD men as to this problem. The picture of the gradual "working up" of the victims of this institution is nearly the same in its pricipal features though somewhat differs in details. The following method is the most typical:

For instance, the operative agent-representative of the Secret-Political Division of the Moscow regional RKVD administration
is ordered to "elaborate" the economist of the Moscow machinebuilding plant "Sharikepodahipaik", a certain Ivanov. The MKVD
has no incriminating materials for this Ivanov, but a registration card has been filled out for him by the special recording
as he was seen in the theatre in the company of Petrov, engineerconstructor of the same plant who had been arrested after having
told a wat, connected in some way with the attempt upon the life
of Kirov, to other workers of his section. Ivanov was not present
then, but owing to this casual encounter in the theatre he was
included into the "agentur case" of the "all-teller" Petrov, who
was sentenced to ten years of banishment for his crime.

By the way, it is worth of mentioning that a wave of arrests, executions and depoststions which followed the assaination of Kizov was called by the people "the Kirov recruitment", a similar wave that followed the death of Kulbyshov - "the Kulbyshov recruitment", and the fearful period of 1956-1938, the so-called "Teshovshehine", was also defined as "the Great Heartitment".

Thus, the operative agent-representative begins the "elaboration" of the economist Ivenev, who, since this very mement, has been transformed in the EKYD files into the "figurest Ivenev".

The operative agent-representative makes enquiries in the special section of the plant, and the collected information shows that Ivenev is a painstaking and accurate employee, and that during the whole period of his work at this plant he was never reprinended by his chiefs. But he leads a very reticent life, devoked all his free time to his family (he has a wife and two children), solden attends meetings, does not display any enthusiasm at the prospect of a new subscription to the loan, evades social obligations and therefore was recorded as a "passive member" by the trade-union organisation. Direct anti-Soviet declarations (criticism of the Boviet regime) were not recorded, but he likes to take from the "Techprop" (propagands of technical knowledge) American technical magazines, and when the Austrian film "Feter" appeared on Soviet screens, he made the following remark: "At last we shall be able to see a really good film".

But this scarce information does not disappoint the operative agent-representative. He decides to classify Ivanov with the category of "concealed SOE" (socially dengerous elements) and to "areate" the material for his "elaboration". Mehashing the old proverb, the MKVD men say in such cases: "Find the man, and you will find the case".

And so a mystematic elaboration begins. Through the secret informers at Ivanov's place of work, and through the "lodging agent" at his place of living the operative agent-representative learns little by little all the details of Ivanov's biography, he becomes acquainted with his character, menners, habits, his circle of friends, his way of life.

Meanwhile the MKVD agencies gathered information at his place of birth and his former place of residence. Similar information was also gathered for his wife. It has been found out that his father had a small greecey shop in Saratov before the revolution, and that the father of his wife was "dekulakised" ("reskulachen") in 1930 and deported to the Kasakhsten steppes for colomisation. This information "lawfully" enables the operative agent-representative to consider Iveney as 508 (socially dengarous element

(in Aussian - "socialine openny element?), for he has conscaled both his and his wife's origin. There are still no consrete accucations against Ivanov, but his "case" gradually swells with these and other "indirect proofs", as Vishinsky calls them. When his case is sufficiently voluminous, the operative agent-representative gets an order for the "detention of potentially designous and suspicious as to his connections citizen Ivanov".

At might a cer stops near Ivanov's house ... Sleepy and frightened Ivanov, not understanding enything, is roused from his bed. A search is made and Ivanov is stunned by horrifying questions: "Where is the pistel?", "where have you hidden it?", "to know everything, so better confess, it will help you"...

The first task of the operative agent-representative is to frighten his victim with accusation of some most terrific crises and victous intentions. Thus, the "working up" of the arrestee begins with terrorising him. He is brought to the MAYD and is left till morning in the waiting-room jamed with the "night take". Frightened people, not understanding anything, sit or stand around him. While he is still not able to come to his senses, a man in the MAYD uniform approaches him and looking into some papers asks? "You are citizen so-and-so?" The flabbergasted arrestee answers "yes" in a shaky voice and wants to ask why he was arrested, but the man in the uniform mutters : "A fine fellow indeed! It teek us a long time to catch you!",-end steps saide.

The legs of the arrestee give way under him. He wents to make the situation clear, he wants to say that he was arrested by mistake, but everybody he addresses, gives the same enjawer: "Keep silent, it is prohibited to speak here!" In the morning he is summand for registration, a careful search is made once more, all his personal belongings are taken away and approximately at 10 a.m. he is brought to a evergrammed prison cell.

Innediately he is surrounded by some unabaken, tanglehaired persons in rumpled coats and evercoats. He hears questioned "Thy have you been arrested?", "What news are there in the free world?", and so works. The arrestee desides that he has been put into a cell with eximinals and timidly clings to the well. But gradually it becomes known that persons, surrounding him, are also economists, engineers, professors, actors, officers of the Red Army and party workers. He does not put any questions, his instinct of a Soviet citizen tells him that all of them are "enquies" who have been arrested for some real crimes, but he is quite innocent and therefore this misunderstanding will be cleared after the first interview with the investigator. But, of course, he has to shun any contact with these "enquies of the people".

The second stage of the previous "working up" takes place. The arrestee is left in peace, and it seems to him that the investigator has forgotten him. Meanwhile, other prisoners are summoned to the inquest. They are brought back after a long time and in a terrific state. Sometimes they are pushed into the cell being quite unconscious. The new prisoner (in our case - Ivanev) begins to realize that people do not leave this place, but still he nurses the hope that he will be set free as soon as the "misunderstanding" will be cleared. In the meantime he listens to sad and hopeless tales of other prisoners, who have been errested in the some unexpected way, but still he refuses to believe them. Gradually all his surroundings create a psychological preparedness for his first interview with the investigator. This preparatory period may be different as to its duration - from one day up to several weeks, depending on the intentions of the investigator and the number of other eases he has at hands at that time.

At last our Ivanov is summoned to the inquest. He is led through long corridors, and on the way he must stand with his face turned to the wall if some other prisoner meets him halfway. He will hear all the time the jingling of a large key, besting against the closp on the soldier's belt; that is how the warders netify each other that another arrestee is being brought along the corridor, to enable the warder to turn his prisoner with his face to the wall — so that the prisoners might not see each other. But at last he enters the investigator's rece. A formal inquest begine, and its purpose is the ascertaining of biographical data of the prisoner and his social origin.

"There were you born, where did you live and work, who are your parents, your grandfather and grandmother, what was their occupation?" - these questions have to be answered in details, day after day, year after year. During this preliminary inquest the investigator studies the prisoner, tries to understand his psychology, and his conclusions as well as the impression, made by the prisoner, will determine the behaviour of the investigator-during this first inquest. Depending on them he will be either polite and obliging, treating the arrestee to tee and sandwiches and offering his digarettes, or will knock with his pistol at the table, swear and shout a "I'll kill you like a dog!"

At last the formal part of the inquest is finished. The investigator came to certain conclusions and he proceeds to the "case" as such.

His first question as to this "business part" has normally such a sense though it may vary as to the form :

"Your attitude towards the Soviet regime?" - whereby he added "You have to take into account, that we know everything, and you have to make an open-hearted confession, which will prove your complete loyalty to the Party and Soviet Government. In that case we shall not bring you to the trial. But if you persist in denying your guilt, I shall rezind you of the words of Maxim Gorky: "If the enery does not surrender, he is crushed".

By saying this, the operative agent-representative at once shows the prisoner the general direction - denounce yourself as such as possible. But in spite of this eli prisoners usually vom that they are absolutely loyal and are ready to sacrifice their life for the Soviet Fower and their leaders.

At this sement of the inquest, the investigator comes down upon the arrestee with all his stock of information collected from secret, informers. He tells the prisoner about his intimate friends. He shows that he knows who and when paid any visits to the arrestee, he describes the character of these persons and the kind of relations between them and the prisoner. He may even

describe the colour of the heir of the girl with whom the prisoner had an affair and he may meation a whole series of the most intimate details of the prisoner's life. But he will not say a word about his anti-moviet actions or crimes, for his information does not mention any of such actions or crimes. As will only slap the file of the case with the back of his hand, repeating again and again : "You see, we know everything but we would like you to confess sincerely in all your errors. Aspent, and we shall forgive you. But if you don't plead guilty, you will be executed as an inveterate class enemy".

Section is brought into action which the the operative agent-representative (who is now acting as the investigator) invented
and prepared during his preliminary "elaboration" of this man.
Such versions and combinations greatly very, and they may be even
of fautastic nature: from an attact to kill Stalin and other
members of the Seviet Government up to an intention to blow up
a coal mine. This part completely depends on the phantasy and
tastes of the investigator. In such cases the very first inquest
begind with swearing, threstening and beating.

But in many cases the investigator does not bring any concrete accusation against the prisoner at the first inquest, but simply mentions several names of persons, known to the prisoner, who have been arrested some time before, and affirms, that they have already confessed everything, and that the MAVD knows about the part of the prisoner in their crimes, but he does not mention the crimes as such. From time to time he only puts some leading questions, provoking the prisoner to chose the necessary version.

But notwithstanding the nature of the chosen version, the investigator leads the inquest in such a way that the prisoner has the impression that he is not considered by the investigator to be the chief sulprit, but only a blind tool in the names of some main persons, who have to be brought to light with the help of this prisoner. Thus, from the very beginning, the investigator gives the prisoner a clue for the future psychological bargain,

while the form and character of this bergein are determined by the investigator in the course of the inquest, depending on the personal qualities of the prisoner, his education, intellectuality,etc.

This first stormy attack of the investigator usually at once sets the prisoner off the rails. He is abashed, he has never expected that all the details of his personal life, his acquaintances and connections, even his own words and thoughts are so well known to the investigator. Hearly every citizen of the Soviet Union has in his past such facts which, he carefully conceals from the representatives of the Soviet power. All these facts from his own past or that of his parents, as insignificant as they may be in reality, here, in the investigator's room, acquire in his tormented brain the meaning of a terrible deathly danger threatening him and to his family. Such a state of mind is explained by the "normal" psychology of the Soviet Citizen, terrorised by constant purges, check-ups, self-criticism etc. and this factor is fully taken into consideration by the investigator.

Some of the arrestees "crack-up" i.e. agree to sign anything suggested by the investigator, already during the first inquest, but in the most cases the first violent attack of the investigator does not give any decisive results, and the prisoner
keeps on proving his innocence. In such cases the investigator,
sprewling on a chair and smoking one digarette after another,
for many hours will repeat his only requirement: "Speak!". In
the intervals he will knock at the table with his pistol, swear,
stemp with his feet, threaten with tortures and execution and
even best the prisoner, though it is not always done in the course
of the first inquest.

The continuence of the first inquest may vary from several hours to several days. This depends entirely on the investigator, his intentions, the character of the material collected during the preliminary "elaboration", on the version of the "crime", prepared by the investigator, on the impression created by the arrestee, on the physical and moral firmness of the prisoner nimself.

The inquests that lasted for several days were especially wideaproad in the period of "Yeshevshchina" when the lack of material
that had to be collected previously, and the abundance of "cases"
did not give any possibility to the investigators to pursue a
systematic "working up" of the prisoners, and forced them to try
"cracking" the arrestees by means of a single furious attack.

In the case of one of the authors of this work, such an inquest in the Special Division of the MEVD lasted for five days and a half without any interruption.

If such method is applied, after some hours of the inquest, when the will of the prisoner in not yet broken but the organism already begins to lose capacity of resisting owing to the fatigue and nervous strain, the investigator usually leaves with the words : "Stand and think!" Here it is necessary to have in view that during the inquests in the MKVD the prisoners are very rarely allowed to sit. Usually the arrestee has to stand all the time he is in the investigator's room. This necessity of standing for many hours and sometimes even for several days is already a cruel torture in itself, and may break the resistance even of firm people; but the chief purpose of this measure is to bring prisoners to a half-concious state when they lose control over their enswers. Sometimes (so in the case with one of the authors of this book) the prisoner under investigation is driven to such a state that, being influenced by the investigator on duty, he begins imagining that the latter helps him and proposes the best version for his defeace and the best course to scopt in this situstion. But this measure is not included into the category of "physical measures for influencing" and represents the "normal" way of the "work" of the MIVD organs. Depriving the prisoner of food end drink during the inquest, or feeding his with herrings not giving any water afterwards, is also considered to be the usual method. To emphasise this measure, the investigator usually puts a carefe with water and a glass on his deak, and souses himself from time to time by pouring water into the glass and back again into the carafe.

And son the investigator leaves. Instead of him some operative worker in a low rank who is on duty, or a student of advanced course of the Moscow School of the MKVD investigators who is on probation, stay with the prisoner. The orderly MKVD man uninterruptedly speaks with the prisoner, using, as a rule, the most insulting lenguage, trying to humiliste and outrage him. The purpose of such a behaviour is to oppress morelly and to tire physically the person under investigation not giving him a single minute of rest. If the prisoner, exhausted by sleeplessness and long inquest, falls asleep while standing, the MEYD man on duty wakes him with a new flood of bad language and sometimes by pushing him. So it goes for a long time. Every six hours the investigators on duty are changed while the man under investigation must keep standing and "thinking". For emphasizing this measure the investigator sometimes draws two lines on the wall near the shoulders of the prisoner or on the floor near his feet, and prohibits to sworve from it or to step over them.

At last, on the next day, the investigator appears egain. He has slept well and rested, he is cleanly shaven, even aprayed with eau de Cologne. He is quite ready to begin his normal working day. But the prisoner hardly stends on his feet by this time. The investigator usually begins this second half of the inquest with s violent attack, demending the prisoner to take a sest and write down his testimony as he had time enough to think them over by night. And usually the investigator edds : "Then you can go and sleep". A characteristic detail has to be mentioned here : almost slways in the beginning of the first inquest the investigator addresses the prisoner in the second person of plural ("yy"the polite form in Russian), but later on he replaces this form by a rude "ty" (the second person of singular), and revely uses other expressions then "villain", "rescal", "fascist Vermin" etc. while eddressing his victim. He returns to the polite form "vy" only when the prisoner agrees to take a seat and write the required testimony.

In such case the prisoner is always given tea with sandwiches, and a package of eigerettes or of cheep tobacco is put on the table for his use. All errestees know about it, and after a crammed cell, swarming with bugs, this tea with sandwiches and the possibility of smoking again turn into such an alluring bait that cannot be resisted by many a prisoner.

Here the investigator applies the following, very typical paychological trick. Before closing the night inquest he comes down upon the prisoner with some horrible and even frantastic: 1 accusation, as, for instance, the organization of an attempt upon Stalin's life, an attempt of blowing up the plant where the prisoner works or something like that. The prisoner is left for the night to "think over" this terrible accusation, that threatens his with a "page into eternity". In the course of the night the prisoner gets accustomed to the thought of the impending death and all his mental ability is directed upon attaining only one purpose ; to avoid this terrible menacing prospect and at least to save his life. If in the beginning of the inquest the prisoner strove to prove his innocence and wanted to be set free, he has only one wish now - to escape impending death and as soon as possible to put an end to this exeruciating inquest, his feet are swollen from the long standing, his brains are influed and he has elmost lost his capacity for understanding.

The investigator taxes into consideration such a state of the prisoner and abruptly changes his tectics. He begins the morning inquest in, a soothing tone: "Both of us lost our temper yesterday. Each of us was tired. Your enemies have slandered you a lot. But we know that you are not such a bad man. Everybody may make an error. We do not want to ruin innocent people, we want only to know the truth." - The further harangue is of the similar nature but ends with releasing the prisoner from the most terrible accusation while the prisoner is summoned to sign some "trifle", i.e. the testimony of a "disloyal attitude towards the Soviet power", "petty wreekage" etc. Here the investigator adds with a pretended sympathy to the fate of the prisoner: "Mothing particular will emreaten you for that. May be you will be only

forced to spend a couple of years in a casp. Then the Soviet pewer will forgive you and you will be free again." After the terrible experience of the last night the prospect of "going to a casp for a couple of years" seems to be almost a blessing to the weary prisoner. Many take the bait of the "compassionate" investigator and ruin themselves and their relatives and intimates.

But if the prisoner is firm enough to refuse signing this "trifle", the investigator uses floods of bad language, and throwing saids all his "compassion" and "sympathy" applies to the prisoner the most cruel "measures of physical influence" in the result of which the prisoner usually loses his senses. Then cold water is poured on him and he is dragged into the solitary confinement cell or back to his ordinary cell, or even to the prison hospital—depending on the wish of the investigator and on the state of the prisoner.

But besides the "physical influence" there is also the following method which is applied very frequently, being tired out with shouting and having exhausted his stock of curses the investagator declares: "All is finished with you. You are such an incorrigible vermin that there is nothing else to be done with you but to shoot you down. That's enough!"

The prisoner is put into an elevator, he feels that he comes down somewhere. The memories of all his past life pass before his mental sight. But suddenly the elevator stops. The door is opened and the prisoner sees a long corridor, disly lit by electrical bulbs. Two MKVD men stand by the elevator holding pistols in their hands. The prisoner is ordered to go shead, btaggering, clinging to the well, he slowly moves and sees the bullet marks on the corridor walls. The MKVD men gradually fell behind, he hears their steps, echoing hollowly in the stillness of the corridor. Assays This is an end...

But no shots are fired. The prisoner reaches the end of the sorridor. Again he is put into an elevator and brought before the investigator who meets him with the words: "sell, have you seen? I was sorry for you and thought you might repent. Iou have wife and children, then think it over once more! se don't stand upon seremony with the enemies of the people: one, two and ready!"

Again the herrid secusation of terrorism, apping estivitées; diversion etc. appears on the stage, then the investigator again has "pity" on the prisoner, and summons him to sign some "trifle" which will cost him only two-three years in the casp. Variations and forms of the methods used by the investigator may be different, but the argumentation is nearly always the same : "Sign this "trifle" and the accusation of terrorism and diversion will be taken off, as you will show that you sincerely repent in your errors". At last the worn-out man signs this "trifle" and is sent to some concentration camp for 5-10 years.

however, the investigator rarely achieves his purpose in the course of the first inquest though it may last for several days. In opinion is wide-spread abroad that the NEVE investigators can model anything out of the prisoners as if they were soft wax. buch an opinion ass created after the "big processes" of 1936-38 but it is quite a wrong one.

These big processes are called "show triels" or "demonstrative triels" in the Udoh. But in reality they do not descentrate enything. Only such "enemies of the people" who "cracked up", capitulated and agreed to be partners of drylanko and Vishinsky appear on the platform of the Column hall of the Moscow Union house. But all those who have courageously enquired moral and physical tortures simply get a bullet into the napes of their necks and this is done without any pomposity. It is sufficient to mention only the most popular names of those who perished without this comedy of an open trial - the names of Marshelf. Tukhachevsky, Yegorov, Blucher, Army Generals Kork, Uborevich, Yakir, Admirals Pandershansky and Orlov, ministers of the government and members of the Central Party Committee and even of the Politburo as Rudsutak, Kessier, Postyshev and others, preminent diplomats se Kerakhan and Raskolnikov, and what is more important - let us recollect millions of courageous Russians, men whose names and whose very existence remained unnoticed by the foreign correspondents, eager only to find a sensation - millions of patriots and anti-communists, tortured and executed in the secret MKVD places, killed as they could not be curbed or broken.

The names of generals Vlassov and Malyshkin, Trukhin and Mesndrov who were executed in 1946 without witnesses, may serve as a symbol of all, than innumerate army of fighters for freedom who conquered the horrors of the MXVD system.

Thus, this monstrous system of moral and physical violence is not always the winner. More often it is conquered by the human spirit, strong in its hate of all evil, in its love of the good, i.e. by those qualities of the people which the Communica was unable to change in the long thirty years of its complete mastery over bodies but not the souls of the Eussian people.

The unknown victims of Stelin's dictatorship leed their heroical struggle egainst their tormentors for long months, though they are denied all human rights and though they are fully esare of the fact that this struggle leads only to their death. Many lose their strength and firmness in this inequal struggle, sign everything they are requested to, and even turn into obedient agents of their tormentors. But still greater number of mussian people remain firm to the very end in spite of all indescribable physical and moral tortures.

The procedure of a gradual influence of the have investigator upon the prisoner's mind, as described above, is foten spun out for many months and even years. It happens very often that one and the same investigator is in charge of several dozena of cases, and as a result of this persons under investigation are celled out by him for the inquest once in a wey. In 1937-38 it was not infrequent that people were summoned to the first inquest only after 4-5 months of imprisonment, and then they were egain forgotten for several months. There were also cases when persons sprested in the very height of "Yeshovshchina", i.e. in winter of 1937-38, had not been called for the inquest until Yeshov himself was dismissed by the end of the year 1938, and then they were set free, "for lack of the body of the crime". These people never learned why they had been arrested and why they had to spend a year in prison. But all these cases have to be considered as exceptions and they cannot be characteristic for the usual methods of the inquest in the MKVD prisons.

In order to wilderstand the ections of the investigator and of the prisoner in such cases when the investigation is not limited only by the first violent inquest but is spun out for a long period of time, it is necessary to take into consideration the atmosphere of the MKVD prison cell. In the period of great repressions 25-30 persons were creamed into normal cells, designed for four persons. People could sit only by turns, and for the night large wooden shields were brought into the cells and put on the plank-beds across the whole cell. Thus the whole space of the cell was divided into two or three stories the height of which did not exceed one meter. 8e10 and even more prisoners were placed on these storess, so that they were lying tightly pressed to each other and filling almost the whole of the cubature of the cell with their bodies. Inose who had to lie on the floor under the plank-beds and the first row of shields were in the worst position. In the Moscow prisons these places were called "subward".

ing in plank-beds and in the shields, an impossibility of washing, shaving or combing, a thin soup called "balands" with a piece of bread for dinner and supper, complete lack of news from outside and the agonizing incertitude about the fate of two relatives and intimates, shricks of tortured men, means of those who have come back from an inquest, the night calls "without things" for execution and desfaning rear of automobile meters that had to muffle the sound of shots in the cellars - all this created such an atmosphere in the cells, in comparison to which even the worst concentration camp seemed like a rest home.

In such conditions the investigator had only to create in the mind of the prisoner a certitude that he won't be released under any circumstances and that death is lurking for him. Such a state of mind was achieved in the result of the most terrible and even minutestic accusations and by means of brutal beatings and tortures during the first inquests. Then, for some time, the prisoner is left in peace. As it is prohibited to speak in a loud voice in the cells, the prisoners talk in a low whisper with each

THE PARTY WILL WAR THE THE

tell their stories and ask for sivice as to their behaviour at future inquests, though each prisoner is aware of the fact that two-three secret agents are normally present among the prisoners of the cell. However, each arrestee tells his fellow-prisoners only a part of the truth - the fear of the investigator is too strong. Therefore, of course, it is impossible to speak about any co-ordinated actions of the immates of one and the same cell - each of them takes his own risk and sots according to his own piam. The inveterate habit of Soviet people to hide their innermost "I" from the eyes of the atrangers is preserved even in the hell of a HEVD cell. The analysis of the conditions in the HEVD prisons is not the purpose of this work, but we are obliged to dwell on the following two points that are of decisive value s

1. Such conditions have been created in the NKVD prisons, in comparison to which any punitive measure (with the only exception of a death penalty) seems to the prisoners a facilitation of their fate.

2. Collective demonstrations, riots, hunger-strikes etc. take place in the prisons of other countries, while in the EKVD prison, as a rule, a duel between the investigator and the prisoner is going on.

Though the circumstances of each separate case may greatly vary, it is possible to state three essential lines in the behaviour of the prisoners, and consequently all political prisoners of the NEVD are divided into three main categories.

The first category embraces those persons who rapidly lose their morel and physical strength, strike a bargain with the investigator, "creak up" i.e. sign everything they was suggested to by the investigator, and in the most cases perish or consent to become MEVD agents.

The second category consists of persons who are strong enough to beer all tertures of the inquest as well as inhuman conditions of their imprisonment, edulating meas of the points of the secusation, brought excinst them by the investigator. Heny of them perion in the result of felse testimenies of minds other prisoners or friends, colleages and fellow-workers who have not been arrested but performed to beer witness against them. However, a certain number of such prisoners are lucky enough to be released "because of the lack of the body of the crime" after many months of inhuman tortures and at the cost of a colossel strain of their physical and moral strength. Usually they draw this fortunate lot in such instances when the French decides, for certain reasons, to reconsider the cases of the prisoners.

The third category is the most numerous and the most charactristic one for the Soviet conditions, though such a category cannot be found among the prisoners of any other countries. It consists of persons who rather quickly come to the conclusion that they won't be able to enatch out of the NEVD clutches, and therefore these people lead their struggle with the investigator not for their freedom, but for applying to their cases such a clause of the criminal code in the indictment which seems to them to be the most favourable one. This is approximately the seme course of action, adopted by the advocates of other countries when they see the impossibility of gaining a lassuit for their client. But here is a principal difference : the defenders of obviously hopeless cases concentrate their efforts on the extenuating circumstances in so fer as the fact of the crime is beyond any doubt. The Soviet prisoners of the third category have themselves invented for their "cases" such crimes that theve never been committed by them, and direct all their phantasy and mental ability to bring the characterisis and circumstances of these "erines" in conformance with certain clauses of the criminal code that may threaten them "only" with deportation to a concentraties comp.

The testics of this original "defease" of the NEVD prisoners is approximately the following :

end's certain stage of the investigation the prisoner clearly sees that he won't be repleased, that his conviction has been decided beforehend by the investigator and his superiors. The atmosphere in the cell and tortures during the inquests gradually

undermine his will for struggle. On the other hand the absurdity of the investigator's version of his "crime" is also ebvious to him in all its details. His brain is painfully and strenuously working in the effort of making this version like the truth, but at the same time taking care that the punishment does not exceed "deportation to the camp for 2-5 years". Usually this way is chesen by persons who have been arrested by the ergans of the Recommic Administration of the HKVD and charged with "diversion", "ecomonic spying" and "wrecksge".

arrestees begin consulting their fellow-prisoners. In every cell there are always several "specialists" as to the Criminal Code, who know by heart the most frequently used clauses of the Soviet Criminal Code and punitive measures involved by them. The prisoner choses a clause which seems to him to be the most suitable one, and starts corking on the details of him "crime" as well as on the general plan of his "confession". Then such a plan is made out, the prisoner comes up to the judgs in the door of his cell and asks the worder to give him an interview with the investigator for "giving testimony". Buch an interview is normally given without any delay. Deing brought before the investigator he declares that he has "reslized his arrors" and mants to "make an open-bearted confession" and therefore asks for some ink, pen and the files of his case.

Having received all this, the prisoner, in the presence of the investigator, begins working at his own case. The attitude of the investigator is immediately changed into the most sympathetic one and the prisoner investibly gets to with sandwiches and eigerettes or tobacco. The investigator has by that time fully realized all the discrepancies and even absurdities of his version of the accusation, and he glosly accepts the prisoner's co-operation. He is interested neither in the casential part of the "case" as such nor in the punitive measure, but only in the suitable "mounting" or "framing" of the notice which he has to prepare for the session of the "troike" or "Special Council". The rudeness of the investigator's abuses, blows and tortures

are immediately stopped at this stage, and the investigator puts on a sympathibity and even good-humoured mask.

As seen as the prisoner has started writing his "version", he becomes the temperary master of the situation. In such cases he works without herrying, trying to prolong his "leave" from the coll and onjey comparatively human conditions. There are cases when prisoners work at their "testimenies" for a week or even more, and they compile a really-scientific work, indued with formalias and calculations. The investigator does not hasten him, and only attentively wather ever the prisoner to prevent him from trying to prove his complete innocease. As long as he "confesses" and does not rejut directly the version of the investigator — the latter will not intrude.

Starting this strange and unnatural "co-operation" with the investigator, the prisoner may pursue different objects, but in the majority of cases he strives to facilitate his fate or that of his family. Under the most favourable circumstances such a "detailed confession" may lead to the appointment of a commission for revising his case. But much more frequently the prisoner "goes" to a camp for several years and all his inventiveness serves only for mitigating his fate to a certain extent and somewhat shartening his prison term. This strange work of prisoners for inventing the crimes they have never committed shows in the clearest way how desperate and hepeless the people feel in the HEVD prisons. In fact, it is the same principle of the Soviet "self-criticism" but amounting to absurdity in prison.

Sometimes the wish to escape from the lousy and stinking cell and to go to the concentration camp sequires the character of a real psychosis. Mangry and weary people begin to paint in the brightest colours the pictures of the Siberian taigs (vast forests) and of rivers, abounding in water and swarming with fish. They can discuss for hours and with the participation of all incates of the cell, how they will fell trees, build their barrocks in the decolete taigs, how they will go a-fishing and cook a

fish-coup. In their imagination the "correctional camp" of the MIVD turns into the climax of the human well-being, and in order to achieve their deportation as soon as possible, people compile the versions of the crimes, never committed by them but required by the investigator. Such psychoses, very profitable for the investigator, are sometimes provoked by him through his agents in the cell. A lot of people under investigation, especially former soldiers and officers of the Red Army, try to be deported to a camp as soon as possible, while they are still healthy and strong in order to flee from there. On this account there is even a special saying in the prisons: "I go to the damp, -- to the green prosecutor..."

There are also cases when the prisoners try to mock quite consciously at their ignorant investigators. so, for instance. in 1957, an inmate of the NEVE prison invented with all details a story how he intended to sink several ships of the Black See nevy in armavir, and the investigator put down all this nonsense. not knowing that armavir is situated 300 miles away from the Black See coest. Only on the next day he saw what a trick was played on him by the prisoner, summoned this prisoner to his room and best him so that he was more dead then alive. another "participator of an ermed revolt on the Lower solge" signed a testimony that he, being the chief of the auto-repairing shop of the HTS (Machine-tractor station), intended to make tanks out of the tractors "Fordson" and armoured cars out of the auto-cisterns in order to secure the success for this "revolt". But more often there are cases when weary and desperate prisoners - this is mostly the case with almost elliterate peasants and workers - ask the investigator to write down exactly what he wants and finds better for them and thus sign themselves their death sentences.

It is absolutely impossible to give a detailed analysis of all methods of the inquest and investigation of the MEVD-MGB im a short chapter of this book. Such an analysis must be a theme for a special work.

Clearing this chapter it is only necessary to point out that the chief weapon of a MEVD investigator is neither the meterial which has been collected by him during the "claboration of the figurent", nor the physical measures of influence, but this atnosphere of ultimate despair and complete lawlessness which envelops every prisoner since the very first mement of his arrest, and to which he has been prepared by all his previous life in the "normal" Soviet surroundings. It wen't be an exaggeration if we say that the atmosphere of this "normal" Soviet life differs from the atmosphere of an HEVD prison only by a concentration and acuteness of the measures of enforcement as here and there the Soviet citisen has no personal freedom and all his hide fate is in the hands of the authorities in power.

The work with the witnesses is of a much simpler nature. The investigator reads to the summoned witness a false testimony of the prisoner, where the latter makes a clean breast of everything. If the witness does not went to say anything that may be of any harm to the prisoner, the investigator declares : "Well, you are such an enemy as he is, even a more dangerous one, for he has confessed and reputs openheartedly for what he has done while you want to conceel everything from us".

Having been summened to the MEVD, the witness cannot leave the premises without the signature of the investigator on his pass. The investigator suggests to the witness to go out into a corrider and think there, while a soldier bids him to stand with his face turned to the wall, and he may be kept in such a position for many hours according to the investigator's order. As a result persons of weak character sign everything given to them by the investigator, only anxious to leave this demned building.

The foreigners often ask : what does the Soviet government arrest such a lot of people for, especially as they are obviously innocent? The usual ensuer is that it is necessary for the reinforcement of the army of the prisoners who are earrying out the most difficult work without being paid. But this ensuer does not give an exhaustive explanation of the problem, as the whole population of the Soviet Union already works for the state, i.e. party,

and gots starretion veges for their labous. And the work of a slave is always less productive than that of a free man, even if his freedom is as ephonoral as it is in the Seviet Union. Therefore, the above question will be more correct if we put the word "mby" instead of "what for", used there.

Then the ensuer will be as following a because being afraid of the people's hatred the Seviet government created a multimillians army of jailars, who have to arrest, torture and deport millians of people in order to justify their existence, and because there is no organ in the Seviet Union that could step on a certain limit the signal, received from the center, for liquidating or "purging" that or another group of the Seviet population. Thus the well-known theory of the snow-ball is brought into life. The distatorship of the Communist party cannot exist without the army of MKVD-MGB butchers, and this army requires millions of victims to justify its existence. This is a vicious circle from which there is no other escape but the making away of both the distatorship and the butchers in its service.

CMAPTER VII

THE FIRST DIVISION OF THE GUGB MEVD USER

The task of this division is to protect stalin and other top ranking leaders of the Party and Government, as the Stalinist olimatchy is officially nominated.

The 1st Division is particularly concerned with the protection of : Stalin, all members and candidates of the Polithuro, secretaries of the Central Party Committee, members and candidates of the Ergburo, the chairman and some members of the Commission for Party Control, all Vice-Chairman of the Sovnarkom (now -Council of Ministers) of the USAR, and some People's Commissars (now Ministers) as well as a series of the highest officials socording to a list approved by Stalin himself.

The nost important objects, guarded by the 1st &ivision, are:

- e) the Kremlin;
- by the building of the Central Conmittee of the Farty;
- c) the building of the Bownerkom in Okhotny misd in moscow; ?
- a) the buildings of the Larty Control Commission, of the Executive Committee of the Committee, that of the Central Committee of Rossomol, and a series of others;
- e) the building of the #KYD Ubon woscow, prershinsky Square, house No 2;
- f) Stalin's country-house,
- g) Country-houses of all the Polithuro members and other persons under protection of the 1st Division;
- h) the road from the Kremlin to the country-houses of the above mentioned persons;
- 1) Government villas in the Caucasus and the Crimes,
- j) Government trains, aeroplanes, cars, yachts and other transport means.

Besides these main objects, the 1st Division guards absolutely all places, Visited by Stalin and his closest sollaborators, as well as all reads, chosen for their routes. For instance, the 1st Division guards the government bexes in the descen Art Theater, in the Bolshoi and Maly Theaters, the government hunting estate near Moscow etc.

The strictly specific teak of the 1st Division is, naturally, reflected in its whole structure (see Disgram Se 11), Unlike all other organs of the GUGE (now MGE) the 1st Division has no reministrations going demmards, and it exists only in the central appearatus of the GUGE, as its main object is the region of the city of Moscow.

The 1st Division is closely connected in all its work with the 2nd Special Division, especially with its "L-MA" branch. In the capitals of the Union Republics and regional centers the functions of the 1st Division as to the protection of local party leaders (secretaries of regional and area consistees) go over to the 2nd Special Divisions of the corresponding MaVD administrations in these cities. However, when Stalin and other doscon leaders visit these cities, they are guarded on their way and during their stay there by the 1st Division, though the latter uses the already existing brigades and groups of the 2nd opecial Division of the local MAVD administrations for the exterior observation, regulation of traffic and other purposes.

When Molotow, Tyshinsky and other Soviet "leaders" to abroad they are accompanied by a special reinforced brigade of the MANU men on the staff of the 1st Division. Two of these men must always accompany the leader wherever he goes, without leaving him alone. They may wear uniforms or plain clothes. Besides, long before the "leader" leaves for a certain country, a special brigade of the 1st Division is sent there (usually under the pretence of sending sheed technical sorkers of the Boviet delegation), being entrusted with the task of securing protective measures in local conditions. During the whole stay of the leader shroad, all the serving personnel consists of the 1st Division men. See for instance, during the diplomatic journey of Molotov to Hen-

Prencises in the spring of 1945, he was accompanied by a whole plateon of guards of the 1st Division, and Erugiav himself, the fature Majeter for State Security, was entrusted with the general direction of operations for securing the safety of Museis's leader to 2.

The journey of Stelia shreed is technically impossible. The position of Stelia prevents him from using foreign means of communication, and it would be accessary for the 1st Division to get the exclusive right for quarding everything that has to do with Stelia's route, i.e. the guarding of all roads, reliway stations, ports, streets that lie in the Stelia's way, and the government of no country will agree to such a measure. For the last 50 years Stelia formally crossed the boundaries of the Soviet Union only trice: in Sovember 1945, going to Teheren, and in August 1945, leeving for Fotsdem. But in both cases he practically moved in the regions, occupieds by the Soviet troops, and therefore there was full possibility for the 1st Division to secure his sefety according to the strictly set rules.

But even in such conditions, precentions of quite exceptional nature were taken in Teheran and Potadam. In the first ease up to three thousands MKVD sen on staff of the lat Division and Special Sector of the Central Committee of the All-Union Communist Party as well as a battalion of troops, guarding the Arealia, arrived in Teheran. The conference with Churchill and Mossevelt took place in the premises of the Soviet embessy, and in its course Stalin left the building only twice : for the first time to pay official calls to Seesevelt and Churchill, and for the second -

In Poteden the inhabitants were ousted from all swildings in the streets adjoining the area, where the conference took place, and the whole area was encompassed by the intensified detachments of "MINESH", "L-HH" and 1st Division. All the way from Moscow to Poteden was guarded by the MIVD troops, and Stella arrived at Poteden in a special train, leaving Merlin saids.

The 1st Division eriginated as a special ergan evidently after the attempt upon Leain's life in August 1918, but its ergenisetional set-up was not completed during Leain's life. It is possible to assume that in these times Frotaly, and not remin; paid more attention to the development of this ergan. It was fretaky who took for his private use the train that fermerly belonged to the Russian tear, and that was he was introduced special bedy-quard for himself and other Seviet leaders. This bedygnard was the initial stage of the 1st Division. It is difficult to decide which part was played by Stalin in the arcetion of this special organ in that early period of the Seviet power, but it is characteristic that during the defence of Tearitayn (Stalingred) in autumn 1918, Stalin surrounded himself by a detachment of the-kists and under no circumstances parted with this special body-mard.

Special D vision and, according to some information, it was something like a subdivision of the 2nd Special Division, though its functions were highly specialized. In the other hand, the general structure of the EEVD and the numeration of its main divisions and administrations make us suppose that the 1st openial Division, the 2nd Special Division and the 1st Division constituted formerly a general 1st Division, which was divided later into three divisions in sensection with the complication and specialization of its functions. However, the suthers did not succeed as yet in finding a definite enswer as to the history of organization of the 1st Division.

In any case there is no doubt that before the war the 1st Division closely coordinated its setivity with the 2nd Special Division, and both these divisions were subordinated to the them Deputy People's Consissor of the SKYD, S.K.Kruglev, who was persenally responsible for the safety of Stelia and other Moscow leaders. The same Kruglev appointed the superintendant of the Arestin and checked up all technical workers on the staff of the Control Consistee of the All-Snice Communist Party, and of the Sovmerson of the USSR. After the war Kruglev was appointed the Minister for Indeffer Affairs of the USSR.

Unlike other control engage of the MEVD-MGB, the 1st Bitission is an independent unit, practically subordinated not to the
MEVD People's Counisses (Minister), but to the Special Sector of
the Control Party Counittee, i.e. to the Stalin's secretarist. If
Stalin or any other leader leaves Moscow to go to the province,
all local agencies of the MEVD-MGB are bound to fulfil exactly
and with absolute submission all orders of the MEVD men on the
staff of the 1st Division, accompanying this leader (of course,
only in the questions concerned with the protection of the leader
during his stay in a certain republic or region). The chief of the
1st Division is subordinated both to the chief of the GUGB and
directly to the People's Couniscer of Interrior Affairs (now to
the Ainister of State Security or directly to Levretty Meris).

According to the information callected by the authors of this work, the 1st Division includes the following units :

- a) Operative section;
- b) Inquest section;
- c) Personnel section;
- d) Registration and information section;
- e) Chief of the bodyguard;
- f) Commander of the Kremlin guard with the 1st Commandant's of ice of the Kremlin guard and the guard division subordinated to him;
- Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander of the guard of the guard
- ha Transport section;
- i) the Krealin supply department;
- k) the MTO section (material-technical provision);
- 1) Administrative and maintenance section.

Probably there we's series of subdivisions of this division, not mentioned on our list; on the other hand, it is quite possible that some of the mentioned units have been joined together. The unusual secrety in the organisational attracture of the 1st Division makes very difficult the construction of behomes and the correct denomination of its sections and subunits. This must be the object of further studies.

Probably the field of operations and the character of the antivity of those sections of the 1st Division are as follows :

Operative easting (probably several of them). Plans the work of the special operative groups subordinated to the lat Division. The number of persons, constituting these groups may vary as well as the tests, corried out by them.

For example, Stells strends some theater performance in Mosows. Several operative groups of the 1st Division will be sent to this theater during Stella's stdy there in order to secure his sefety.

If Stelin or semecte of his element cellaborators (the se celled "nomenclature workers") leave Moscow, they are protected during their journey by operative groups, specially formed for this purpose. These groups do not include the personal bodyguard of each "leader", which is directly dubordinated to the commender of the bodyguard.

Besides these essential tanks the personnel of the operative groups makes arrests carrying out the orders of the 1st Division, and searches the quarters of parsons, "elaborated" by this division. Besides all this, the operative groups may carry out other operative tasks which are the concern of the 1st Division.

Inquest section. Is carrying on inquests and inquiries of persons, arrested by the 1st Division. It has to be mentioned here that the whole work of the 1st Division is carried on in close contect with the private secretarist of Stalin and with the Special Sector of the Central Party Committee, more minushem precisely with the se-called "Stalin's battalien". In the period of the "Great Parge", 1936-1936, all arrests of members of the Polithere, the Central Committee and the Setmarkon, who were not lucky enough to please Stalin, were partly carried out through the inquest section of the 1st Division. Therefore, it has to be assumed that the field of operations of the inquest section of the 1st Division is not limited only with eaces of persons, arrested for breaking the rules, set for the protection of the leaders. Practically the investigators of this section execute the functions of

the investigators for especially important and super-secret cases. So, in 1957-38, exceets of all MKYD beases, to begin with Yagoda and Yeshov, were corried out with the assest of the Special Sector of the Contral Party Committee, and the cases went through the impount section of the 1st Division.

for the whole 1st Division and also cheaks up and selects technical workers for the maintenance of the Kremlin, "nomenclature objects" (i.e. government buildings) and private accommodation of all pursons under protection of the 1st Division.

The personnel section of the 1st Division is connected in its work with the Fersonnel Administration of the MAYD USER but is not bound to carry out all its eriders. However, the instructions of Stelin's manuscaparity accretariet as tof the selection, thecking-up and distribution of the personnel are obligatory for the personnel section of the 1st Division. It is even possible to say, that the Special Sector, i.e. Stelin's private secretarist, if we want to be more precise, is directing the work of the whole ist Division through its personnel section.

haristration and Information bestion, hegisaters all travels of the persons who have to be guarded and accordingly gives instructions to the operative section and to the commandants, registers all persons, visiting the Kremin, who are not in the resessation of personent passes, and carries on all other forms and minds of registration, necessary for the current work of the lat bivision. Is personently consected in its work with the 2nd sector of the 1st Special Division (the recording of anti-boviet elements) from which it gets all the necessary information, it is possible to assume that formerly this section was a part of the 1st special Division. The registration section is also directly connected. With Stalin's private secretariet, as well as with the secretaries.

Assording to the data that have not been verified, it publicates a secret information bulletin for the 1st Livinion. The memoral Office of the 1st Divinion is attached to this section.

The Commander of the bedraterd. Is subordinated directly to the Chief of the 1st Division (and through him to the Special Sectage of the Control Committee) and is conserned with granding Stella and other persons under the protection of the 1st Division. The corresponding men of the bodyguard of the persons, mentioned above, are subordinated to him.

A special brigade of bedyguards, consisting emplusively of the MKVD-men on the staff of the 1st Division, is attached to each "leader". Two of his bodyguards have always to accompany the "leader" wherever he is and wherever he goes. These men are changed every eight hours. Thus, the brigade of the bodyguards normally consists of a guards and one commander. The "leader" larves moscow, the brigade of the bodyguards is reinforced by the operative group, sesides, the country-houses where the "leaders" reside, have their internal and external guard.

Exemin and, besides that, country-houses, situated some 25-57 miles from Mosmow along the Moshaisk road, on the banks of the river Moskva. All the eres around these government/... villas with the redius of 5-10 kilometers has been proclaimed "forbidden some", and is guarded by a special division of MIVL troops. Every remon who enters this forbidden some without a special pass, has to be arrested without delay, and his identity has to be ascertained through the special recording of the MAYD.

The Commender of the Frentin Guards. Is concerned with the whole internal and external guard of the Arenlin and is subording-ted to the Chief of the 1st Division (and through him - to the Special Sector of the Contral Committee). The commander of the Erenlin guards has under him :

- s) the 1st commandant's office of the Arenlin guard;
- b) the division of the Eremlia guards a division of the Chekist troops corps d'elite of the EKYD, armed and menned accerding to special provisions. This division is entrusted with the service of the internal and external guarding of the Eremlia, carried out together with the students of the special military school, bearing the same of the Supreme beviet of the Usah and situated within the Eremlia walls.

By the way, the commander of the Kremlin guards has not we be confused with the Kremlin superintendent. The latter carries on the administrative and supply dupies as to the inner requisations in the Kremlin, receives foreigners of high stending, plans and organises different receptions at Stalin's, Melotov's and other "leaders", is responsible for the maintanence of order during the sessions of the Supreme Soviet in the Big Kremlin Palece etc.

The Kremlin is undoubtedly the most carefully guarded object of the whole world, though an unitiated person will hardly notice it. The visitors can enter the Kremlin mainly through the gates of the Spansky Tower, opening on the Red Square. All other entrances to the Kremlin are closed for the visitors, and they may be used only by persons, living in the Kremlin and having a personate pass for entering it. The Spansky gate is open in the day time, and the way is apparently barred only by two sentries in the uniforms of the Supreme Soviet military school, but it is, probably, much more difficult to pass through this open gate than to get to the American depet where stom bombs are stored.

Foreign diplomats of high standing and foreign guests of the Soviet government, having been invited to visit the Aremlin, pass the Spassky gate shoot without any impediments, and they cannot even imagine what it means for an ordinary Soviet citizen to ge through the whole procedure for getting a pass to the Aremlin. Such a pass can be got only in the result of a call made by some of the high party and government institutions located there, or according to a personal invitation of one of the leaders. The usual order of issuing a pass is as follows:

The person, calling that or another visitor, sends to the commander of the Kremlin guards a request of the established type, indicating name, patronymia, surname of the visitor, his address, place of work and the reason of his being called to the Aremlin. The commander sends the copy of this request through the registrative section of the lat Division to the special recording sector of the lat Special Division of the GUGB. If this person is a non-resident of Moscow, a signered enquiry about him is being sent

to the 1st Special Division of the regional edministration of the MEVD that is conserved with his place of residence or week. If such a person was recorded with the registration files of the Add (anti-Soviet elements), the pass will not be issued to him, but neither he, nor the person who submitted the request for seeing him will be informed about the reasons of the demial.

If the ensure of the 1st Special Division is a favourable one, the request is being forwarded to the office of the Arealia superintendent, that summons this person to visit the Arenlin on a certain day and at a certain time. In such cases a car on duty with the transport section of the 1st Division is being seat to bring the man to the Spassky Tower. By this time a pass has already been a made out, in four copies and usually of different colors, is the peas office. All these four cepies are handed to the visitor and he is teld, politely but firmly, to go in a certain direction without stopping enywhere or staring at anything, some two hundred meters away the visitor is met by a gaurdsman who checks up his passes, leaves one of them with him and directs the visitor to the next guardesen with the same instructions. The last guardesen on duty accompanies him to the door of the room where he has been called. There he is met by the private secretary of the person calling him, who checks up his documents and instructs the visitor to give a short account of his business, not detaining the chief with unnecessary talk. As some as the "gudience" is closed, the visitor is secompanied exactly in the same way to the exit from the Arealia.

If a Polithuro member works outside the Kremlin walls, the same procedure is introduced in the institution where he is the boss. So, for instance, when less M.Keganovich was the reopie's Commissar for heil days (1939-1942), the pass to the building of the People's Commissarist was issued by the Transport administration of the MKVD, but a special official of the 1st Division issue the passes to the flat where the effice of Kaganovich was located. In this case the visitor also received four passes, the last of which he handed to the official of the 1st Division on dutypn the

Merken's flat, who showed him the necessary door and instructed him to pess quickly without stopping and looking at the beards on other doors. Two guards in the MEND uniform, armed with guas were on duty at the door of Keganevich's reception-room.

Ordshenikidse, the only one from all members of the Polithure, who flatly refused to have special guards, and made the access to him comparatively simple. Ordshenikidse protested against the acting up of the bodyguard in such a estegorical way, that the let Division was obliged to protect him secretly, is a way, met noticeable to Ordshonikidse himself.

Commander of the Guard of Chicage is conserved with guarding of the government objects, mentioned above, with the exception of the Kremlin. He has in his subordination the seconds commandent's office (vtores macademisms komendature) that has in its disposal the following units of the MKVD guard troops:

- s) Special division EUD (regulireva ulichnoge dvisheniya) regulation of traffic). This division consists of approximately three thousand HKVD men, that have been specially trained. The division owes its name to the fact, that a considerable part of its personnel wears the militia uniforms with the overaleeve sign "MRS". This division guards the road from the Kremlin to the country residences of Stalin and other persons on the "mammaclature list". Their permenent duties include also the regulation of the traffic and the guarding of all streets between the Kremlin and the buildings occupied by the Central Party Counittee, the Central Counittee of the Komsonol, the Council of the People's Commissors of the USSR and other objects under protection of the 1st Division. If Stalin or other numbers of the Politbure visit some plants or constructions in Messew, the guarding of all streets included in the route is immediately pessed from the militia to the MSD division.
- b) A special division of might guards is used for guarding the governmental high reed in Season at might. The peats meaned by these guards intensify the protection of this read, already secured by other sub-units. The staff of this division is situated in one of the houses in the Belshoy Guardikevaky late.

e) the description of the MAND - mented and street econting to the same standards as the grand division of the Kremlin, in generaling the territory, where persons under protection of the 1st Division reside.

Desides this, a special group of water militie, guarting the part of the river Moskva where it flows through the territory reserved for the residence of the Government members, is obviously subordinated to the 2nd commendant's office.

Besides the two Kommandature's (commandant's offices), meationed above, there are other Kommandantures, concerned with the guarding of other objects under protection of the 1st Division. The authors had no possibility of clearing up the functions and tasks of all these kommandantures of the 1st Division, but it is known that the rrd Kommandanture is concerned with the enti-eireraft defence of Moscow.

The protection of Stalin and other high perty officials dering their daily journey from the freelin to the "governmental area" is carried on with utmost care, and even at the time of peace surpasses by far enything that was permitted, for example, by Mitler during the years of wer.

Ascording to the general plan of reconstruction of Moseow all streets, included into the deily route of Stalin and his collaborators, sequired unusual breadth of 40 and even 60 meters, that is practically absolutely unnecessary. The ears of "leaders" run always along the very middle of these streets most practically excludes every possibility of an attempt. The inhabitants of the houses along this route are subjected to a special sheek-up of the let Division, and all families that sweks a suspicion in any say are immediately outself like Other regions of Moseow.

On the Mosheick highrest all the territory up to the government villag and Santher-chard, for some 80 miles from Moscow, is divided into several kommendantures, with an all-day-round duty in the area of each kommendanture. Before the wer these kommendantures were manned employees of the 1st Division, and this system has probably been propertyed after the war.

Venally those non were the militia uniforms without any distinguishing features of their special destination. Each section of the real was secured with signal posts and telephones. Abon Stalin left the Kremlin or the gates of his villa, the "elem" signal was given to all posts.

As soon as the certage of Stella or of some other leader has left the portion of one homendenture. the next one is notifled by a special signal about the approach of ears in order to step any eross-movement. Any person, riding or walking along the highroad at this mement and stopping for any reason (for instance, to pump the tire of a car or a bicycle, etc.) has to present his personal documents for a check-up, and if snything seems suspicious he is arrested and questioned in the imprest section of the 1st Division. One former prisoner of the Ukhta-Peshora "corrective lebor camp" told the suthers of this work that one of his fellewinnates was a collective farmer from the environs of Moseew, who was contenced in 1956 for an attempt upon Stalin's life. This collective farmer came to Moscow on some business. My the evening he had a drop too! much, and being drunk, fell down to sleep ponembers near the Moshaisk highrest. He woke in the MIVD. During the search a "weapon" was found on him - a kitchen knife of the kind used in the country. Three days later this collective farmer was brought to the Butyrica prisen, and the "troiks" of the Moscow regional HIVD administration sentenced him to five years of deportetion, according to the clause 56, per.8 - terrorism. Taking into consideration such cases one must not be astoniahed at the fact, that Moseow citizens try to turn into the side etreets as seen as they hear the Melbins of the approaching government cars.

Stalin's cortige for his journeys in Moscow and clong the Monhaick highrest usually consists of 3-4 cars with the "MIS-7" trade-mark. These cars are home-made, gracured, their greenish glasses are bullet-proof. A representative of the 1st Division must be always present at their reception from the plant.

The first cer in the Stelin's cortage has the task of knocking down all persons creasing the road before the cortage as well as any ear that might be a danger to the governmental cars. Besides the driver, men of the 1st Division are in the first car, keeping an attentive eye on all persons and tars on atalia's route. Stalin himself is usually in the second or in the third car, which periodically change their place in the cortege. Stalin's car could get to the head of the column only before the very entrance to the Kremlin or directly at the gate of Stalin's villa. The drivers of all governmental cars were without any exception on the staff of the 18t Division as workers of its transport section

The commandant of the guard of objects is also concerned with guarding the government hunting estates. The so called "preserve" at the station los of the Morthern railway by Moscow, was one of such estates. Alk were among other animals of this estate, though ardinary eitisens of the Soviet Union were prohibited to hunt them.

Transport section. Is concerned with all governmental means of transportation.

Shile travelling over the boviet Union, btall and other Folithuro members use their private railway cars. Before the war the Soviet leaders almost never used the aitplanes, finding this kind of transport too risky for their precious selves. According to some information, a special, absolutely secret order was issued by Stalin before the war, formally producting to the "nomenclature workers" to use planes without exceptionally serious reasons and without his own approval of every flight. May be, the "great leader" feared that someone of his collaborators might flee abroad? It has far as it is known, bt-lin himself flew only once - from Moscos to Teberen, in 1945.

The former chief of the government train Aislovousk-Sochi informed the authors about the following details of protecting Stelin and other "leaders" during their railesy travels.

Every member of the Polithuro has its own private railway car that may be used only by himself and by his family members. As to their outward appearance these cars differed in no way from the usual pessenger's cars, but they were exceedingly lumurious inside. So, for instance, managony was used for the

interior decoration and farmiture of Stalin's ear, Karelian birch was used for the same purposes in Esganovich's car etc. The cars were constructed in such a way that the jerks at the joints of rails were not felt inside the ear. For this aim a thick layer of lead, two layers of rough felt and one of cark were put under the wooden planking of the floor which was covered in its turn with a layer of felt, linoleum and a magnificant carpet. Such a personal car was used only for 20-50 days in the year, but nevertheless every year there were obligatory capital repairs, the costs of which amounted to hundreds of thousands of roubles for only one car.

The Soviet buresucrats of a lower rank travelled generally in sleeping-cars (the so-called "Mitropa" cars) of the usual fast trains; several fast trains were accommodating them: the "Sed Arrow" express plying between Moscow and Leningred, "IAIX-Express So 1" - Moscow-Manchuria etc. The governmental train Kislovodsh-Sochi, plying between the groups of spas, was of the same kind.

their personal car was coupled in the end of the train, and it was followed by exactly the same "covering" car with an MiVD detectment. Such an order existed only for the governmental train Kislovodsk-Sochi; if Stalin or his collessiques were travelling in other directions, a special train was put together for each of them including the personal car of the "leader". Sefore such person got into the train, the chief of the train had been summoned to the EKVD headquarters of this railroad and signed a special premise of avoiding any leakage about the person of the traveller and his guards.

when the train leaves the station, the chief of the train and the chief of the railrest MKVD get into the locanotive and stay there until the train reaches its place of destination.

A day or two before the exrival of Stelin, a special official of the 1st Division comes to every reilroad edministration to work out with the chief of the railroad SEVD measures securing the safety of the "leader". Stelin is accompanied only by a small

group of his bodyguard and efficials of the 1st Division, coming from Hoscow. All the rest of the ghards are provided by the chief of the railroad HKVD. The men of the HKVD teem always wear plain clothes, and are distributed in a more or less proportional way to stand in the tembours of the whole train, or two mixed up with other passengers of the train. Home wan always take a seet in the dining-car to listen the conversations of the passengers. The chief of the railroad HKVD, travelling in the locametive, is considered to be the chief of the local guards, but besides him, a pagementative of the 1st Division, is travelling in Stalin's car. Mefore the train leaves the station, the chief of the train is introduced to him, and the orders of this official of the 1st Division are obligatory both for the chief of the train and the chief of the railroad HKVD.

Besides those three persons mobody else has the right to know who travels in the special car, soupled in the end of the train. But usually the personnel of the train and the station mesters guess the rank of the traveller by the character of the protective measures. Buch a train stops only at central stations to take water, when the train has to pass, all arrival and departure railway points are tightly closed with spikes at all stations. A pointsman stands together with an MAYD agent-representative of this station at each railway point. The guards wearing MAYD uniforms, operative agents-representatives of the Transport Section of the railroad MAYD, the railway militie stand along the tranches, in tunnels and along the road-bed.

In such a way that the pursuance personal car of stalin or of any other member of the Polithuro would be exactly epposite the operative post of the HEVD at this station. Immediately after the arrival of the train the HEVD guards in plain slothes range theseselves in lines on both sides of the car, and a group of guards fills in the adjoining part of the pletform and in different ways prevents the public to go sheed, though no formal order is given to the people to stop. At first two official of the lat

1 - 14 4 -

Division alight from the ear, then they are followed by Stelin and a couple of MEVD men. All this group peaces quickly the MEVD post and gots into some care, looking exactly the some and waiting for Stelia. Usually the "Buick" care are waiting for Stelia at the Sochi station. During all this coresony even the chief of the train commot approach the Stelia's car. All these measures of procession are taken in spite of the fast that only the members of the government, the high ranking party officials and some distinguished generals enjoy the right to travel in this governmental train.

in case of any breakage or direpair in Stalin's car, the master may enter it only accompanied by the chief of the railroad MEYD, and his box with tools is previously inspected with greatest care. A "forbidden some" with a redius of more than 5 kilometers has been established around the governmental villes between bothi and Matsests. But the fear of the MEVD is so intense, that people don't even try to approach this some. When holotow, Kaganovich, Voroshilov, Andreyev, Chdenov and other lecture were travelling. the same precaution measures were taken. The only exception was made by the member of Politbure and People's Commisser for Heavy Industry, Sergo Ordshenikicze (died in 1957) was liked to walk slong the platform emong the public that hailed him. buch a behaviour of the "leader" drove to dispair the sen of the 1st bivision who had to guard him. The second-best "leaders" travelled in general cars of this governmental train, while Sudennly spent most of his time in the dining-ear, where he took a lot of drinks of different kinds.

Stalin and other Polithure members did not take their food from the diming-ear during their travels, so each of them had. a kitchen in his personal ear, where food for him and the group of persons, accompanying him, was prepared. The normal car of this train had eight two-seated compartments, with a bath-room for each two compartments. Stalin's car commissed of a mitchen, a study, secretary's office, two bed-rooms, a bath-room, a drawing-room and a reserve compartment. All of this was furnished with highest possible comfort shd lummry that beet by far the interior decora-

tion of the former there train. It is characteristic that the train of the surdered tear Mikolai the Second was left on the side-track of Detakoye Sele (formerly flarekeye Sele) near Lenia-grad and its cars could not be used for this governmental train-mot saying enything about using them for Stelia's personal needs,—as they were found to be "unsufficiently comfortable".

The yearly meintenence of only this governmental train gave about a million roubles of dead loss, which was covered out of the special fund of the Somarkon of the USEk. Capital repairs of this train were made every year, when absolutely all the equipment of the cars was changed, while all other passenger trains in the USSE are subjected to capital repairs once in air years. And what are the costs for maintaining all personal ears? There are more than a thousand of them in the USSR for the use of different Soviet and Party bureaucrats, though, of course, they are not furnished with such a luxury, as Stelia's cer. It is sufficient to mention that before the war personal cars were assigned, besides the Krealin eristocreey, to all the secretaries of the regional party committees, all chiefs of the regional MAYD edministrations, all the commanders of the military districts, all chiefs of the railways, all chiefs of the railwayed HEVDis etc., etc. That is how the leaders of the first socialistic state in world" arrange their personal life !

If Stelin's train is stepped on its way even for five minutes, all the personnel guilty of this "erine" is subjected to immediate arrest. Such a case occured once in 1934 on the way from liostev to Sochi. A train of tanh-care with benaine was running easually sheed of Stelin's train, and for some reasons or others it could not be put on the side track. As a result of this, the governmental train was stopped before the semaphore of an intermediate station for three minutes. This happened at night, and Stelin did not even notice it, but the men on duty at the stetion the station-meater and even the chief of the railroad were igno-distely arrested.

All, described above, gives some ideas of the functions and tasks of the transport section of the lat Division.

100

The Frenis Supely Department. Gentrels all feet products received for the use in the Krewlin and in governmental country-houses. Is subordinated to the Frenish superintendent and to the chief of the 1st Division.

The department consists of senitary section, laboratory and transport section. The laboratory is concerned with the analysis of all food stuffs coming to the Eruslin, while the transport section of the Eruslin supply department not only delivers these fees products to the Eruslin, but also takes care that they may not be poisoned on the way.

to the Kremlin from the governmental state farm near moncos, it is eccompanied without fail by an efficial of the transport section of the supply department of the 1st Division.

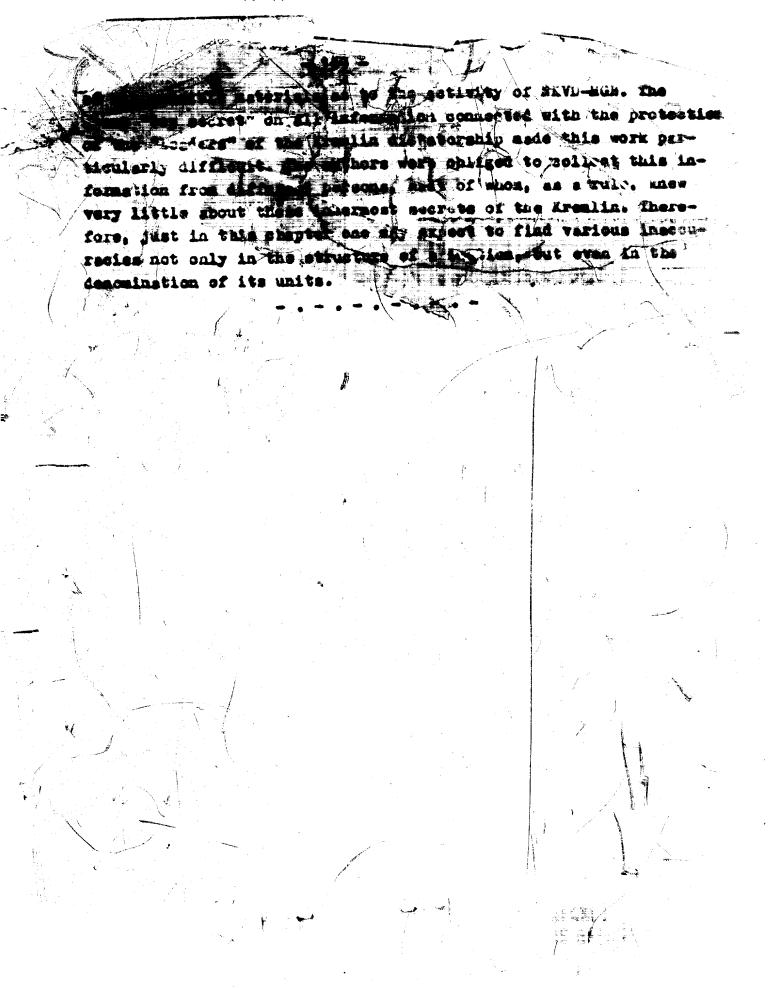
The ATO section (meterial-technical provision) is concerned with covering the meterial and technical meeds of the list Division, from arms, military and civil clothing and up to fuel for the auto-transport section.

Administrative and Maintenance section. Is concerned with the problems of supplying the officials of the 1st Division, of providing them with lodgings, permits for a place in a rest-home and fulfils hundreds of other administrative and maintenance functions, connected with the well-being of the employees of the lat Division.

x x I

Such are tests, structure and field of operations of the 1st bivision of the MEVA USER, Let us call once more to our mind his that the 1st Division exists only is moscow, while the protection of provincial "leaders" of the Communist party and Soviet sovernment is carried on by the 2nd Special Divisions of the corresponding territorial, administrations of the MEVA-Wid.

This chapter could not be so complete and exact as it might be desirable, but it is possible to give a complete survey of the activity of the 1st Division only after a long and minute collection



Declassified in Part - Sanitized Copy Approved for Release 2012/10/04 : CIA-RDP80-00926A003100010005-3

50X1-HUM



Declassified in Part - Sanitized Copy Approved for Release 2012/10/04 : CIA-RDP80-00926A003100010005-3

PORENORD

Every dictatorial or, as it is now commonly called, totalitarian regime keeps itself in power mainly by seems of a carefully conceived system of terror directed against the subjects of this regime. The more radical and absolute the character of the dictatorship, the more developed are its organs of terror and appression.

the 20th Century gave birth to a new form of dictatorships the dictatorship of a party, subordinating to itself the governmental apparatus and forcibly directing the whole life of the cauntry and even the private life of its citizens. Two countries presented a picture of this dictatorship of a party in its most radical and partected forms dational-Socialist Germany and the Communistic Soviet Union. At present we do not need to point out the similarimity of these two dictatorships or even of their apparent mutual nostile ideologies. Both of these dictatorships late down, as the basis of their foreign and domestic policies, the goal of world domination and both have made merciless terror the chief weapon of their policy.

permitted world public opinion to become acquainted with all the repulsive cerails of the activities of the westape, wa, and other organs of ritherite terror. But the activities of the organs of Doviet terror have remained for long years hisden from the world public épinion. Only from time to time has the testimony of individual victims of this terror appeared in the foreign press and attracted some reaction even if only of a weak mature. The problem of boviet terror was considered as a mussian domestic affair, but now when an ever increasing number of mations fear that Communicate will lay on them its deadly pass and when some actions are already becoming acquainted with the NKVD (4GB) in practice, this problem has begun to attract a special attention.

Rut even now the system of Soviet terror and suppression is known, rather, according to the testimony of individual victims of the Stalinistic terror. The world is becoming sequeinted gradually with the results of the activities of the MAVD (MUS), but not with the inner mechanism of this mest grinder, which exterminates people according to the principles "If he is not one of us - then he is against us2.

unly the kussian people can disclose theaderails of the structure and methods of work of the Soviet terror system, for they themselves have been subjected to the activities of that institutions
for 50 years. These people are not deceived by the arealins lying
propagands about the construction of a free and Semocratic socialist
society in the Soviet Union nor are they misled by the illusions
of those who believe that an agreement with stalin is possible concerning peace and co-operation.

Only the Russian people may acquaint the other peoples of the world with all the details of the distastful aspects of Communism and only they can perform this work with sufficient knowledge of the metter. This is their soral cuty to the suffering nussian people and to all of humanity. But this is, at the same time, their practical contribution to the general struggle for national independence and personal freedom. The deciding moment for the clash between the forces of freedom and forces of tyranny is approaching. In order to helt the attack of Communism and then to destroy this danger it is necessary first of ell to know its main weaponstactics and technique of its undermining work outside the soviet sphere, and methods of terror and suppression inside that sphere. It is necessary to know the most important instruments of the Communist dictatorships its organs of "State Secuparty and of the stalia rity".

The present work is an attempt to analyze the inner structure and methods of work of the Soviet organs of state security. By means of laborious collection of various data, by means of questioning of many former officials of these organs, and from the personal recollections of the authors an attempt has been made to create a picture of the Soviet organs of state security as they existed

on the eve of the world war II. As a matter of fact, in many cases, the authors could not be quite certain of their data, not to speak of the exectness of details. We have to point out that the work was written not mainly from documents but from the testimony of individuals. Some of them, from the number of former MAVI agents, could have intentionally distorted the picture in order to misinform the reeder, but this could mainly be in the details.

The authors set for t. emselves the aim of giving a general picture of the organs of the NKVD in a certain limited period of its development; between the end of the "Great Purge" period and the start of the world har II - that is between 1955 and 1941. In this period all organs of boviet terrorism were united in one office - Reople's Commissariat for Internal Affairs of the Usen (MKVD). After the war these organs were split between two ministries - ministry for State Decurity (MGB) and the Ministry for Internal Affairs (MVD).

the authors consider that one can inderstand correctly the structure and methods of work of these two ministries only if he knows, even in general outlines, the basic special structure and methods of work of their predecessor - the mayb. To show the mayb and to analyze its methods of work - is the sim of this book.

The present work consists of two parts : the text and the "achematic diagrass".

The Authors

CHAPTER I

THE MEANING AND ROLL OF THE SKYD IS THE SOVIET SYSTEM

1. The Meaning of the MKVD

The Peole's Commisseriat for Internal Affairs, divided after the war into two ministries, is deservedly called one of the main supports of the Soviet Communist dictatorship in Eussia. The Seviet dictatorship has two main weapons to dominate the people: propagande and terror. The skillful and aggressive propagands utiliges within the USSk misinformation of the surrounding world, and outside the USSR misinformation of Soviet reslity, and in that way gives the Arealin oligarchy rather wide support among the messes of people, - especially in the west. But the MAYD is the wost importent weapon to suppress and dominate the people inside the boviet Union. For this purpose the NAVD concentrates in its names almost unlimited means of control, provocation, and terror. One may say that if the Usok Itself is merely the weapon which communists are using to conquer the world, then the MAVL is the mesas of securing the reliability and compliance of that weapon (UTLa) in the slready begun struggle for world domination.

Abroad, the MKVL is ordinarily called the Soviet secret rolice. This definition is incorrect in substance. It is incorrect because it does not reflect either the true character or the sphere of action of this most important organ of the solshevist dictatorship. Any police, whether open or secret, is normally an agency of state power. Its mission is to protect the interests of the state, its political security in the first instance, even the Gestapo, guarding Hitler's dictatorship, was a state police, and not a personal inquisition of Hitler Misself. In the Work the situation in principle and practice is otherwise, here are the basic characteristics of this institution:

-,2,-

1. The HKVD is an agency not of fatate, but of party power. Under this party power one must understand not the Communist Party as a whole, but only its oligarchical and absolute leadership - the Politbure of the Control Commistee of the Party, and the leaders of the Party control and local apparatus which help the Politbute to rule the country: in all, perhaps, some 250-300 persons.

The mission of the state, but of this handful of usurpers, who are making bussis their chief weapon in the struggle for the seizure of power over the entire world. The HKVD guards the security not of the state as a whole, - that is, of the country, the people, and authority, - but solely and alone the security of the ruling group of persons, which is commonly known under its abstract name—the Soviet Power. This power finds itself in personnent conflict with the majority of the people from the very first days of its birth, as a result of the antidemocratic trescherous coup d'etat of October, 1917. Its policies inside and outside the country are directed against the natural, basic interests of the sussian people and the country.

Those who are inclined to see in this definition some kind of "propagande", are advised to think over the question once more when they acquaint themselves with the fact that the "Anti-Soviet blements" files of the MKVD and the system of "GULAG" (Concentration Camps Administration of the MKVD), together embrace nearly all the adult population of the ULAR, we can mention, to the same effect, the activities of the iconomic Administration of the MKVD in preventing the "asbotage" and "diversionist acts", which testify to the compulsory character of the Soviet "building of socialism in one country".

Thus, the first poculiarity of the MAVD is that this type of secret police serves only the interests of the ruling chiefs of the party in power, against the interests of the state which this group rules, contrary to the will of the people which it exploits.

2. The MEVD is an organization completely independent of the government system in the USSR, and, partially, of the Party itself. More than that, thanks to their exclusively conspiratorial character, the organization and activities of the MEVD are known in the country only in the most general terms, and them enly, for example, after some facts concerning executions and arrests look out.

It would be wrong to think that the Seviet Government - The Council of Ministers - at any time would discuss the work of the MKVD or would order it to do or not to do something. It is sufficient to say that the Minister of Finance of the USAK, who prepares the state budget, and later supervises its fulfilment, does not know the structure, nor the personnel, nor the utilisation of expenses of the NKVD. To the Financial Section of the Gosplan and to the State Budget sector of the Planning Administration of the Ministry of Finance of the USAR is presented only the total sum which the NKVD needs. There is no discussion or verification and even this sum does not reveal all the expenditures of the NKVD, because a certain part of these expenditures is included in a special secret fund of the Kremlin.

Not only the ordinary person, but the most high ranking efficials in the USSE know only one thing about the MKVD: that it is better not to know enything. If this work were to fall into the hands of a Soviet reader, it would be accepted as a revelation. Here is a fact established by one of the authors: Soviet Foreign Minister Maxim Litvinov did not know what department of the MKVD was located in a building which he new every day from the window of his office in Djershinsky Street, in Moseow (former imbjanks Street). One may excuse him, howevers not every official of the MKVD itself is informed of that which is outside the frame of his immediate competence. And this fact, by the way, has made extremely difficult the writing of this work, based, as was said in the Fereserd, on the evidence of former Chekists.

This insulation of the HIVD in the Seviet system of the party - we would say even its independence - is the second outstanding characteristic of the Seviet Secret Police.

5. It would be pessible to say, by analogy, that the NEVD is a state within a state. But the insulation of the NEVD within the Soviet state bears a very specific character. It is impossible to understand this if one does not take into account its third peculiarity: the simultaneously insulated and dominating position of the Soviet Secret Police.

This expresses itself in the fact that if the MKVD is made a complete secret from other governmental and even party organs (with/exception of the very highest - understood to be the Politburo and its apparatus), these organs are as well known to the MKVD as the palm of your hand; at least they should be I the tentacles of the MKVD penetrate all reaches of governmental and party life in the USSR, beginning with the Council of ministers and ending in the basic party group of some kolkhoz, lost in the Siberian forests. It goes without saying that there are no secrets from the MKVD in the private lives of people of the USSR; it is not said in jest that each Soviet citizen has two shadows - one of his own and the other of the MKVL.

It is only logical to emphasize that in the governmental and party system of the USAK special conditions are created in order to favor the spy activities of the MAYD. We may characterize the Soviet system as one in which there occurs a fusion of the state and party, the leadership of which formally is in the hands of the state, but actually in the party. But in this amalgamation there is still one more element, unseen but always present - the MAYD. Its organs are infiltrated into governmental and party organizations, unknown to the latter, is order to fully utilize their approximations to check every step of the state and party officials, up to: the highest levels of the Soviet bureaucratic machine. The most wide spread eace of this fusion, or better to say, permeation, of the MAYD in any Seviet governmental institution present the "Special Offices" or "Special Branches" which exist is every factory, in every institution or governmental office.

According to its official regulations (the so called "Stetus of the MKVD of the USSR), the MKVD cannot control or, putting it simply, has no right to apy against the Solshavik Party. Meverthe-less we see that one of the basic links of the MKVD chain, binding the shole country, is the SFO - Decret Political Section or Administration. Its mission is the rooting out of section within the party, the liquidation of all and any deviationists, beginning with old time Trotskiytes and ending sith the currently modish originators of cringing before the decadent heat. The period of the "Great Purge", 1934-1939, shows us that the MKVD can be used against the Party Just as well as it is used daily and hourly against the people and country.

4. nowever, the cell same period of mass extensional eny andell, when the akkil seized the people, - in the words of Stalin himself, - only for the fact that "they walked on the same street with Protextiytes" showed that sometimes the raity can be used egainst the Akki. We speak of reprisels against legods and all his comports, totaling, it is easy, up to 3, totaline end of the following reprisel against his executioner, lezhow.

promethis it follows that the nature not the all-powerful mester of the situation in the took. Spying seeinst the state power and even seeinst the party, enjoying a greater concentration them as of power than the state and party apparatus (in their lower and middle levels), the Mayb finds itself under the thurse of the individual and holds in his hand full power, under the thumb of stalin, for this simple takin uses his own private apparatus,—so called "Stalin's pecretarist",—which operates through the top secret special channels of the Kremlin, here manifests itself the famous Soviet system of cross-check insurance, that is a system of a double or even triple control of one and the same person, organization, or section.

Therefore, the fourth peculiarity of the MaVL is that this organ, which erose because the Communists trust no one and under no condition? does not enjoy itself the full confidence of the dictator and his accomplises.

5. Puritier, it must be remembered that the MKVD is a kind of secret police which has its own armed forces, independent from the regular army of the USSA.

The mission of the HKYD armed forces is to support Stelin's power within the country against internal enemies, i.e. the people, while the ermy is designated for defence of his power only against foreign enemies. The borgder, internal, and escort troops of the NEVD are better armed than units of the regular army; their flighting ability is much greater than that of regular troops located within the country in time of peace. And this is not a coincidence. Stella still remembers the effair of warshal Tunechevsky. And, in addition to this there are special detachments of the NKVD inside the army. se shall recall only two titles: the "SaunBH", with its crew of executioners, and the "Straigle Line Letzchments", which liquidated deserters and atragglers from the field of battle. nowever, the protection of Stelin, bimself, is not in the hands of NKVD troops, assigned only for the external guard around the Arealin, but is performed by two special units: a) by the so-called "School of the Supreme Soviet", and b) by the First Section of the NKVD - both of which are directly subordinated to the "Stalin's Secreteriat" and form a permanent garrison of the Arealin.

The NEVL spies against the army, and against the NEVL, spies Stalin, himself. Such is the system. The existence of two armies in one country is the fifth peculiarity of the NEVL, which distinguishes if from the secret police of any other, more normal regime.

6. The history of our times shows that even in the most undemocratic countries of South America or Central Europe the secret police, at least formally, are not invested with judicial powers and the courts are separated from the police. The sixth peculiarity of the SKVD is that it has its own court system independent from the regular court system of the USSR, but completely subordinated to directives from the highest Communist Party organs.

The major characteristic of the MKVD court system is that the functions of arrest, prosecution, and adjudication are very often in the hands of one and the same official. The MKVD can errest and try by means of its secret "court" any citizen of the USSR. There do exist certain regulations, restricting to some extent the arbitrary actions of the NEVD, but only with respect to those party officials employed in duties of party administration. The entire field of political crime, which is more than wide in the USSR, remains the sphere of the NEVD, and it operates this aphere as it wishes with no control or accounting what so ever, except to the dictator in the Krealin.

however, the more important political cases remain in the names of the NAVE only during the preliminary investigation, after which they are decided by the high party leadership. These decisions are then carried out by the NEVE, just as similar decisions and directives are carried out by the regular court system of the Usok.

7. It is necessary to mention here still one more peculiarity of the days, although since the time of the Gestapo this ceased to be its monopoly. We have in mind that the Mays operates all perfiel institutions. Included in this term of penal institutions are those prisons which hold so many immates that they are organized as camps. We speak here about the system called Gillag (Administration of Camps) which operates all numerous concentration and labor camps with their many millions of immates. Whit these prisoners find themselves in an uncontrolled power of the Mays which prescribes the conditions of their confinement, which can change and previous court decision by means of special camp "courts", which operates special apy rings inside the camps just as it does in the "free" Soviet society, etc.

to note that in its usage of forced labor the MAVL is semi-officially recognised as an organisation taking part in the "planned construction of the socialistic economy of the USCA". The same would of the MEVD carries out a number of most important governmental industrial projects - it digs canals, brings into production coal mines and oil wells in the Arctic, cuts timber for export etc., thereby providing the Soviet Union and the world Communist movement with dollars and gold.

As a result, the seventh and not unimportant peculiarity of the NKVD is its function as a slave owner and coloniser of arctic regions.

8. Jur expose would not be complete, more than that, sould be incorrect if still one more very important aspect of the MAVID were not treated for - its significance to the outer world. If we have to say that the Ubbh is nothing other than a case for the appreading of communistic world revolution, then it would be clear that the MAVID must play its own great role in these undertaking. Then the reader acquaints cimself with the functions of the foreign administration of the MAVID, then it would not be difficult to come to the realization that the AAVID may be termed not so much a bovict as an international communistic secret police. This side of the aAVID is now petter about.

Canadian storic sty case, that the anylo occupies latself only with ordinary captonage for military and economic purposes, as is the case in other countries, the persecution of sussian emigrants, the surfaces of anti-coviet activists - such as frotzal, and foreign states and as the French president connected to secretary of the Central Committee of the Spanish Communist rarry, once plant the Chinese warshall fin muing prans, the poviet anassador in mexico, konstantin Omenski, etc., - all these being examples of the daylo activities working in behalf of the international Communist movement.

One may raise an objection that this field of activity does not present the monopoly of the MKVD and that political murders have been frequently practiced by the secret police of other countries, mentioning as an obvious example the destapo activities in Mazi Germany. We do not intend to deny this fact, but the new and principally distinguishing factor in the case of the MAVD is its systematic methods, not just isolated cases. We may say it is a planned system, well thought out, organized, and executed with merciless consequence.

Along with its terroristic and black-mailing functions against anti-Soviet organisations outside the USAR, the NEVE plays still another important role for the Kremlin. This is to apy upon Soviet personnel in other countries - such as diplomats, trade representatives, and even Soviet military espionage agents. Included also within its competence are the leaders of the international Communist movement. Just as within the USAR, the MKVD thereby provides for a complete system of double and triple control.

This international function of the NavL, although the last on our list of peculiarities, is, never the less, in its significance one of the most important characteristics of the Kremlin's secret police.

2. The methods of the MKVD

e turn now to the main features which characterize the methods of the may, features which in many respects differ from those habitually used by ordinary secret police. It is still possible to say this even though the world now knows the methods used by the destapo.

"Cheka", - forerunner of the present day make (mod), - it was clearby evident that the Soviet secret police are to be and became a
purely terroristic organization. At the present time the period of
revolutionary romenticism is past and the Make is no longer hailed
as the "proletarian guillotine" or the "all devouring flame of the
med terror". "Suresucracism, this second nature of the Communistic
experiment, has now laid its heavy hand on this apparatus for the
hunting and extermination of people. Now people are liquidated according to the "rive-year plans". This will be made clear in the
chapter which describes a map hanging in the office of the wirst
Special Section of the MayD, in moscow, - the map covered with
marks indicating numbers of potential victims, that is, the numbers
of "ASE" (anti-Soviet elements) in different areas of the Unda.

This map reveals a direct link or connection between the present form of the "red terror" and the construction of war plants and oil wells in the wide regions beyond the Arctic circle.

The terror of the MKWD has now become less open. No longer are the names of victims published and slogans advertized. Never the less, the terror has become even more cruel. In the earlier days a man might be openly condemned and shot because as a nember of the former upper classes (simply - a "former") he, by the markist definition of classes, either had or would take part in the fight against the regime. Now people are liquidated by means of overwork, under the inhuman conditions of the poviet labor camps, only because the regime needs to build a factory or dig a canal. The hunt for people is carried on at present time not only because of danger to the regime, but because of a need for new slave labor power. We are speaking, of course, of rendencies, and therefore do not include the executions of the more active political enemies, such as members of the Vissov movement and the unfortunate rugitives caught and returned to the book by the Western powers.

2. From silet has been said above it is already possible to see the second peculiarity of soviet terrurism, namely, - the preventive character of this terror. Lenin nimself declared the sorking principle of the Soviet security organs to be directly opposed to the teachings by Christ. That is, it is better that nine innocent should suffer than that one guilty should be allowed to escape punishment. Categories of "automatic arrest" was not an invention of the victors over the Nami Germany, for one of the first steps taken by the Cheka at the end of 1917 was the introduction of a system of mass hosteges. The difference here is that from those arrested by the Cheka, as a "precautionary measure", - the former officers, aristocrats, bankers, professors, priests etc., - were dragged the victims of the periodic executions.

One can even say that the MKVD has its own acciologists for, by means of the hed Terror, Lenin and then Stalin changed in a drastic way the social and even age-group structure of the hussian population. *hen Stalin boasted in one conference that in a hussian village one could not find "in day time with a light" the figure; of

the old village "elder", village priest or a kulax, he only paid his respects to the sociological talents of his NKVD.

with an utmost energy throughout all those countries which were occupied by the Soviets during and after the war. And if a new war does not interrupt this new wave of the Red Terror, the text-books on ethnography will have to cross out the names of such nations as Katonian or Lettish, and to a greater extent simplify the picture of social composition of the population in Folend, Grech-Clovekia and the Belkan countries.

3. in apeaking of the methods of the MAYD, we must note that the officials of the AAVD can act arbitrary and anjoy the complete impunity of action as long as they degrade the people, as long as they torture and surder in secondance with the currently existing political line - the political line of the Polithero. Though, in the office of the Prosecutor General of the Udah there is a special prosecuting attorney for suppervision over the MaVL, never the less it is a zere case, bordering on a miracle, then a patition is entertained syminst the actions of some organ or official of the NAVE and a case is reviewed. But even them, no disciplinary washies are taken against the Chekists even is they are guilty of the ceath of an innocent individual. In these cases, as a great kindness to the relatives, is issued a certificate to the effect that "the above mentioned was penalized in connection with certain sifeirs which, upon further investigation, are not substactiated ... ". Such a certificate at least gives the widow of the penalized one on opportunity to receive work, and his children the opportunity to enter school, etc.

but when the party line changes, it may happen that yester-day's torturer-investigators are thrown in the same prison cell with the persons whom only last night they had tortured by shackling to the wall or finger hall splitting. It is well known that the occusations of Yagoda occasioned by themselves the death, without exception, of all his closest co-workers, all those Pauxers, Trilissers, Bormans, Cohems, and medenses - who had Just before been glorified

as the "worderful Chekist legion". Together with them "welked dem the serridor" es enemies of the people" hundreds and hundreds of their assistants; nearly all of when, through long years, themselves "sent down the corridor" tens of thousands of hussian people, in the greater part innocent even in the face of the famous 58th article of the Soviet penal code "X".

Though Stelin thought that he was liquidating only his own enemies, in these cases he was putting a bullet in the mape of the neck of the unquestionably real enemies of the people. In his own turn, the downfall of the killer and successor of ingode - the "Stelinist", "iron" coumisser Yeshov, brought about its own bloody purge enong those who only just before thoroughly purged the Chekist cadres. All those executors who worked with Yezhov were shet without exception. Stelin know how to emerge from water dry.

Generally speaking, every unsuccessful operation, especially a failure in the secret work abroad, results in the severe punishment of the responsible SKVD personnel. There is no doubt that Canadian justice indirectly caught up with others, in addition to those who sat on the defendant's bench at sontreals the SEVD dealt severely with all of those people who, being in Canada, were so instantive as not to apprehend Igor Guzenke. It is certain that some of the former collegues of the Sussian school teacher Kesiantina, who jumped from the window of the Seviet consulate in New York, were obliged to pay dearly for her act when they, in turn, had to "jump" from America back into Lubjanks street.

Actually, suspicion and apy fever flourish not less, but sore, within the walls of the MEVD then outside. Behind every Chekist stands another one, if not two, checking on his leyelty. Consequently, the inclination is to trink that the object of this surveillance is nothing more than another "heretofere undiscovered enoug of the people", This spirit of antual suspicion and internal apy fever was successfully exploited by the Japanese intelligences

m) One of many Obekisté terms for the docth penalty,
mm) This exticle deals with "eximes" against the Noviet political
system.

in the chapter on the "KRU" (Counter Intelligence Administration) we shall cite the case of a successful provocation which resulted in the massacre of Chemists by Chemists themselves.

4. One of the most peculiar characteristics of the NAVD lies in its methods for utilization of agents. The Soviet secret police relies not so such upon the quality, as upon the quantity of its agents. From the outside it may appear that this manie of the MAYL tends to convert the entire population of the Soviet Union into a gigantic network of its spice. Ministers and nousemaids, generals and inmates of concentration camps, scientists and miners, artists and school boys, people without regard for age and sex, are recruited as agents of MAVD. There is only one restriction: the manual on recruiting "does not recommend the recruiting of children less than twelve years old" in view of "the danger that they will not observe the rules of secrecy". It is understandable that hopody can even approximately estimate the number of MaW agents. But there is no doubt that they anaber sillions, it not tens of millions. It is sufficient to say that "according to regulations" the ordinary words house must have the following number of Advi agents: the caretaker, the doorsen, and at least one egent per epartment . It is no wonder that in the poviet Union it is said, half joxingly, half seriously, that if two people are chosen at random, one of them is a "acknot", that is, a secret areat of the MKVD.

the explanation of the relience upon the quentity of agents lies evidently in the lack within the says of qualified personnel able to properly train agents, we will treat separately the characteristics of NAVD personnel, showing the extremely low level of their general and even police education. These people are very often unable to cope with their tasks, and in order to clear their cases they resort either to bestings of the arrestees or to exhausting by means of endless questioning and special conditions of confinement.

x) This applies to the typical source spartment, which houses five or six families.

According to a Russian saying, the Cheka makes a virtue of its shortcomings, proclaiming that " the whole people side the Maying Impractice this means that the Communists and members of the Komsommol are formally required to collaborate with the MAYD. As Lening said a "revery Communist must be a Chekist", when recruited as agents they are told that this is their party duty. To whe non party people who refuse such work it is ninted that such refusal shows that they are evidently "against the Soviet Power". And if some brave men spill refuse to become a traitor to his relatives and friends, they are directly placed in the file of "ASE" (anti-boviet elements) and sooner or later repressed.

As a result, there is created a disautic not of wecret agents of all empracing types. This net covers, eithout exception, all soviet institutions, beginning with the rolithuro and ending with the layetory ettendants. Using this net, the anyo Mkeeps Chexist vanilance", that is, it uses the daily reports of its millions of equats for the operation of its system of preventive terror. Of course, the value of these exemus, recruited in large part under threats, is not great and for experienced interligence spency thay, by themselves, do not resent auch canger. On the other name, because of their wery abundance the MAVD resches its goal, so to say, irow the opposite end: knowing that RAVL agents are everywhere and seeing such en egent in almost every person, the opponents of the poviet regime simply fear to show any activity, not to speak of organizing any opposition. The preventive nature of poviet terror, in this case, also plays its prominent role in forbidating the very conception of ideas of struggle against Communica.

The system under which the navi uses secuts may be compared to the actions of a lisherman who, having only bad nets, fills the entire occan with them in the hope that in at least one of them he would catch a small fish. But what is impossible for an individual fisherman, however capable or rich he might be, is possible for the MEVD, because it has at its disposal an unlikited number of agents and can at any time turn almost any Soviet citizen into Its agents. The more so, since the agents work for nothing: The sole limiting

factor is the lack of MKVD officials to direct the agents, read their denunciations, and to instruct them. Only in this fact lies the explanation why a certain percentage of the population of this "country of victorious socialism" remains outside this gigantic net of MKVD agents. Future historious of the epoch of Communism in hussis will undoubtedly take the figure of a miserable and unhappy MKVD informer as a symbol of this period. In other words, this unhappy figure is the real support of Stelin's power. This support has a mass character but is far from being trustworthy.

5. It is hardly necessary to remind of the fact that the NKVD is not too scrupulous about its methods and actions. We have no intention to compare in this respect the NKVD with the femous inquisition or with the Gestapo. We avoid this comparison because no one can give the exact number of himse victims of their torture—chambers, and because here the palm of priority undoubtedly belongs to the NKVD - it has as its object much greater masses of population, and the enormous territory or the Soviet Union and it has been in operation for a longer period of time, but there is one more peculiarity in the methods of the NKVD which has no precedence, even in the most ginister institutions of this kind.

Here we have in wind the artificial fabrication of culprits and forged craes or, using the NAVD terminology .- "activisation of suspects". Certainly, even the principle, laid down by Lenin biaself, that it is better to punish nine innocent persons then to let one guilty to escape punisheent - even this ominous thesis stimulates the false ecousetiens and incorrect court decisions. But the NEVD has invented secothing which is much oproc then the comdemostion of a person whose guilt was not proved, or who is known to be innocent but who was forced, in result of the tortures and unbearable conditions in the prison, to blackwill himself. The EEVE invented the method of provocation. Formally, the wage of this sethed is forbidden. But practically, - the provocation is the chief aethed of work in the MID. For without this bethed of provocation, the SEVD would herely be able to collect even one per cent of the human rew material needled for the disgusting ment grinder in the Lubyenke square.

without a proper number of victims, the NEVD would never receive its prestige of a "chastising sword" or "the body-gased of the conquests of October", while the Chekists would not be able to enjoy their good life, their numerous orders and governmental rewards, and all those numerous privileges which transform these hangmen into the Soviet elite. One must not forget that as a merit of work of every individual Chekist is taken the number of "suemies" he has discovered, revealed and punished in a certain period of time. If this number is big enough, - then the Chemist is good, his vigilance is high, and his loyalty to the case of Ledin-Stalin of is blameless. But if this number is small, - then this Unexist has to forget any orders, promotions, a separate apartment, or a car this dream of every poviet careerist. Just in the same way, every chief of an Administration or a local organ of the Mayo is eager to demonstrate, by seems of a number of "colfins" that the "unia trusted to him" is successfully fulfilling the program of the rare ty and the government, and "is nolding gloft the bander of Unemest vigilance".

but what to do if there are no real spies, trotskyites, and a wreckers? Then they are being "activated", according to a wronger ful Charlet term. This means that certain previously marked victims are being provoked, with the help of some special agents, to make some remarks or to conduct some actions, which can be interpreted that on as enti-boyiet ones, when taking this into account, we can definitely claim that at least a half, or may be even three-customs, of all the victims of the MANN are composed on the vactumes of these provoked "activizations".

but we shall not blame here the Chekista alone. As we shall see from the chapter decling with the activities of the "bri" - becret Political Administration of the MAYL, the entire work of this branch, in its struggle against the "anti-Party deviations" and in appling against the members of the ruling Communist party, is prescribed by special instructions of the Poliburo, channelled through

The Chekist term for those doomed to execution.

the Special Sector of the Central Committee, or coming from Stalin himself. These instructions normally prescribe to "activate" that or the other "deviation" according to Stalin's political needs. To-day he decides to hit those whom he considers as guilty of Prote-kyism, and the "SiU" immediately "activates", by means of provocative conversations, leaflets etc., those communists who are marked for subsequent "liquidation". To-morrow he needs to "render harmless" the former opponents of Vyshinski at the Institute for Soviet hight, and the SiU "activates" the "scum of rashukenis", that is those Soviet students of law who repeated, after mark, that under the Communism the state is bound to "die out".

The monstrous processes equinst Ainoviev, Assence, Assent, Buharin - all there are simply the examples of these counterfait cases which bishin needs in his own political interests. The example of this kind of forget cases represent all those numerous tragedies when millions of innnocent people are being sent to the MAVD camps, simply because the complan decided to dig a certain channel or to bore some new oil wells. Following Sixin, every individual Chekist starts to forge similar counterfait cases, out in his own interests, he knows only too well, that sixin trusts only those watch-cooks which pite the greatest number of ty-passers.

their clumsy character. We have already spoken of the lack of qualified, intelligent, and good workers that in one stroke turned the Cheka-MKVD into a torture chamber. Then we find that the majority of people falling into the mands of the MKVD do so not as a result of any sly ar well thought out secret police combination, but because of simple demunciation concerning their careless words or actions which might be interpreted as "sabotage", thanks to the reports of the Uniquitous informants of the MKVD. After falling into the hands of the MKVD, a man, somer or later, signs a tonfession; again, not as a result of artful fine work of the investigator but as a result of bestings, torture, coercion, provocation, promises and other methods,- in a large part of a physical nature.

If one were to open the doors of the gloomy buildings in the block between the Lubyenka and Myssnitskaya streets, one would be convinced that the implements of torture which are to be seen in a museum are no more than children's playthings. The MAYD has its own means of physical persuasion, made to its own specifications in its own work-shops. If to this method is added that the guiding principle of the NAYD is that every arrestes is an "emeny of the people" whose guilt must only be made official and his accomplices found, then it is not surprising that a "false arrest" in the USAR is almost impossible. Events of any one escaping with a laconic document of "released by the NAYD" can be counted on ones flugers. Gutside the walls of the MAYD everyone swears of his love and devotion to Stalin. Inside there walls every one confesses to his "criminal plots" against Stalin ...

buch is the system of the boviet terror, the flesh and bone of the Communist system.

3. The sen of the at.Vi

Although executioners are necessary at all times and to all regimes, the profession has never been considered particularly no-morable, however, the Ubba mes in this has its own word, for the first organizer of the Communistic torture-chamber, leader of the Loviet hangmen-Chekists, Felix Ljerzhinsky, was called even in his lifetime "Knight of the projetsrian revolution", and Lenin and Stalin directed their most flattering epitaphs to the Unexists, here are a few examples:

"Chekists - threat to the world bourgeoisie", "signest and first sons of the revolution", "No higher or more honorable name than that of a Chekist" (Lenin), "Chekists - bodysusrd of bocisism;" "Syes and ears of the Party", and so forth.

Not only smong the Communists themselves, but smong all the people there is carried on the uninterrupted work of praising the "difficult but noble profession of the Chekist" (stalin), setting up the Chekist as an ideal for other workers, as an "example of

self-secrifice and bravery". In the Boviet Union there are great masses of literature, the object of which is not only to direct the enthusiasm of the people toward the praise and love and their henchmen, but also to incite the people to telp them in their dirty work of espionage and treachery. Even in the challdren's readers one finds descriptions of the "brave deeds" of various Chekists and praise for their activities, which are aiding socialist construction by the "liquidating of all of its engales". Djerkhinsky, klrov, and Beris are "beloved" heroes of children's textbooks, songs etc., with the help of which the Communists are poisoning the growing generation.

The libelous designation "Chekist" which is pronounced with fear and caution by the man on the street, was accepted arrobantly by the soviet regime as a badge of the most nonorable profession in the Soviet Union. The Chekists call themselves Chekists, and for the most outstanding of them there has even been established a special emblem "nonorable Chekist", - a sword, surrounded by a laurel wreath, mounted on a rhomboid, bjerzhinsky was possesed with the idea of creating out of his henchmen a sort of closed caste, resembling a monastic orders with severe, ascetic customs, almost isolating themselves from life.

obviously borrowed his idea from Ignatius Loyols. Not long before his strangely sudgen death in 1926, Ljershinsky even ordered work started on the writing of special "Chexist Status", that is, a collection of rules of conduct, a codex of morals, so to speak. Although the word "moral" is definitely out of place in this instance this fact did not disturb Djershinsky and his successors. All the more, since Lenin gave such a definition of morals : "The basis of Communistic horals is the struggle for the strangehening and fulfilment of Communism".

and this definition was later completed by Stelin thus :
"From the viewpoint of Communist morels, that is moral which contributes to the extermination of the old regime and the strengthening
of the new, socialist order". Consequently, the fellows from

Lubyanka Street consider themselves as some sort of "Stakhanovites of Communist morels". And so they tabble about Chekist ethics. In the first place in "Chekist ethics" stands the idea of devotion to the Party. This means that a Chekist must torture, torment, and kill any body show the Party considers or might consider an enemy. This notwithstanding the fact that tomorrow any and everybody might be proclaimed "enemies of the people". It is a known fact that by order of stalin, isgods and his closest collaborators, among whom were all of the members of the Collegium of the MKVD, were shot, not by ordinary henchmen of the mkVD, but by their closest supordinates.

purther, the Chekist "ethics" apeak soout the necessity to be visitant and "undefatiguably uncover and destroy the enemies of the people". If we substitute the word "preventivenes" for the word "vigitance" then the question will become clear. A classic example of vigitance, depicted in all Chekist textbooks, is now a member of the rolithuro, hazar Assenovica, serving at that time as the right hand of otalia, "uncovered the camouilaged enemies of the people".

In the late thirties, Kaganovich supervised the construction of the Addrey in soscow. At one of the tunnels two workers, scale literate possents, father and son just errived from the country, decided to dring water from the fire nose. having left they failed to turn off the fauset. As a result of this, a section of the tunnel the next day was flooded. An agent - representative of the NEVD - reported to Asganquich, that the offenders were stresdy arrested. But Kagenovich ordered the errest slso of the chief of the subwey section. "In the first place he was negligent toward his work - his duty was to supply the mines with arinking water fountains. In the becond place - added agenovich - investigate thoroughly his background". After two weeks the unfortudate engineer confessed, that in the past he was an officer of the tearist army. Hence it was made rather easy to me e conclusion about the sabotage.

As regards to the third demand of the "Chekist ethics", their "incorruptibility", one has to recognize, that, as a rule, in the MEVD this requisite is respected. But this is because of the simple reason: the Chekists are much better off materially than their victims. In those few cases, however, when the victims have valuable stones or gold (and this occurs rarely in the UECK), this does not produce an impression on the Chekist; wealth in the Goviet society plays an insignificant role - the power of money there is exchanged fully for the force of power.

It is necessary to note still another requirement which is presented to the Chekist. This requirement is - to be merciless toward the enemy. As in the above case, this principle of the "Chekist ethics" does not present in practice any mort of difficulty. The have already mentioned this, while speaking about the methods of mork of the Soviet secret police. On the contrary, sometimes the leaders have to ask the Chekists not to be so energetic in following their "ethics of mercileseness". Do, for example, serie, having replaced the crazed lezhov, in a special order pointed out to the almost crazed subordinates of Tezhov: "One can and even must beat, but it is not necessary to best every one".

In this case Beria was least of all led by the feeling of humanity: to be human means to be a poor Communist. The reason was simply that the prisons of the NKW were filled with victims of the wild terror during the time of Yezhov. All these people were clearly innocent of the crimes, to which they had confessed only because of the methods of questioning of the "Iron reople's Commission re-examined their cases, and not desiring to set free the witnesses who had seen the horror, gave mentions to set free the witnesses who had seen the horror, gave mentioner cutting in the extreme north. However, the besten, tortured, almost crasy, people firmly held to their previous confessions, extracted from them during the days of Yezhov, They repeated, for example, that they wanted to mill Yezhov himself (at that time always proclaimed as an enemy of the people), or that they were spice for the long non-existent state austria-mungary.

Not only among sample people, but also enong the Communists, among the very highest circles of the Boviet state and Party dignitaries, the very word AKVD brought fear; carefully screened from other of course, under the pretense of hypocritical praise of regards to "our glorious Chekists". Therefore, ususelly they stoop and crawl in order to try to gain the favor of the Chemists. the uniform of the Chekist is equal to the master key of a thief - to this man, with the crimson braid on his collar and with a blue top on his hat, are available all of the goods of the meager Soviet life: e room in the hotel, a berth on the train, a ticket to the theater etc., - and all this without queing, this plague of simple boviet mortels. It goes without saying that to bring a suit in court against the Chekists - is a thing unthinxable in the John, in a country, in which laws exist only on paper, there is one unwritten but strictly observed laws the MAVD is above the new, the MAVD is authorized to do as it pleases because it is the NKVD who creates the laws.

It is not surpleing that, under such conditions of unlimited expitrariass, who members of the Mayu feel themselves semi-gods. The secret character of the work, coupled with self isolation in private life (as a rule the Chexista live in nouses of the advolution of in special separate apartments), led to the forming in the user of a particular closed casts. In their own country, the Chekista live similar to the Americans in their occupation zone of wermany: they have their own mode of life, their better supply, their places for relaxation and rest, and last but not least their own courts.

All this, taken together, gradually forms a special type of man. The experienced eye can unmistakably guess whether a stranger has any relation to the "organs" or not. And this not only by conversation, but by his behaviour, even by appearance.

From the very first days of the Soviet power this question began to play an important role in the internal politics. It must be explained that, as the leaders of Bolshevism, also the management of the

x) In the Chexist sleng - MKVD,

the majority of cases were people of non-Massian origin. This fact was perticularly apparent during the years of the leadership of Yagoda. It is well known that during this time there took place the cruel reprisals against the Mussian peasants (liquidation of the "kulaka"). In the spees eyes of the population, MEYD and its work sequired a definite significance.

The pisture changed radically after Stalin liquidated the opposition, the leaders of which, basically, were of nea-kasian origin. The place of Isgods and his companions in the MAVD was eccupied by new people, whose acceptance depended largely upon three conditions: they had to be, if possible, of Russian nationality; they had to come from the inferior regions of the Soviet Union; and they were to have neither relatives nor close acquaintances abroad. This was a tribute to the spy fever which gripped the Krenlin in the middle thirties. One of the first results of this delivery of the "avenging sword of the proletariat" into the hands of people "from behind the plow", - the Soviet expression seaning simple and poorly educated people, with a low mental development, but "to the bitter end devoted to the case of Lenin-Stalia", was a significant lowering of the effectiveness of the SKVD.

Having lost its experienced agents and investigators, the MKVD was forced to use the most primitive methods of a provincial police establishment. There began a period, when the entire task of the MKVD was schieved simily by besting prisoners, Formerly, the MKVD was joined "by calling", that is, by those who had a taste for bestial, sedistic blood shed. Her people joined the MKVD as a result of "Party mebilisation", i.e. at the directive of the Party. It is not surprising, that sany of them proved to be absolutely unfit for the "specific" work of the MKVD. One of the orders of the MKVD mentions with indignation, for the education of others, that one of the new batch of Chakista, having sequented himself with the demonstration of a former Tretskyits, called him late his office

and began to edmonish him : "it is not good to engage in antirarty propaganda, Comrade P., didn't you, in the did days, sign an oath to be loyal to the Party?"

Only by slow stages could the MKVD re-establish a cadre of qualified agents, spies, and technicians of secret work. however, the war with Germany once more found the Soviet secret police in a state of complete disorganisation. This explains such bungling methods in the fight against the German espionage as the wholesale arrest of all people with "German names", or the banishment to middle Asis of the entire population of the Autonomous German Volgan Republic. They did not know how to ferret out the actual agents, and besides, they did not went to be bothered with "trifles".

There is reason to believe that only by the very end of the war was the NeV, able to conduct some limited activity in Jerman territory. This can so seen, for instance, in the attented assassination of Jeneral Vissov in 1944, even those agents who were successfully inflitting into other countries were very poorly qualified, and notalthatanding the broadest co-operation, which was ac orded to the Joviet repatriation missions in the Western zones of Jermany and Austria, the majority of the anti-poviet elements and deserters from the poviet Union have successfully secreted themselves, either within the masses of rat's of althin the Garman economy, it must be believed that the weakness of their own causes until now has compelled the maying to run the risk of a wider use of fifth column members in the "capitalistic" countries.

CHAPTER II

RIGIORA OR THE NEAR

During the three decades of its existence, the apparatus of the Soviet secret pelice experienced a whole series of re-organizations and even changed its name five times. This fact did not by one iots change the essence of Stalin's secres police, one of the principal means to organize the world-wide Communist revolution.

The following is a short history of the days

on December 20, 1917, just two months after the October revolution in hussis, the Council of People's Commission for the Additional Commission for the fight against counter-revolution, sabotage, and speculational Phis agency was ordinarily called, in abbreviation, Co.o. and therefore received, among the people, the colloquial designation "Cheka" or "Chrezvicheika". The first chairman of the All-Aussian Cheka was the above mentioned Felix Djershinsky, at whose instigation the Commission was created.

The total Red Terror was begun by the where in August, 1918, after the murder of the chairman of the Petrograd Chaka Aikhail (Moise) Uritaky and an attempt on the life of Lenia.

From this time on the functions of this bloody instrument of the Bolshevik dictatorship were clearly determined. So, for instance, in the proclamation of the Petrograd Doviet on the occasion of the attempt upon the life of Lenin, it was said: "For the marder of Comrade Uritaky, and for the attempt upon the life of the leader of the world revolution, Comrade Lenin, the proletariat will answer the retten bourgeoisie with death blows. Not with an eye for an eye, but with a thousand eyes for one. A thousand lives of the bourgeoisie for the life of our leader. Leng live the Hed

Lenin thus delinested the goal of the Cheks : "the only way for the liberation of the messes lies in the extermination of exploiters. That is the task of the Cheks."

The executive of Djershinsky in the Cheks, one of the most bloody henchmen of the Russian people, a Latvian Latsis, - was still more franks "The struggle is One of life and death. If you do not will, you will be killed. Therefore will, that you may not be willed!

hrom the time of stalin there appeared in use a number of new, but not less expressive slogans, note are nowe of them:

"ARVD - The vindictive sword of the projetarian revolution!"
"Chekists - Bodyguard of the October Revolution!"

Lurian the period of the Civil ser of 1918-1922, the med larror cost many millions of lives. After the termination of the civil ser and after the bolsheviks had consolidated their power over mussis, this terrornot only failed to cease, but with each year it consumed more and more victims. System of a encies of supression and compulsion was continually widened and enetrated deeper throughout all the pores of administrative, social, and economic life of the country.

(Checks) was reorganized into the btate rolitical Administration (Bosudarstvennoye Politicheskoye Upravlenie), in aboreviation - Gosudarstvennoye Political administration of Unified attention was algoriticantly extended and a new system included additionally; border guards, transport guards, administration of places of confinement, and also many and the Communistration of places of confinement, and also many and the Communistraty. Beside that, by 1922 the Communistration was expanding its large activity. - orrespondingly, the outer-political tasks of the GPU sere to assist the Communistration in certain special apheres of its activities. The Cheka as a designed to act only within the country, while the GPU, from the very first day, stretched out its tentacles beyond the borders of the Upon.

This reorganisation had also a great significance in principles the Cheks was created, as an extraordinary measure, for the defense of the Soviet power during its most critical moments; but the UPU, at the moment of its creation, was conceived as a permanent organ of the Bolshevik distatorship. Thus, it was directly recognised, that the mass terror is an inclienable part of the boviet system. In the course of twelve years, from 1922 to 1934, the Soviet power openly recognised this situation.

On June 10, 1954, the OGFU was reorganised into the MKVD of the USER. This abbreviation comes from the full mussion title of that institution - Maroday Komisseriat Vautrenaih Del SSER. Formally this reorganization was explained by the fact that the period of struggle against the counter-revolution had ended, that the Soviet power was definitely strengthened, and therefore there was no more need for the existence of a special organ for the suppression of counter-revolution and opposition within the country. However, the "Great Purge", - beginning shortly after this reform, - with its millions of victims, showed that this official explanation did not in any measure correspond with the actual reason of the transformation.

The sotual reason of this reorganization was that at this time the apparatus of the OGrU again so widened, complicated and expanded, that it could no longer be packed into the frame of one administration. The system of universal trailing and spying covered all of the country. This was no sore, and by no means, one single organization. This was a complicated net of specialized organs of terror and spying, penetrating to the very deepest corners of the vest territory of the Soviet Union and far beyond its borders.

The essentials of the reorganisation of 1934 were, that besides the complicated met of political suppervision system of the OGPU, a new system of the MKVD included also the administration of the police and criminal inquiry, passport administration, administration of the fire department and administration of the transport, even a department for the recording of the acts of the civilian state (EAGS). Besides that, the MKVD united and subordinated into one system all the numerous and widespread prisons, places of preliminary confinement, correctional labor solonies and correctional labor

comps (the Soviet memos for different types of concentration comps), with all their numerous and extraordinarily complicated sumiliary enterprises and institutions.

The basic departments of the OGPU, which performed the trailing and spying within the USBR and beyond its borders, were preserved, generally, in their former structure and were unified into the system of the "Administration of State Security" (UGB MKVD), which in the period of the "Great Purge" (1936-38) received the title of the "Chief Administration for State Security" (SUGB MKVD)—"Glavmoye Upravlence Gosudarstvennoi Besopasmesti". Apart of this mest important administration, in the system of the MKVD was created a number of other branches and administrations, which apheres of activity will be examined in the following parts of our work.

The fifth of February, 1941, the MKVD was divided into two commissariats: "The People's Commissariat for Internal Affairs" (MKVD) and "The People's Commissariat for State Security" (MKND). This reform become indispensible after the period of the "wrest Purge" and as a result of the forced annexation by the Soviet Union, in 1939-40, of a number of new republies. The apparatus of the MKVD became exceptionally large and complicated, and there was no longer room for this enormous apparatus in the structure of one commissariat. As a result of this referm, the personnel of both new commissariats grew yet more.

This reform took place by means of the separation from the NEVD of its principle administration - that of the Chief Administration for State Security. This organization was given an independent existence and elevated to the rank of a People's Commissariet - The People's Commissariet for State Security (Marodniy Komissariet Gosudarstvendoy Besepasnosti, or MAND). To it was given several necessary services : an edministrative and service branch ota.

Under the centrol of the new HKVD were left the following the edministration of places of confinement and corrective-labor camps (GULAG), transport, militie (pelice); and passport branch, 2405 (civil status registration office), fire-brigades, highway

. ពេលស្តេ transportation, administrative and service branch with its sanitary section, the manerous sanaterial and rest-homes for Chekists etc.
As a result, the MEVD was transformed into a subordinate organisetion with secondary functions, but the "hword of Mevolution" was
entrusted to the MEGB, that is, this new People's Commissarist for
State Security reserved for itself the exclusive field of espionage,
terrorism and suppression, and at the same time Keeping its eye on
the activities of the new MEVD.

Almost immediately efter the beginning of the war, that is July 20th, 1941, the MKVD and MEGB were again united into the ene MKVD under the direction of its former recopie's Johnissar, havrenty Beris, who, at the time of the previous division, had been appointed Stalin's deputy in the Council of imple's Commissars of the USIR, with the task of co-ordinating the work of these two Commissariats.

The NKVD existed in this form until the end of the sorid wer II. The reason for this unification could be found in the necessity of simplifying in time of war the suministration of the complicated apparatus of suppression and terror. There is also no doubt that Stalin wanted Beris, as his personal friend and confident, to resssure at this critical moment the single-handed control of this most important part of the Soviet system. In addition, this new reform was influenced by the fact that during the four months of their existence, these two new Commisseriats aid not have time to delimit fully the schere of their activities. Under the conditions of military debacle and retreat, this could have led to the loss of control behind the front lines elso. This was the situation in regard to the HKVD until 1945. Meviewing these re-organizations, we do not take into consideration the "Salksh" ("Death to Spice") which was created during the war within the frame of the days, but as a meni-independent institution.

After the end of the war, the MKVD was again divided into the MKVD and MKGB and in March 1946 these Commissariats were remembed the "Ministry of Internal Affairs" (MVD) and the "Ministry of State Security". This was accomplished in accordance with the

transformation of the Council of People's Commissers of the USSA into the Council of Ministers. The principle of division of the MKVD after the war was the same as it had been in 1941: the Chief Administration of State Security of the MKVD, with the Administration of interior troops and border guards of the MEVD, and some servicing organisations became the Ministry of State Security (MGB), while all the remaining administrations and divisions of the former MEVD passed into the hands of the Ministry of Internal Affairs (MVD).

According to the information which the authors of the present work have at hand, the internal structure of the separate divisions in the MVD and MGB remained almost the same as it had been in the system of the NKVD in 1939-1940, to which period refer the materials introduced here. The authors were able to register only one major change: "All former "Administrations" of the mystem of the Chief Administration of State Security have been given the title of the "Chief Administrations" in the MGB. There have been no essential changes in either the methods or practice since that time, only the scope of activity has become even broader. In those isolated instances where the functions or the structure of these or other MKVD divisions underwent serious changes, these changes will be noted additionally. For this reason, the authors have permitted themselves in this analysis to use the present tense of verbs rather than the past, although the MiVI formally caused to exist in 1946.

Union-Republican Commissariat and therefore its local organs sust subordinate themselves to the higher organs of Soviet power in the republics, areas, regions and districts. But actually, the local organs of the NEWD are completely sutenesses and are subordinated only to their our top-level agencies, while the NEVD itself, in all important questions of its activities, is subordinated only to the Polithure. The Council of Poele's Commissars of the USBE (new the Council of Ministers) has a former control ever the NEVD only in financial matters,— but even this is merely an ephonomial prerogative. Practical control of MEVD is derried out by the

Polithuro through the "Special Section" of the Central Committee of the All-Union Communist Party, through a special group of the Party Control Commission (EFE CE VEP/b/), located since 1956 in the MEVD building, No 2 Djershinsky Square, in Moscow, and through some other special agencies subordinated directly to the Stalin's "Personal Secretarist".

In a purely shatract case of political divergence or conflict between the government of the USER and the Polithuro of the Central Committee of the Communist Party, the NEVD, now the ses, is obliged to early out only the orders and directives of the Polithuro and the General Secretary of the Communist Party, that is of J.V. Stalin. Buch a case took place only once, in 1937, when by the order of Stalin, the SEVD arrested and brought to trial the former chief of the Soviet Government,— the former chairman of the Council of the People's Commissars of the USBE, Alexei 1. Hykov (it is true that by this time Hykov was "only" the Commissar of Communications). This example clearly illustrates that the NaVD is a governmental organ in form only, but fectually it is an all powerful instrument of the party dictatorship, that is, of its supreme agency, the rolithuro of the Central Committee of the Party.

The two ministries remain as the same instrument of Party power, as in the time of the MAVD. The fact that they are subordinate to Beria, who is a deputy chairman of the Council of Ministers, changes nothing at all, in so far as Beria is at the same time a member of the Politburo. It will be proper to recall that already in 1934 the transformation from the OUPU to the MAVD was explained thuss instead of a party organ there would be now a normal state organ; however, in reality, this re-organization was not followed by any change whatsoever in the character of the organ itself.

Cheke-OGFU-EKVD-MGB are actually different names for the same instrument of a terroristic system, heretofore unprecedented in the history of humanity. The only difference between them lies in the ever growing widening of their functions and spheres of activity.

In summery, we can say that the mission of the MIVI-MAB
is as follows:

1. #ithin the borders of the USSE

- a) The uncovering and liquidating of all political movements and groups, even individuals who are hostile or in opposition to the Party and Soviet system, or even those who take a neutral stand.
- b) The sefequerding of the secomplishments of party decisions and undertakings by all organisations and individuals without exceptions: this is done by secret observations of the activities of all governmental, economic, social, and in certain cases, even party organizations, and always and especially the armed forces of the USSA.
- c) Permanent control of all correspondence to and from foreign countries, both official as well as private, and periodical and selective control of correspondence within the USSK.
- d) In co-operation with the party, a preventative censorship of all printed matter in the Usak, notwithstanding its charecter or significance - beginning with the official Communist party publication "Pravda" and ending with the trademarks on cigarettes.
- e) Protection of Stelin and other leaders of the Party and the Soviet government.
- f) Security of the USSE's borders from the point of view of political as well as customs.
- g) Protection of important military objectives, such as factories, bridges, etc.
- h) Counter-intelligence work and observation of all foreigners in the USSE.
- i) The management and protection of concentration camps and the exploitation of slave labor for the realisation of the Fiveyear plans, chiefly in the Far North.

2. Beyond the borders of the UBBH

- a) Political intelligence and diversionary-terroristic activities in accordance with special instructions of the Politburo and in co-operation with the so-called "Sister organizations" ("Smeshnie organi).
- b) Co-operation, according to the decisions of the "Molutov Committee" of the Politburo, and the secretarist of the Comintern (Cominform), with the leadership of the foreign Communist parties in their struggle against the governments and hostile political parties of their countries.
- c) The disruption, by infiltration, of all anti-soviet political organisations abroad.
- d) Spying on all members of the Soviet diplometic, commercial and other representatives and delegates of the USER, and also on Soviet military spies.
- e) Spying on all leading personnel of the foreign Communist

arthur Us afficults more

CHAPTER III

STRUCTURE OF THE SEVO

1. Administrative Division

In accordance with the 1936 Boviet constitution, the MAVD was an Union-Republic People's Commisseriat just as the MVD and AGB are Union-Republic Ministries at present. This means that there is a central Union-Republic Commissariat (or ministry) in Moscow and that there are Republic People's Commissariats (now ministries) in each of the 15 republic capitals (for example: Kiev, Minak, Baku, kige, etc.) which are directly subordinated in all most importent features to the Union-Republic Commissariet (or Ministry) in Moscow. Only formelly, and even then only in certain secondary edministrative and budget questions are the kepublic MKVD (now the MVD and MGB) controlled by the Councils of reople's Commissars of the corresponding Republics (now: the Councils of ministers)

See the diegree No 1

The RSFSR did not have its own MKVD (since 1947 there ere MVD and MGB of the RSFSM). The duties of that organ were carried out by the office of the first deputy of the reople's Commisser of the MKVD of the USSR. The functions of the MKVD of the MSYSK for regions located in the European part of that republic were ordinarily carried out by the MKVD regional administration for Moscow (abbreviated : UNKVD MO - Upravlenie MAVD Moskovskoi Oblasti). However, the UMKVD-MO did not dispetch orders in its own name to the regions, but administered such regional administration of the MEVD (for example, Tale) by sending orientations and inquiries with references to the orders of the Deputy People's Commissar or of the People's Commisser himself.

The autonemous republics did not have their own People's Commisseriet for Internel Affairs, but only the regional edministrations of the AKWD of those Union Republics to which the given sutonomous republic belonged. Se, for example, the Abkhasian ASSR, complaing a part of the Georgian SSR, will have the Abkhasian regional administration of the MKVD of the Georgian SSR. Autonomous republics of the MSFSK had the regional administrations of the MKVD of the USSR, while those autonomous republics having small population and no significant military or economic importance, might even come under the jurisdiction of the regional administration of the MKVD of neighboring regions of greater importance. So, for example, the Northern Caucasian autonomous republics of Morthern Osetia and Kabardino-dalkar and the autonomous region of Karachaev were "served" (to use the Chekist terminology) by the Urdjonikidse (former Vladikavkas) area administration of the MAVL of the USCR. Note: The above mentioned autonomous republics were liquidated during the World war II for the anti-woviet activities of their population.

The structure, that is the personnel complement and functions of the MKYD of a Union Republic were determined by the size, as well as the strategic and economic importance of a given republic. In such extremely important republics as the Ukraine and Belorussia, their People's Commissariats for internal Affairs represented somewhat smaller replicas of the All-Union MEYD in Auston.

bee the diagram No 2

In the less important Union Republics, the MKVD of the republics were organized and worked, actually, according to the authority of the MKVD regional administration. Rarlier, they were termed the "fully empowered representations of the July (abbreviated-PP OGFU - Polnomochnoe Predstavitelstve OUPU). In such Union Republics the importance of the local MKVD could even be less than the authority of an administration of the MKVD of large regions. For example, the Moldavian Republic's MKVD, by its size and importance, could be considered a much lower level than the MKVD regional administrations of Moscow and Lemingred.

2. Local Agencies

See the diagrams No 3 and 4

In general, the regional administrations of the MAVD have an identical atructure and are fully empowered to resolve all local problems. For the Ababa, the first bejuty of the recyle's commission of the All-Union MAVD and the office of the Uniof Administration for State Security in Administration for State Security in Administration for State Security in Administration for the local agencies of this republic. The remaining 15 equiplic MAVDs administrated the local MAVD agencies located in the corresponding republics.

ractically, the main burden of work rests on the shoulders of these regional administrations. Italin personally gave special attention to the furthering of the effectivenes of their preventive-terroristic activities. In his language this was cynically called: "making the nave intimate with the masses". It is precisely these local or satisficing of the nave, which cover the entire country if a resh, that are the basis of the Italia regime. The center only directs their activities and, at that, on the basis of acterial received from the local accurage.

From the point or view of operations, the regional equiniattritions of the NaVo were divided as follows:

- 1. Listrict sections of the MAVL ("Isyotuel" MAVI.).
- 2. City sections of the anv.
- 3. Operational branches of the MAY. ("operacktor MAYL").

The importance and role of the district sections of the NKVL does not require any special explanation at this place, they are organized in every district of any region ("oblast") or areas ("krai") of the USDE corresponding to the somewhattrative division of the Soviet Union.

City sections of the NKVD exist in all cities and inquatrial centers of the USCR which in importance are soove the level of district centers. They work along the lines of an operational branch. In the last years before the war, in such pow rful cities as moscow, Leningrad, Kiev, and others, in the efforts to delineate and divide the work, were introduced city administrations of the MKVD (as in the party system); for example - there were "The moscow Regional Party Committee" and "The moscow City Party Committee". In the same way there were: "The moscow Regional MKVD administration" and "The Moscow City MKVD Administration". These city administrations directed the work of the MEVD agencies only in the city itself, not considering the surrounding districts.

The operational branch could be compared to a district office of the MKVD ("raiotdel" MKVD), but having certain special duties. The structure and personnel complement of these branches are different. Their insuguration in this or that region was dictated by the presence in a given region of some special population group, which could not be dealt with by the ordinary distint office of the NKVD and so a special "service" was required from the side of the NKVD. For example, within the moscow regional administration of the NKVD there was created such an operational branch in connection with the existence in the Serpukhov district of two or three settlements of German colonists (farmers).

The structure, personnel staff, and activities of the regional, city and district MKVD offices and those of MKVD operational branches will be treated in greater detail in following parts of this work.

Each organ of the MKVD, from the People's Commissariat down to the district office, has its own Party organisation. In the local suberdinate organs it is the "party group", in the sections - "party collective", in the important divisions and administrations there are "party committees", and in the People's Commissariat of the MKVD is the "Party Committee of the MKVD of the USER".

From the regional or republic agency of the MKVD, and up, the Party organs publish their own news-papers. The newspaper of the Party committee of the People's Commissariat, titled "The Chekist", was published by the central printing office of the MKVD, in Moscow, and its birth goes back to the time of Djerzhinsky, i.e. to

A. P. C. Park

Maria Maria

the early twenties. There are evidences that the first editor of this newspaper was Djershinsky bimself. The secretaries of the party expanisations, beginning with the "party counittee", are eccupied exclusively with their party work and are freed from any other duties. All lower level party secretaries work in the party erganisations and, at the same time, perform their basic duties in the ergans of the REVD.

In distinction from all other Soviet (i.e. governmental or public) ergenisations, the party ergens of the MKVD occupy only a secondary position. In view of the secret character of work of the MKVD, the local party organisations cannot give either any kind of directions or cannot control the activity of the whole MKVD or of activity of the whole MKVD or of activity of local party organs in the MKVD. Therefore, the sphere of activity of local party organs in the MKVD is limited to political-educational work (orientation of Gommunists in the spirit of Marxien-Leminism), carrying on political compaigns, as before the 1st of May, for example, etc.

3. Control Acondies

See the Glastes Ho 5

At the mement of its division into two People's Commissorists in 1941, the MEVD of the USSR in Moscow had the following control agencies (with their sub-agencies in all Union Republies and in the MEVD administrations of areas and regions):

- 1. Sentuch Administration of State Security (abbreviated GUGS HEYD Glavnee Upravionic Gosudarstvennei Besopasmesti
- 2. Chief Administration of Border Guards and Internal Troops (abbreviated: GUPYO MEYO MESR - Glavnes Upravionie Pogramichael Chrony 1 Veyek SEVD MESR);
- 3. Chief Administration of Comps of the MKYD (abbreviated) GULAS MKYD SSSR Glavnos Upravlania Lagarei MKYD SSSR);

- 4. Chief Administration of Militie and Criminal Police (abbreviated: GUM MEVD SSSR - Glavnos Upravlamie Milisii i Ugolovnogo Rosyaka MEVD SSSR);
- 5. Chief Passport Administration (abbreviated: GPU NKYD Glawnoe Paspertnoe Upravlenie NKVD SSSR) this agency was subordinated to the Central Administration of Milisia;
- 6. Chief Administration for Civil Status Registration (abbreviated: ZAGS NKVD SSER - Glavnos Upravlenie Zapisiń Aktov Grashdanskogo Sostoyania);
- E. Chief Administration of Fire Guards (abbreviated: UUPO EXVD SSER - Glavace Upravlenie Posarnoi Chrany);
- 8. Qhief Administration of High Ways Construction (abbreviated: "Glavehosdor MKYD" Glavenoe Upravlenie atroitelatva Shosseinyh i Bezrelsovýh Dorog MKYD SSBR).

In addition to these basic edministrations, central agensies of the MEVD included also the sport society "Lynamo" and a series of service administrations and agencies such as, for exemples administration of personnel, finance administration of the MKVD, "house-keeping" administration with the sanatorium section, which operates the sanstoris and rest house of the MEVD, etc. All these service administrations are organized according to the ordinary type of the similar institutions in other People's Commissariats of the USBR, and there is no especial interest in smalysing them. These service edministrations have sub-sections in all lower organs of the MKVD, but for simplification of the pieture, the internal sub-structure of these service agencies will not be explained in detail. There will be exceptions to this only in separate esses, where the work of a service organ of the MAYD has some sort of special interest, as for example: the administration of personnel or the finencial administration.

The structure, functions, and sphere of activity of each one of these basic administrations of the MEVD will be dealt with in detail in subsequent chapters of this work.

4. Higher MKVD Leadership

Was headed and directed by a People's Commissariat, the MKYD the so-called "Collegia", i.e. his deputies and their staff - secretaries, adjutants, etc. But in the MKYD in the years prior to the war, the collegia as such, that is the permanent council of the People's Commissar with his deputies and assistants (so called members of the collegia) did not play the same role as in other governmental organs. The authors do not even have information as to whether the collegia convened to undertake any decisions from the time of Yeshov (1957-58), - as, say, was the case in the time of Yagoda (early thirties), when it was openly declared: "this one was executed by sentence of the collegia of OGPU".

NKVD was substituted by many different agencies created gradually around the People's Commisser in connection with the increasing volume of the "work". Among their number were the agencies which comprise the so-called "administration of the People's Commisser".

Hee the diegram No 6

This directorate seems to have been a super organ of the NEVD and consisted of the following: the Commissar himself, his secretarist, four (4) deputies, a special agent-representative for the Commissar, a special tribunal for the commissar, an interim control council and a central engineering-construction bureau.

the chief of the Chief Administration of State Security (GUGB MEVD), and, at the same time, directs the regional and local MEVD administrations in the MEFRE. Sometimes he acts as the chief of the Moseow regional administration of the MEVD. Manely therefore, when the Moseow regional administration of the MEVD issues orders to ether MEVD regional administrations throughout the REFEE, this is always done under the authority of the deputy of the Feople's

Commisser, and not from the chief of the Messew regional MEVD administration (UMEVD-40).

This post was occupied a 1935-35 by Prekofiev; 1936-37 by Zakovaky, 1940-41 by Markulev, who after the war became the first minister of the MGS.

The Second Deputy of the Feople's Commisser. He directs the First Section (Perviy Otdel) of the MKVD - protection of the leaders, the Personnel Section, the Communication Section (Feldswyss), the house-keeping administrative offices, and the office of the administrative supervisor of the NKVD (the latter office performing the role of chief executioner of MKVD victims). Excluding the important problem of protection of the Eremlin and Belshevik leaders, this deputy is responsible solely for the inner and administrative problems of the MKVD itself. In 1939-41, Eruglov secupied this post; after the war he was appointed minister of internal Affairs of the USSR (MVD).

The Third Deputy of the People's Commisser. He directs the Chief Administration of Militia and Criminal Folice, the Chief Administration of Concentration Camps (GULAG), high ways and transportation administration, EAGS (administration of civil status registration) and other establishments of the MVD type. In 1959, Kabulov occupied this post, and after the marger of the commissariats, in July 1941, he was appointed deputy to Beria in commanding the combined HKVD.

The Fourth Deputy of the People's Commission. He directs to the Chief Administration of the border guards and internal troops of the MIVD, the administration of the border passport control points and all questions of co-ordination of activities of these administrations with other ministries of the USSR, primarily with the Ministries of Armed Forces and Forcign Trade, here must be noted that until 1937 the prisoner escort troops were under the joint jurisdiction of the MEVD and of the Commissariat of Defense. In 1937-38, Frinovsky occupied this post.

The Party Committee of the HKVD People's Commissariat. It escupies, as already stated above, a secondary position of importance. This is explained by the fact that, in addition to the confidential character of the HKVD work, the Commissar, himself, his deputies and the directors of the most important administrations are members of the higher party organs, up to the level of the Central Committee of the Party and the Pelitburo. Therefore, they are not obliged to account for their activities sefore the secretary of their party organisation.

In the lower level organs of the MKVD the party committees enjoy somewhat greater importance, but even there they do not have a shadow of that decisive role which is characteristic in all other Soviet establishments, offices, and undertakings. In this we see still one more confirmation of the fact that the MKVD is not a governmental but purely a party organ. We recall that in the Central Committee of the Party, itself, there is also a varty Committee (which runs mostly the party activities of the suxiliary personnel of that office) which play an identical secondary role.

Special Council. This is a higher personent judiciary ageney of the NKVD. According to its official status, the Special
Council consists of a the People's Commissar of Internal Affairs
of the USSE (MKVD), one of the secretaries of the Central Commitee of the All-Union Communist Party, and the Attorney General of
the USSE. But the Special Souncil convenes itself in this form
only for the examination of affairs of exceptional importance. Ordinarilly, it consists of less important officials of these three
agencies, seting with authority and on behalf of their superiors.

The MKVD itself ordinarily is represented in the Special Council (Osoboe Sovemenie) by some important official of the commissariet, but necessarily acting with the full authority and on behalf of the People's Commissar Atmos nimself. This person represents the investigative aspect of any given case. The second member of the Special Council is the representative of the Atterney General of the USSR - fulfilling the prosecutor's functions. Sometimes, and rather often, this role is being given to some senior.

member of the Military Prosecutor's effice which works very closely with the MKVD. The third permanent member of the council ordinarily is the secretary of the Party Committee of the MKVD, acting with full authority of the Secretary of the Central Committee of the Communist Party. According to this model are organised the Special Councils of each republican MKVD in the Soviet Union.

dealing with the activities of the so-called "troika's". Here we have only to state that the "Special Councils" and "troikas" close that victous ring, by means of which the MAVA becomes the supreme master of life and death of every Seviet citizen - it acts as a say, police officer, investigator, atterney and judge simultaneously!

Special agent-Representative for the records's Commissar. It is an official given a complete authority within a defined jurisdiction.

To this duty ordinarily is appointed one of the important operational officials of the central organs of the MEVD. His mission is to settle offenses of personnel of the commissarist itself. In all the republic and regional administrations of the MEVD there are also special agent-representatives who settle the offenses and other misdeeds committed by officials of the local NEVD organs.

The appearatus of the special agent-representative is composed of a special operating section, having 8-10 operative agent-representatives, all of whom are efficials of higher authority such as majors or lt.colonels of State Security. The effenses can be of a most varied nature: from reports of disciplinary offenses to accusations of belonging to the opposition or counter-revolutinary activities and plots. All cases of this type go through administrative channels of the MEVD and if the aspect of offense or crime is not fully apparent or is extraordinarily serious, then they are referred through the chief of the administration or section to the office of the special agent-representative for settlement. This special agent-representative presents his conclusion to the chief of the regional administration of the MEVD or even commissar his-celf for final decision.

Curiously easugh, according to Chekist customs, appeal to such conclusions and decisions is considered as "not ethical". The ressons of these unique "chekist ethics" are truly characteristics the investigations are conducted by the "comrades" themselves, the decisions undertaken by the chief of administration, equinst when nothing can be done. As to complaints to the Central Committee of the Party, they are out of question because they would immediately became known, and would result only in complicating the affair, in a scandul (with possible expulsion from the Party) and at any rate would result in dismissal from one's work and transfer somewhere to Archangel or Chelisbinsk, if not worse.

Inside the MKVD the special agent-representatives are either feared and avoided or the people attempt to curry favour with them by flattery and smell gifts; that is to say, within the MKVD, the relations of the rank and file Chekists towards the special agent-representatives are just the same as the attitude of the populace tion of the USSK towards all members of the MKVD.

when a special agent-representative, himself, gets in trouble, then all the other officials of the MAVD do not miss a chance to repay him for all former trouble occasioned them by this individual. Bo, in 1938, by order of the deputy commisser Zakovsky, the special agent-representative of the moscow region, hypolytov, was arrested. He was incarcerated in the Taganski prison, in the common cell block, and then was skot. During the time of the investigation the officials of the administration, who earlier had sought his favor, went in droves to the prison in order "to slap him in the face".

The office of the special agent-representative has no agent net of their own.

Secretarist of the People's Commisser. It has just the same structure and personnel, in general, as have other secretarists. of People's Commissarists (or Ministries) in the USSA, within the secretarist is a control commission for the verification of activities of various administrations and for the clarification of

pessible conflicts and misunderstandings among themselves. Linked with the Secretarist, also, is the effice for investigating petitions to the People's Commisser. In the building of the MKVD, itself, (ordinarily in the office for entry permits) just as in all other Soviet Commisserists and Ministries, hangs a box for petitions, in which each visitor "may" drop his "petition", the ambiguous term delicately applied to complaints in the USSA. In view of the conditions prevailing in the USSA in general, and particutarly in the MKVD, the existence of this office and of the boxes seems only a cynical frauds since who, would dark to make a complaint against the MKVD (especially to the MKVD, itself). The single type of "petitions" seem, therefore, confined to denonciations.

The Angineering-Construction Bureau. This bureau play as important role in the large-scale business entemprises, which are found in the undertakings of the MKVD. To this bureau come all technical inventions and projects, worked out by inmetes of compa and prisons, spread throughout the whole territory of the USUE. In special cases, this bureau has authority to free prisoners essential for its work. But in the majority of cases, those priseners who initiate important projects or inventions, simply are transferred from the jurisdiction of the prison or comp authority to the jurisdiction of this bureau, but still remain in the same prison or camp. Senetimes such prisoners are transferred to a special section of the prison. In such cases the prisoners can act as assistents in special sections, have automobiles, better provisions, but remain in strict isolation and fully out off from any link with the outside world. In such circumstances, for instance, was the well known designer of steen boilers, Prof. Kemsin, imprisoned in the early thirties at the trial of the "Promparty" ("Industrial perty"), and world renoused eviation designer A.A. Tupolev, arrested by the MKVD in 1937, and later freed during the war for copying the American B-29.

This bureau now comes under the jurisdiction of the MYD. There is reason to believe that the Soviet experimentations on stonic energy comes under the supervision of this body.

5. Punctions of MEYD Apparatus Components

By a more enumeration of components of the MEVD apparatus, one can see that there are two basis types of MEVD agencies, messly:

- a) Operative,
- b) Administrative or accommedative.

Operative sections (divisions or departments) and administrations(that is their official title - sall to your mind the signature on the page issued for foreign diplomats for entering the Red Square or the Krenlin) are such agencies of the MKVD, which directly fulfil the terroristic functions entrusted to them by the Eremlin eligarabs, - i.e. the Chief Administration of State Security (GUGB) in the MKVD system and the Ministry of State Security (MGB) nowadays. All other MKVD departments are only accomodetime, in that or other form, these operative organs. So, for example, the Administrative and Supply Department supplies the operative agencies with stationery, special lamps for making the eyes of the examinees smart, silk stockings - through special Chekist PX - "Co-operative for MKVD officials and troops", etc. The Financial Department pays out the salary to the officials and caployees, and gives out special sums for conspiratorial purposes according to the famous per.9. The Senitary Department enables the Chekists, wern out by terturing their victims, to pick up their health semewhere in the lummry of the former palece of prince Youssoupev in Coreis, in the Crises.

Similarly, the HEWD officials (we are considering here only those HEVD officials who are on the permanent staff) are divided into two estegories: operative officials (sotrudniki) and ordinary officials.

There are four grades of the MEYD operative officials:

a) Assistant operative agent-representative (in Aussians pomeshnik operativaege upolnomochemnege)

- b) Junior operative agent-representative (in Buselans mladahi operativni upelnomechemni);
- e) Operative agent-representative (in Massians operatival upolnomechanni);
- d) Senier operative agent-representative (in Ressians starshi operativni upelnessehumi)

In Russian, using the Chekist slang, the operative agentrepresentative is briefly called the "operapolasmochemniy"; for an ordinary Soviet citizen it is one of the most terrible words that he knows, for it rocks of arrest.

The assistant operative agent-representative is the lowest estegary of operative officials. Usually, all novices begin their server in this capacity. But if the newly admitted official has been previously graduated from one of the numerous HKYD schools, he is appointed straight away as junior operative agent-representative after the grade of the Senior operative agent-representative. After the grade of the Senior operative agent-representative the HKYD officials are maned in accordance with the denomination of the operative unit they are supervising; thus, the official supervising a branch, is called "the chief of the HKYD branch",— and official, engaged as an essistant chief of the administration, is called "Assistant Chief of the Administration", etc.

but practically all those titles are usually abbreviated, and in official correspondence they are written like that:
"you.mach. INO" (assistant chief of Percign Division) or "mach.HOSO (chief of the Administrative department). In the contificates of of the EKVD officials (a little black card made ofcordboard and doubled up) for the sake of complexy it is only mentioned : compale so-end-on is "assistant chief of the Division of the HAVD USER? or " section chief of UHKVD LO (Lemingred region administration of MEYD). But we will gibe more dotails later on.

Since 1937 the militery renks, as existing in the Bet Army, were also introduced in the HKWD in addition to the official titles. The committed difference was only in the fact that the scale of

- 24 -

military ranks in HEVD was always one or two grades higher than in the army. Thus, for instance, the sergeant in the MKVD, i.e. at non-commissioned officer, corresponded in reality to the second lightenent in the army both so to the rights and to the amount of selery. A lieutement in the SKYD (lieutement of State Security) equals to a captain of the Red Army, and & captain of State Security equals to an army colonel. In other words, here a certain discrimination of the officers of the Soviet army took place. They are morbidly gware of this feet, especially as the efficers of the Soviet secret police are much better provided for. This is one of the reasons for a certain hostility between the army and the HKYD units; for instance, you will never see army officer walking together with MKVD efficers. But this is exactly what the Soviet regime meeds so badly: two srmies exist in one country, jealously spying after each other, and such a situation is considered by the Krealin as the best guarantee against a military plet.

As to the methods of work of the MKYD from the organisetional point of view, so, of course, they differ in many respects from the usual methods, emong them the methods of military institutions. More than enywhere, the decision in a large part of coses is made resulting from personal or telephone conversations; these are, for the most part, such cases where secret organs are involved, where no traces have to be left, i.e. the meanest eases, often connected with personal interest of the officials etc. But even in this eitedel of secreey and conspiresy, the buresucresy has found a stable seat. The typical maladies of the Soviet burequerecy - the unwillingness to take ever the responsibility and the tendency of "reinsuring" enceelf (perestuahewks) by getting a written senction of the superiors, thrive also here. Not without reason, in the days of mass messecres, one of the most melicious masters in the ert of butchering, the deputy People's Commissar Zakovsky (executed in 1936) issued "orders about abolition of written erders" in a whole series of cases and especially insisted en the liquidation of "red tape and bureaucresy" in cases of condomnation to doath. He kineelf brought the treatment of such cases to the highest grade of simplicity, putting only six letters "NHS. Sok." (Typehaya more makesonia - highest degree of punishment - Lekevsky).

In the recent years the practice of guidence by means of the so called "eperative conferences" has been widely spread. Buck conferences, arranged according to administrative units (administration - division - section - branch), are usually informed about the important orders of the People's Commissar or about some other argent arrangements when immediate steps have to be taken. It means that any instructions of the MEVD leaders may be carried into effect on the vast territory of the whole Seviet Union literally in the course of several hours. Furing the regular, i.e. not so argent mandameness operative conferences the current problems are usually discussed, the instructions given, the reports heard.

The verbel instructions of higher authorities are called "settings" ("ustanovka"). Fritten orders usually confirm such settings, given formerly. Besides orders, local organs of the MKVD regularly get the so called "orientations" from the center. For the most part these orientations comprise data, received from the agents, about the activity of fereign spice and diversionists. These data may serve for the purpose of their detention if they appear on the territory of a certain MKVD agency. But there are also orientations of a general character; especially often the erientations of this kind are given to the local agencies and to the Border Guards, stationed on the frontiers of the Soviet Union. Such general orientations are called the informative ones.

The connection with local agencies is realized by means of correspondence, delivered by special armed courriers (field linices - "Feldevyes"), with the help of telephone net work of the MEYD, by means of usual telephone network (for mon-secret conversations), by telegraph (using code) and radio, through the special radio-network of the NEYD. It has to be mentioned, that the communication section of the NEYD does not work exclusively for its own ministry, but is also svailable for all governmental and party

organizations when secret letters have to be mailed. But as the USSR is afflicted by a "secretomania", it is not difficult to imagine the scope of work reserved for the MKVD in its capacity of letter-carrier.

From this point of view the MKVD is something like the secend Ministry of communications in the USSE; it is enough to say that even the diplomatic sail going abroad or coming from abroad is delivered by the courriers employed by the MKVD and not by the Soviet Foreign Office. The telephone connection is achieved through a special telephone network, both for local purposes and for the trunk line telephone. For this purpose special cables are used. Besides all the leading officials of the MKVD have in their effices the so-called direct line, connecting them with their immediate subordinates in other cities of the country (for example in Leningrad, Minsk, Kiev and in other capitals of Union Mepublics). One has to believe that now the direct line, connects elso the capitals of all Soviet satellites with Moscow, at least through the diplomatic missions of the USSE in these wountries.

The telephone station in Moscow is connected with the generel city network. The city telephone network is obliged to give an immediate connection with the NKVD switch-board. By automatic telephone exchange the BKVD headquarters in Moscow may be reached by setting up "K-6" or "0-4". The MIVD telephone net work is selfproviding and does not depend on the city. Besides all the leaders of central governmental institutions have a direct line connecting them with the MKVD. So, for exemple, in Stalin's secretariat an MEVD telephone apparatus has been installed bearing the number 37-61, but for his conversations with the People's Commissar and other prominent HEVD efficials Stalin uses normally the Kremlin automatic telephone exchange, the so-called "whirligig". As to the telegraph connection, the NEVD sends ciphered telegrams using the general line, but they are given in a special room reserved for governmental correspondence. The workers of this department are MEVD men, but for the make of conspiracy are on the payroll of the Ministry of Communications. Telegrams, sent by the MAYD, are

At Street

forwarded as governmental ones, according to the series "PK". As to the radio connection, more details will be given in the chapter dealing with the 2nd Special Division of the MKVD.

In conclusion we have to mention the MXVD archives where "cases" of all persons, of whom the MXVD has already avenged in that or other form, are kept (persons whose turn has not yet come are registered with the 1st opecial Division). These archives are used for reference, which may be necessary in connection with the inquest of some new case, and are situated in the cellar of House 2 in Lubjanks (old building). It includes the so-called reading-room where the NKVD officials may get acquainted with the cases, but for this purpose they must get permission from such a prominent worker as chief of the branch, sometimes even from the division chief. The Foreign division has its own archives which may not be used by employees of other MKVD agencies.

the Chief administration of State Security

Teaks and otructure

See the Diegrem No 7

The Chief Administration of State Security (GUGB SKVD SSSR) is the essential and most important agency of the enormous system of Soviet political terror, that has so many ramifications. Strictly speaking, the MKVD or MGS is the Chief Administration of State Security as such, for all other links of the MKVD system or "organs", if we use the Cherist alang, play only an sumiliary part. The "chastising sword" is the GUGB. Just this Chief Administration of State Security is responsible for discovery, isolation and liquidation of real and imaginary "enomies of the people", real and especially potential entagonists of Communical and its distatorial leadership. The GUGB Shief is always the First Deputy of the People's Commisser for Internal Affairs. After the war, the Chief Administration of State Security was transformed into an independent Ministry of State Security as we have already mentioned above.



The general structure of this administration did not suffer any considerable changes since the time of the DGPU, and it was accepted by the new Ministry approximately in the same shape. Anyhow, one has to consider, that, though the structure was preserved, the numeration of some divisions was changed in the course of time, and by the end of the thirties most of the GUGB divisions were remand as administrations, though the MKVD men continued to call these administrations divisions. This circumstance creates certain difficulties at the classification of the GUGB structure. Therefore the authors draw the attention of the readers at the possibility of some errors and inaccurations in this respect.

As far as we could find out, at the moment of transforming divisions into administrations (approximately beginning sith the year 1937) the G GB had the following attructure :

ist Special Division - a center or statistical operative recording of anti-poviet elements (ASE) and MAVL agents:

2nd Special Division - a center of operative technica; ist Division - protection of the leaders and of the Arealin;

2nd " - counter-intelligence (KmO);

3rd " - economic (EKO);

4th " - secret political (5:0);

5th " - "Osobiy Utdel" (UU) - spy work in the Army;

6th " - transport (TO);

7th " - foreign (INO);

8th " - prisons and places of detainment

Inquest Office of the GUGB

In the course of expansion and re-organization of the MAVD system, such divisions as counter-intelligence, economic, secret-political, foreign and transport were remand into administrations and their staff was correspondingly enlarged. The authors of this work have no information available as to the transformation of the "Osobiy Otdel" into an administration, though tasks and

functions of this division "escomedating" the Amy and the Mavy immensely increased for the last 10-15 years. Further, both in the text and in the album of schematic diagrams the following denomination will be used for the GUGB central agencies:

Counter-Intelligence administration (KBU), Meanonic administration (EKU), Secret-Folitical administration (BFU), Foreign administration (IMU) and Bransport administration (TU), but the term Special Division ("Osobly Otdel" or "OO") will not be changed. To complete the picture, the accomposating agencies such as Maintenance Administration and Financial Administration, with their branches, are shown on the diagrams, but no snalysis of their work will be made as they have no essential meaning for the understanding of characteristic features of the MKVD, and their structure, upon the whole, is following the same pattern as its leaves in all the other People's Commissariats of the UboM.

with the exception of the first and the second opecial bi- / visions and of the 1st Division of the GUGB, the numeration of divisions and administrations will not be mentioned either in the text or in the album of diegrams, as the May. Frequently changed the numeration for the sake of conspiracy, as is was mentioned before. The last change in the numeration was made by the transformation of the Gud into the Mub. As a result of the above mentioned facts, different materials which were made available to the authors, were often of controversial nature. According to one information, the Secret-Political administration enich formerly had number 4, received in the MuB the name of the 3rd administration. Another source indicates that the title of the 3rd administration was reserved for the Counter-Intelligence administration, which was formerly called the 2nd administration. Approximately the seme picture may be observed in the cases of the Foreign and Economic administrations. Under such circumstances the applying of numeration of administrations would only lead to misunderstandings and disorientation of the reader.

The authors are fully aware of the fact that the giving up of the use of numbers for denominating divisions and administrations, will be a serious defect of this work, especially as: approximately since 1937, all divisions and administrations of the MKVD-MGB are usually designated only by numbers in the whole official correspondence for the sake of conspiracy. In the certificates of the MKVD officials the name of the division where they are working, is never given.

The general features of the structure of administrations that were part of the GUGB, were not changed in the last fifteen years; the administrations of the MGB are based upon almost the same scheme that was made out for the corresponding divisions of the OGPU. The difference lies only in the scale, 1.e. the adsinistrations of the AGB are more cumbersome and have many more employees than the OGPU divisions. But the number of people on staff is not constant in that or snother administration. Such stell may be either increased or diminished depending on the fact, which administration has the largest portion of work at the present moment, or, according to the picturesque expression of lagods, where the "GPU God" is sested, i.e. the terrorization of which part of the poviet population is more important from the point of view of the Politburo at a certain time. Do, for example, during the first Pive-year plan and collectivisation the residence of this "GPU God" was the Boonomic division, after the surder of kirov he moved to the Becret-Political division, before the wer his presence was distinctly felt in the Foreign administration, but during the war he moved again to the "Jsobiy Jtdel" and to the Counter-Intelligence administration. In such cases , some of the personnel of edministrations and divisions less important at this year ried of time, are transferred to that administration on which the Particular attention of the Politburo is concentrated at the moment.

In special cases separate administrations may be temporarily joined in order to fulfil this or another special task set by

the Politburo, but the structure of each remains unchanged in the principal features. So, for example, during the war a special administration "Salkan" ("Smortj shplomen" - death to spice) was formed. Many foreign observers erroneously took this summistretion for the Counter-Intelligence eds.nistration of the Red Army General staff. In reality it was only a union of the "Osobiy Otael" with the Counter-Intelligence administration of the NKVD under the general direction of the Leputy Feople's Commissar of the AKVD and Chief of the "Usobiy Stdel", General-Colonel V.C. Abakuzov who during the war was Gilectly supordinated to Stalin. as People's Commissar for befence. Because of this, a mistage sas made abroad in connecting the "Sakhbb" with the General staff of the med Army. After the resignation of Stalin of his functions of reorie's Commissar for belence, "Skench" was liquidated and the sch .nistr/tions of the MkVD (now MUS), out of which it was formed, resumed their previous structure with only some minor Changes.

neral structure of the Good have of the back (1999-1940), the second at the Linguist No 7) -

1st upecial bivision - Registration of agents and operative recording of anti-soviet elements;

2nd special Division - Operative technics;

1st Division - protection of leavers and of the krealing

KRU = Counter-Intelligence edministration (former 2nd wivimiom):

SPU - Secret-Political administration (former 4th or 3rd Division):

EKU - Economic administration (former 3rd or 4th Livision);

00 - "Usobiy Otadel" or Special Division (former 5th Liv.); murbeillance in the ked Army;

TU - Transport administration (former oth Division);

INU - Foreign administration (former 7th Division);

Administration of prisons and places of Setention - (former Sth Division)

Inquest Division - (former Inquest Office),

The authors wern their readers from confusing the Transport administration of the GUGB ("Transportnoe upraviance GUGB NKVD SSER) with the Administration of Highways of the NKVD ("Glavahosdor NEVD SSSR"), which will be considered in the later chapters of this work. The first of these administrations is concerned with mainteining of State Security rules on the rail read and water transport, while the second one controls the auto roads and highways as the NKVD supervises them also from the technical point of view.

CHAPTER IX

OF THE GUGS NAVO USAN

Distres No 5

The terroristic activity of the MKVD inside the Soviet Union is based upon the registration and classification of two elements of the Soviet population: 1) MKVD agents, 2) the so-called anti-soviet element ("ASE" - according to the MKVD abbreviation).

The first form of recording is called the agent-net registration ("uchet agentury"), the second one - the operative registering ("operachet"). The recording of agents and "Ank" is
the concern of the 1st Special Division of the Guus akvu, anose
subdivisions or branches are to be found in all territorial agensies of the MkVL. The work of the 1st Special Division of the
GUGB is closely connected with the Central Archives of the MkVD,
where all the cases that have been dealt with by the Goviet punitive organs since the time of Cheka may be found on the files.
But the work of the Central Archives is not doubled by the 1st
Epecial Division, as the main task of the latter is the service
to the operative organs of the MkVD in their current work.

The structure of the 1st Special Division is very simple. In the People's Commissarist (now Ministry) as such, as well as in all territorial agencies, it consists only of two sectors:

1) Recording of agents, 2) Mecording of anti-boviet element "ASE". These sectors may be considered as independent divisions and are subdivided into sections or branches, according to the character of the contingent of the population that is being registered or is subject to such a registration. Besides, in both sectors there are statistical sections that have to deal only with general numbers; general number of agents according to different meannels—tures, number of "ASE" etc.

10 to 10 to

The "eperative-statistical" section of the second sector systematises the figures according to the summary ("svodka") compiled by all local operative agencies of the MAVD about the "political-moral" frame of mind of the population and about its reaction to these or other events inside the USSR and abroad. If no perticular events took place, the "operative-statistical" section only systematises the regular summaries of the operative agencies, and on their besis compiles reviews for the whole territory of the USSR and then turns to other problems: for instance, compiles a summary based on the reports of the local agencies of KRU about the anti-Soviet opinions, expressed by the former sussien emigrants who had returned to the USSR. A selection out of these summaries is regularly forwarded to the Central Committee of the Communist Party for the information of corresponding party organs.

DECKATIVE RECORDING

Sperative recording or the so-called special recording of the anti-Seviet element is the concern of the 2nd sector of the flat opecial Division GUGB NKVD Unck. Its tentacies embrace a huge number of the Loviet citisens and it is based on the individual card of special record, that is on the file for every person who is under suspicion of the MKVD.

All persons, registered with have, are divided into categories, or, using the MKVD terminology, have their "tinta". The corresponding category or "tint" is entered on the registration card of the recorded person; so, the registration card of a person, who uses to relate political with is marked by letters "AKE, put in the corner - it means that the "tint" of this person is "AG"-anti-Moviet. The number of these categories or "tinta" is very great. The basis ones are a

- AS anti-Soviet element;
- B "bielly" "white" (former participents of the white movement in 1917-1921);

- PR "pretimit" entegonist. (This category comprises members of former political parties in the pre-revelutionary Russia. The party membership is indicated by putting after this "tint" some additional letter; so, "PH/M2, or "PH/H" -will denot in the first case former "Menshevik", in the second former "Meer" bocislist-Revolutionary.
- KR Counter-revelutionary;
- TS "teerkevnik" a men connected in some way with the church. Hesides priests, this group comprises all believers who are active in their religious communities and in church matters. The sectarians (dissenters) are not recorded under the "tint" To, for they are forming a separate group.
- g "sektanty" sectarians (dissenters). From the operative point of view this group is considered equal to PR (antagonists).
- P "poystantsi" insurgents. This group comprises all persons who took part in any rebellion at the time of Civil *er, military communism and collectivisation periods, and also persons who have shown seditions tendencies in later periods.
- H nationalists of all shades.
- SI "svyen s inostrentsemi" connection with foreigners (personnel of foreign embassies, exchange of letters with relatives abroad, etc.)
- gng "shpion" spice. This group includes all persons suspected of expionage on the basis of their correspondence, connection with relatives abroad, etc. It represents, so to say, the next stage of natural development after the person was registered as "SI".
- 7 terrorist.
- D diversionist.
 - Prev. "previye" the rightists. Members of the right exposition in the Party (Bukharinites).

Tr. - The Trotakyite. The same symbol is used for the adherents of Zimoviev and other participants or supporters of the left opposition.

This list of recorded "tints" is in no case complete and it may be admitted that, in the years of war, it was made considerably longer by adding such new "tints" as F- fesciat, it - adherent of Hitler, B - "benderist" (Ukrainian nationalist), Vl. - "vlasevete" (member or adherent of the Vlassov movement), was - "ulskopoklennik" - servility to the bourgeoisie etc. But even the list, given above, shows what a large part of the population is under the constant supervision of the MIVD. At the same time, it also shows how wide spread is the struggle of the people of the USDA against the Soviet regime. Together with all armestees and millions of persons who are being "punished", the alla imminently remind stalin of the fact that his regime is the most terrible but, at the same time, the weakest in the whole world, for it is opposed by the huge mass of the population. All those persons, on whose cards the symbol of their "tint" has been drawn, are automatically set under a supervision of the MKVD egents.

Once more it has to be repeated that, in case of a corresponding directive from the rollituare, all persons sharing that or another "tint" are arrested, and their further fate depends not on their real guilt but on the "general line of the Party" for the present period of time.

Date, gathered by the agents during their watch (during "remrabotke" - "elaboration" in the Chemist terminology) of a certain person who has been recorded with the special MAVD registration, gives a start for building up a "case".

"Cases" are divided into the following groups:

1. "Agenturneys resrabotks" (agent elaboration) which is officially called "agenturneys delo" (agent case), and embraces a group of persons sharing the same views, who are tied together by periodic encounters, conversations or personal triangenip.

SCHOOL IN THE STREET

2. "Dele formuliar" - (service list case), where only one principal person who is under suspicion ("figurant" according to the Chekist terminology) is being "eleborated", and all his commentions are being recorded only to complete the case. In most cases the "service list case" is seemer or later transformed into an "agenturacye dele", or (provided the "figurant" shows any setivity) leads to his arrest.

The everwhelming majority of cases of "figurents" who are being "elaborated" by the operative MAVD organs, are on the records as "service list cases". Under normal conditions, the group cases are comparatively rarely recorded on the files of the 1st Special Division.

- 3. "U-D" ("Webstaye diele") "keyistration case" is brought egainst less active "figurants". Usually as a basis for such a case serves some instruction from the center ordering to make records about a certain group of population. For example, in 1935, after the customary purge in the party, a considerable percentage of the so-celled "hangers on" ("primanovahihaya") was excluded from the party, as being not fit for this high privillage. On the ground of a special secret instruction all such persons were registered as "U-D" in those cases when they were not secused as Trotakyists, or when their ask registration cards had not been previously marked case with some other "tint". Later on, following a new special secret directive, a compaign of liquidating the people registered within this group, was carried on, and ... par.169 of the Criminal Code of the MSJUN (ill-intended fraud, or forgery) was incriminated against them.
- A. "Literace diele" "Lettered eace" is usually concerned with a certain industrial or some other object. This case includes all lists of persons on the staff of this enterprise, different data of official consiscions, correspondence with trusts, acts of audits, materials of Party purges, different declarations, encaynous statements and other casual materials up to the infermation that this enterprise does not fulfil the program of the output, reports about the breaking out of fire, about danages etc.

All this is completed by a special list of persons, included in which this "Lettered Case". Such a special list usually does not show persons that have already been recorded according to some "tist". Usually this list is composed of the names of persons, about when the MKVD has some material of small importance, i.e. ananymous denunciation, expulsion from the Komsomol because of the loss of the membership card, or even some suspicion. All tiese persons are specially recorded and registration cards are made out marked with the symbol "i-D" ("Literacye diele"). This category is considered to be the least ective one, still the presence of a card, marked with "i-D" on the files of the 1st Special Division, is already like a brand and puts certain restrictions for the person concersed both in his social life and his sctivity. For instance, if such a person is casually included in 'a list of guests to be present at a session of the Supreme Boviet of the USE (and the names of such guests are invariably checked with the special registration files) he will never get the invitation card for the session.

The center for special recording of anti-Soviet elements in the 2nd sector of the 1st special division of the GUUB MAVD USSR (now MUB USER). In its hands detailed statistical data as to "tints" and as to the spreading of these tints in republics, regions and districts of the Soviet Union are concentrated. Usually, besides collecting statistical data, the 1st Special Division makes out special geographical maps according to the "tints".

This enables the leadership of the recopie's Commissariat at any time to orient themselves in directing the work of the MXVD agencies in the whole USSR and in separate republics and districts.

not only the "tint", but rether detailed data about the recorded person are marked on the registration card. (See appendix).

In the local subordinate agencies of the MKVD the registration
card of the recorded person is filled out in three copies; one
copy is forwarded to the agency that is conducting the "elaboration"
the second one is sent to the 2nd Special Division of the Regional
administration of the MKVD - to control the "elaboration", and the

third one goes to Moscow, to the 1st Special Division of the conter, statistical section.

Statistical records of the 1st Special Division of the Poople's Commissariat and of the 1st Special Divisions in local HEVD (AGB) administrations are kept in absolute secret. According to an order of Levrenty Beris, issued in 1940, the chiefs of regional administrations were prohibited to give any information in this respect even to the secretaries of the regional committees of the Comunist Party, who could obtain these date only through the Central Committee of the Party. For this purpose, the chief of the 1st Special Division in Moscow had to adapt and filtrate thesenets , and forward them to the Central Committee of the All-Union Communist Party only when they acquired special wording. It was well known in the MAVD circles that this order was provoked by the fact that new secretaries of the regional committees of the Bolshevik party, who took over this work after the "wreat rurge" and who were often recruited, in this period of time, from the MKVD men, in a series of cases made such demands to the chiefs of the regional manufateess NKVD administrations and received the wished information. This is a clear illustration of the fact, that the MKVD does not reveal its secrets even to official representatives of the ruling party, with the exception of its highest organs.

In the NKVD (MGS) regional administrations the staff of the 1st Special Division is divided between two branches (operative recording and registration of agents). The employees reof these branches enjoy the rights of the operative agents— representatives and their assistants, but in fact they are functionaries, clerks and statisticions.

In addition to the data of special records, all operative agencies of the HEVD-MGB are sytematically and regularly compiling summaries about the frame of mind of the bread messes of the Soviet people and their reaction to certain events inside the Soviet Union and abread. These summaries are forwarded to the

"operative-statistical" branch of the 2nd sector of the 1st Special Division GUGB HEVD for the purpose of systematising the pieture of moral-political state of the population throughout the whole Seviet Union. Here is one of speciments of such a summery: efter the governmental decree about the abolition of the retioncard system in the USSR, all the regional MAVD administrations through their operative agencies collected reports about "megative attitude in connection with the decision of the Party and Government ment to abolish the retion-card system". These summeries depict in short the character of statements made by separate persons. giving their "tints". The most characteristic facts are reported to the chief of the regional NKVD administration and certain measures are taken - up to the arrest. But this is not the most importent thing. Much more essential is that the chief of the saministration, having received the statistical picture of the frame of mind of the population in his region, sends a copy of these figures, in the form of a ciphered telegram or radiogram, to the "operative-statistical" branch of the center, in Moseow, where these materials are summarized and forwarded to the MAVD People's Commisser for a report to Polithuro, or simply for his information.

This double system of constant operative recording of "timts" and regular summaries about the frame of mind of the population fully enables the leadership of the MKVD-MSS to dispose the forces of their network as it is needed by the congrete situation in the country. In fact, it is nothing else but a constantly active and very intensive reconnoitering of forces and disposition of the enemy, where their own people is meant under this term. This is the principal difference between the sytem of the operative recording in the MKVD-MGS and the similar methods used by police agencies of all other countries of the world. The matter is not only in the scale, and not in the fact that in the USSR the punitive organs carry out a special registration of such elements of the population, who in no case could be classified as "eriminals" in any other country of the world.

of all in its preventive character, i.e. the registration card of the MKVD-MGB is filled out for a certain citizen of the Seviet Union not because he or she committed any crimes or offences, but only because the personnel of the Soviet punitive organs committees him, or her, to be able to commit such crimes or offences in the future.

The second peculiarity may be seen in the fact that a registration card, once filled out for a certain person, is never destroyed even if the "tint", merked on it, is not substantiated or is a result of an obvious calumnity. The sen may be acquitted in the court, may be fully rehabilitated by the party organs, but the files of the MKVD-MGB will brand him for ever. The all-union Communist party and its punitive organs do not apply the action of the "term of limitation" to the actions of their pelitical antagonists, and the MKVD-MGB may at any time resume the persecution of any person for actions performed twenty or even thirty years: ago. If this happens, it is only necessar; to "removate" to some extent the case of suchs person, and this is one of the main tasks of the Soviet operative recording. This is what is called the "record of the figurent's activity".

The third, and may be the most essential, peculiarity of the Soviet operative recording is that its data are never checked up by anybody else. The Commission of the Party Control in Measow may check the activity of the MEVD-MGB, but there does not extat such an organisation in the whole USSR that could check the equity of data, filling in millions of registration eards in the numerous recording sectors of the punitive organs, scattered all over the country. The lack of "vigilance" is severely punished in the USSR, but the Bolshevist rulers will mever blane their punitive organs for the oversealousness in this respect.

The People's Commissarist as well as the local REVD administrations strictly stick to the principle that in the ist Special Division a certain employee occupies himself with one definite "tint" and does not get in touch with work and data of other

branches. The efficials of other MKVD divisions and administrations have no access to the files of the 1st Special Division and they can contact this agency only through their secretarists, which are directly subordinated to higher MKVD organs.

The operative-statistical recording is the basis for all political and operative work of the whole complicated network of NKVD-MGB agencies, that apreed their sticky cobseb over the whole country. If any political discontent of anti-communist nature srises in the country, the geographical files of the operative recording will immediately show where this "tint" was nost active for some time past, and where the principal, or nost dangerous from the Kremlike point of view, center of such a movement is lecated. All HEVD forces will be disposed there, the agents among persons of this "tint" will be recruited and thus the discontent will not be allowed to turn into a direct resistance movement.

The secess to the map of "tints" is free only for a very limited circle of the most prominent officials in the Soviet secret police. Neither its whereabouts nor even the fact of its existence is known to the majority of the NAVD men. Probably, from time to time this map is shown to Stalin. It is even more probable that he has either a cepy of this map, or his own map which has been compiled by a special "NAVD" inside the NAVD — by a Special Sector of the Central Committee of the Party.

In the days of wer the "Generalissimo" made his decisions as to the plan of military operations, bending together with Nhu-kov and Vassilevsky ever a secret "operative map" showing the dislocation of Hitler troops. This map was drawn for his by the 4th Administration of the General Staff. In the maps of peace he examined in the same way, together with Beria, Merkulov and Krug-lov, a map showing the dislocation of anti-communist activists among the peoples of Muscia - the map drawn for him by the 1st Special Division ...

This system of constant and secret "operative recording" makes possible for the MKVD-MGB to leave to its mercy the whole of the population in the UdSR. The MKVD-MGB registers every libel.

every anonymous denunciation end, without a special order from the Kremlin, does not show either to its victims or to the court, on which data its actions were based.

A real liberation of the peoples of the USSE from Bolaheview will be completed only at the moment when, after the liquidation of Chekists and their Eremlin bosses, all files and arshives of the Soviet punitive organs will be destroyed.

Recording of Agents

if the operative recording of ASA (enti-boviet elements) is basic for the distribution of forces and direction of actions of the Boviet punitive organs, the work with agents, their recording and classification is the principal element in the operative work of all MKVD-MGB agencies. The constant tension inside the country and the fact, that the Bolshevist potentates are fully aware of the hatred they have inspired to all strate of the population, led to the creation of a mass net of MKVD agents in the USSR. This net consists of many millions of secret agents belonging to different divisions and administrations of boviet punitive organs.

It may be supposed that the principle of the German counterintelligence service, siming at creating a possible wider net of
agents, was borrowed to a certain extent by the Setting up of A
Soviet network of agents. But the Soviet system proceded considerably further, and a network of mass agents was set up not only
by the Counter-Intelligence edministration of the MIVD, but also
by the rest of its edministrations and divisions, first of all by
the Secret-Political edministration, "Osobiy Otdel", Economic administration and Transport edministration.

The system of recruiting, classifying and recording the agents in all these administrations is almost the same, though first of all it is worked out by the counter-intelligence administration. Still it would be erremedus to refer all the work of agents to the counter-intelligence branch, as it is done in all other countries of the world, as for as the Soviet Gevernment

leads a constant war not so much against external enomies as against peoples of its own country. The essential forces of the Soviet punitive organs are just concentrated on this internal struggle with the population.

The statistical and operative recording of agents employed by all MEVD-MGB agencies is the ceasers of the 1st Sector of the 1st Special Division of GUGB in Moscow and corresponding offices of republican, regional and area administrations of the HIVD. All territorial and specialised egencies of the MKVD-MGB fill in special registration cards for all their agents (see Appendix). Copies of these cards are forwarded to the files of the 1st Special Division in Moscow (1st bester) for further elassification and statistical recording. This is the center of recording for agents of all MEVD-MGB organs throughout the Soviet Union. and therefore it is more convenient to make an emlysis of principles of the classification of egents and the work with them, in connection with the analysis of structure and field of operation of the 1st Special Division of the GUGD MKYD USSE (now MGB USSE). But, of course, it does not meen that the recruiting of agents and the work with them is the concern of this MKVD branch. This practical work is carried out by different operative agencies and depends on the tasks they have to fulfil. The 1st opecial Division of the Center, in Moscow, and its local branches are concerned only with the operative recording of agents.

Mente

There are several grades of agents, differentiated by their field of operations, compenses and their significance in the MKYD-MGB system. The principal categories of the agents are the following :

Usual abbreviation:

- 1. Resident
- nga

2. Agent

- *85*
- 3. Epocial agent
- "ap/ag"
- 4. Agent of internal observation "eg/V" ("Vautreanly" internal)

5. Secret informer

- "s/e" ("oswiedemitelj" im-
- 6. Secret informer for lodging "80/K" ("kwartira"-lodging)
- 7. Tenent of conspirative quarters Ch/EK ("Chosycin"-tenent)

These categories of agents have the following peculiarities:

1. Resident. Is usually member of the Communist Party or a former Chekist, failing this - a Komsonol. He may be also picked out of capable and reliable informers, but he must invariably have practical experience in conspiracy and agent's work. Carrying on his usual official tasks, i.e. being the Chief of the Hersonnel Section of some works, Assistant Commander of a military unit as to political work ("pompolit"), such a man is at the same time an HAVD man, "accommodating" this industrial or military object, i.e. supervising it.

A special personal file is kept for every resident with samifold characteristics and check-ups, including a check-up with the files of the 1st Special Division of the regional administration and center. In this file are noted and checked all his connections and acquaintances, whereby his family and all his relatives are checked in the most careful way. Some anti-poviet statements, i.e. any critical remarks on the address of the Seviet government made by persons, connected with this man or their fatormer social background, can be no obstacle for this man to be appointed resident. But if the registration cards of the persons connected with him, are marked with such "tinta" as "Shr" (apy), "Trave" (terrorist), "KR" (counter-revolutionary), "Frave" (rightists), or "Tr" (Trotskyist) - he cannot be appointed resident.

A resident is connected with a "network" of 5-8-12 agents and secret informers, when he receives ascording to a special time-table, instructs them and collects their information. Unly the resident is usually paid for the work. As to the "network", this or another method of compulsion is used, and people work

out of fear for the consequences of not fulfilling their obligations, which these secret agents and informers have signed in the MKVD agency that recruited them.

Residents are future official employees of different MEVI-MGB agencies; There are no specifications as to the terms of their work as residents.

2. Agent. Usually secret informer, but invariably belonging to that or another registered group of "tinto", having commettions with the ABE-group. So, for instance, if an agent is meeted for the "elaboration" of the Trotakyists, a Trotakyist is picked out for this work, and especially such a Trotakyist who is in full confidence of the group to be elaborated. The agent is recruited with the help of some concrete compromising material and invariably is brought to a stadium where he has to make his decision, having been told - "MKVD work or prison!". Operative expenses of the agent - for trips, entertaining his friends, esc. - are usually paid. Sometimes agents receive some periodical rewards for their work. But upon the whole, agents work out of fear, i.e. trying to save themselves and their families from possible reressions by loyal apping for the agent.

Ments according to the character of the tasks they have to fulfil, though these categories are not mentioned in the operative recording. The first group is composed out of specialists in some branch of national economy or industry, such as chemists, metcallurgists, building engineers etc. The task of these agents is to control the work of some enterprise or trust and to expose all elements of sabotage, ereckage etc.

The second category of egents-specialists includes pickpockets, burglars, specialists for opening safes and other highlyskilled criminals. These agents-specialists fulfil various tasks.
For instance, an agent-representative has to make a secret perquisition (called "vyemka" by the Chekists) in the home of a
"figurant" whose "elaboration" is in process. For some reasons
this perquisition is appointed for 17,00, but usually the ewner

him in some way so that he does not see the agent-representative making search in his room. For this purpose a specialist-heoligan is summoned. He waits for the "figurent" someoners in the street end, using some kind of pretent, attacks and bests him. A seandal breaks out, both are brought to a police-station, the case is investigated for 2-3 hours and at last the victim of the assault is set free. In the meantime the parquisition is brought to an end. The agent-representative rings up the police station and the agent-bandit is set free. Though this method is very mean and aynical, nevertheless it is rather often applied by the HXVD mean.

The first group of special agents work without pay and exclusively under computation, but the agents-criminals get their rewards. The same group comprises cheats, prostitutes, jugglers etc. These "useful services" of the criminal underworld to the operative agencies of the MEVD are partly responsible for the fact that these "socially-close" elements are granted different privileges and advantages in the prisons and camps, and they are even promoted to different administrative posts, including that of camp commenders. The USER is the only country in the world where bufglers and murderers commend the imprisoned professors, engineers, actors and writers.

A Arent of internal observation. This is a non-active agent recruited from the immediate environment of the "figurent" (very often from his own family), but who is not registered with the "tint", marking the registration card of the "figurent". As such an agent may serve the sister of a Trotakyist, who is in permanent contact with him and knows or may know more about him them anybody else or may help in carrying out some measures that would lead to the activation of his "elaboration". Such persons are recruited after a very careful study, and usually some very important material, mostly of private character, is applied; the fear of revelation: forces these persons to work for the MAVD. Thus, these people/ are simply victims of blackmail. If such material is not evailable, it is prepared artificially. Very eften such a

sandidate for an agent is persuaded that he must work in this branch for the sake of safety of the very person, who has to be the object for this special observation.

Per instance, the sister of the "figurest" is summoned to the MKVD, where forged papers are shown to her while she is being told, that the MKVD agencies are sware of the fact that somebody wants to recruit her brother or helf succeeded in doing this. But this is not so important, they say, - "we know that your brother is a good man, but we must take held of the persons, who want to entangle your brother into their dirty meshes. You must help us in this repect for the sake of safety of your brother" ... The unfortunate woman gives her consent and, not knowing herself, helps the MKVD to ruin her own brother. Such plotting led and leads to many terrific personal tragedies, but the people "who are guarding the conquests of the revolution" are not at the least embarssed by them.

The work with such kinds of agents is very delicate and requires a lot of test and shrewciness. Therefore, it is usually entrusted to experienced operative agents-representatives or even deputy chiefs of the branches. Such agents are usually rewarded for their work, but not necessarily with money or material goods. A frequently applied form of reward is a promise to facilitate the fate of relatives or intimates of such an agent.

5. Secret informer. This is the most widespread and the less specialised species of MKVD-MGB agents. When millions of agents of the Soviet secret police are mentioned, one refers just to this category. Secret informers are recruited by the MKVD-MGB organs out of all strate of population, whereby no distinction of age and sex are made. According to a secret instruction, issued at the times of Yegode (1934-1937), only children below the age of 12 cannot be recruited for this work - they do not stick to camapiracy. As to all the rest of the population of the Soviet Union, the MKVD-MGB agencies consider it to be a gigentic reservoir for recruiting secret informers. This recruiting is usually done by means of blackmailing, threats, bullying and, in less frequent cases, mostly when young people are conserved, by

influencing their petriotic feelings.

As stronge as it may seen, but directly this siserable figure of a secret informer, terrorised and despising bimself, is essentially supporting Stalin's dictatorship. Experience has shown that Stelin censes trust either workers or peasents, or army, or even his party - all hate him and would secrifice all to overthrow his edious tyranny, he can fully rely only upon this miserable secret informer. Of course, the latter also hates "the beloved leader", and may be even more than anybody else, but he hes nowhere to go - he is entangled in the MAVD mesues, he comstantly walks with a loop around his neck and therefore, even against his will, he is forced to carry out the orders of his tormentors. There ere millions of secret informers - they are recruited smong workers, party nembers, intellectuals, collective fermers, students, mensioners, housewives. The overwhelming sejority of them work out of fear and do not get any results. Their exact number is unknown, but legion is their

Secret informer for lodging. This special catgory of secret informers has only the task of controlling who enters. a certain house or lodging, when, how long he stayed and what happened then in the lodging. Besides that, such an agent way be entrusted with getting letters, things etc., from a person, whe lives close by and is "elaborated" by the MKVD. This category is cludes first of all housemesters and house-managers, whose duty is to notify the MKVD in a regular way about all events, happening in their houses. But frequently some lodgers of "ecomunal" i.e. comman lodgings are recruited for this purpose, especially housewides and pensioners who spend much time in their lodgings. In many cases domestic servants are recruited to apy after their masters. They are usually paid for this kind of service.

lodging are frequently used by the recruiting of these agents. In some cases such agents get a reward, but in most cases they give their information with the wish to do an ill turn to their

neighbour who lives in a better room, has better food, tunes in the radio late at night etc. Seviet conditions of life create ideal grounds for recruiting such agents, but all their information has to be carefully filtrated, for it often bears strong traces of personal feelings.

2. Tenent of a Conspiration Quarters. Usually he is a Consumist, a Konsomel er at any rate a person who was well checked up. The principal requirement - limited circle of sennections (all of them have to be checked up) and a lodging, suitable for conspirational meetings with residents or agents. Such a tenant is regularly peid. All members of the family have to sign a promise of silence. If there are any children, conspiratorial quarters cannot be established.

Every operative worker must have at least two such conspiratoral questers; one of them may serve for meetings with agents and informers, the other - only with residents (for the sake of conspiracy). Usually for meeting, agents two or even three lodgings are evailable, but agents suspicious or even dangersus as to double-dealing are usually seen in hotels. As a rule, operative workers and residents see no agents at home and do not conduct any work there.

General John R. Deen, describes in his book "The Strange Alliance" some of his meetings with leading officials of the MAYD Foreign administration, General-Lieutenant P.M. Pitin and Major-General A.P.Ossipov. The purpose of this meeting was to establish a working arrangement between the American O.S.S. and the Soviet Intelligence agencies. The American general was greatly pushed by the fact that these two leading workers of the Soviet secret intelligence never met him at the same place twice and always took the greatest processions when arranging these meetings. Once the driver of the MEVD car who had to bring him to this meeting, arranged a true race along the Moseow streets trying to lose the private car of the American general, the Bussian driver of which was following the MEVD car at the heels.

Coviously in this case Fitin and Cosiper did not went to give up the usual principles of their work, and besides they prebably had instructions to arrange these meetings without any supervision by the agents of the "external observation" (1-EE) of the 2nd Special Division of the GUGS HEVD and "SHENDER" administration, whose agent was, probably, was the private Reseion driver of the American general. The circumstances under which these meetings took place greatly surprised the American general, but they were typical for the NEVD principles of work. In this case Fitin and Cosipov met their American counterparts under the same circumstances, as an average NEVD operative agent-representative meets his residents and agents. There can be no doubts that all this had been done deliberately and after some serious discussion in the highest quarters of the NEVD, that was the secret aim of all these tricks — is hard to say, but there had to be one.

Recruiting of Agents

As a rule, the recruiting of an agent is preceded by checking with data of the 1st Special Division, and, in more important cases, with files of all operative divisions and their special exchives. Enquiries are invariably sent to : 1) piece of birth - about the social origin of the parents and their background;
2) MKVD agency, "escondating" the region where the candidate lives; 3) MKVD agency, "escondating" the industrial or any other object, where the candidate works. Besides that secret characteristics of the candidate are demanded from the local party organisation (this is very often eamouflaged so as if these characteristics are abbed for by the regional military commissariat, police-station etc.), then a "setting" ("ustanovka"), i.e. checking up is made in his place of residence - usually through house managers, house-masters and other "agents for lodging".
All these data are used as basis for a "Deport for recruiting"

The recruiting of a resident must be sanctioned: in regional administrations - by the chief of the division or administration; in Moscow - by chief of the branch of the division in question

The recruiting of an agent is seneticned in the sene way. If the agent has been picked out of the number of "figurents" of a certain "elaboration", for which, of course, he is recruited, his recruiting is sanctioned by the deputy chief of the MEVD administration. Recruiting of other categories of agents are sanctioned and approved by less responsible efficials, usually by chiefs of the branches or sections.

The "report for recruiting" must contain the data for the "setting" of the recruited person (i.e. the conclusions drawn from the materials dealing with his person); besides it must be mentioned where and how the actual recruiting will take place, who is recruiting and for what purpose, and also what steps will be taken providing the recruited person will refuse to work for the HKVD.

The actual recruitings are usually based either on the socalled loyalty to the Soviet regime (residents, tenants of conspiratorial quarters, in some cases - secret informers) or on some compromising material which is either available or artificially created. If a "figurant" is recruited out of a certain "elaboration", he has usually to chose : either work for the MKVD or arrest with all its consequences. If the material is created artificially and the recruiting is based on blackmailing, some additional material of this kind is usually available which is used if the first method of recruiting fails. If the candidate still persists in his refusel to work for the MAYD, he must sign a promise of keeping silence about the negotiations and then he is recorded as an "antagonist", thus being put in the same level with oppositionists and sectarians. The refusal of work for the MEVD is usually followed, some time later, by the arrest of the unvielding candidate.

There are cases when agents that have been recruited, either commit suicide or perform some other desperate deeds. So, for example, in 1957 L. Erasotina, relative of late Pobedo-nesteev, the former attorney general of the fiely Synod, took

poison in Moscow, efter having signed her consent to work as an agent of "internal observation", i.e. for spying against her element relatives. In 1941 a Hungarian girl K. threw herself out of the window of her lodging after having given her consent to work against her fiancs. Such tragedies occur for the most part when a certain person is recruited to work inside his or her own femily. Both these cases, mentioned above, were threshed out on the operative conferences of MKVD divisions, and the Chekists who actually carried out the recruiting in these cases, were dissisted and sent to some less responsible work — as punishment for "went of skill in recruiting" but not as murderers of two innocent human beings. As far as it is known, the operative workers are always punished in some way for failure at the recruiting.

Curiously enough, according to the Mayo materials, the most difficult categories for recruiting consist of former Social-Menously and churchmen. The most easy teak is considered in the NAVD to recruit agents out of the number of Trotakyists and hightists.

while being recruited, the candidate has to sign his consent, and, if he is supposed to be an agent, he is immediately
asked to give his first material. Secret informers are gradually
introduced into the course of their future activity. At first,
their contributions are limited to the information bearing seneral character, and only after some time they receive definite and
concrete tasks. But there are no firm rules in this respect, and
in every separate case the operative worker himself sust find
individual ways of approaching agents and secret informers of
his team as he thinks to best.

Special registration eards are filled in for every recruited person and forwarded to the 1st Special Division of the corresponding regional NEVD-MQB administration and to the 1st Sector of the 1st Special Division of the earter, in Moscow. The 1st Special Division of the NEVD-MQB regional administration sends a numerated case for the agent or secret informer which is

further carried on under a special anonymous sebriquet as "Bel-shevik", "Master", "Fighter", "Ivam" etc. All "Agenturaya rasra-botka's" (agent elaboration) and "Service-list cases" are also conducted under sobriquets.

BOTK WISH ACCRES

As a rule, operative workers of the MKVD are in "direct sentect only with residents and agents (of all three estegories). The work with ordinary secret informers and "secret informers for lodgings" is usually carried on by the residents. But also here no general rules can be applied, and from time to time the operative workers who are on the staff of the MKVD-MGB, see themselves the secret informers (usually in the presence of the resident, to whose team they belong).

The operative worker gives regular instructions to his residents according to his own materials as well as in conformance with requirements of the higher quarters. All operative workers have weekly time-tables for meeting agents, and they are obliged to give a copy of such a time-table to the chief of their section or branch, so that he may know where (in which conspirative) quarters) his subordinates are at a certain moment. From time to time the chiefs of the branches have to see agents together with their operative workers in order to control them.

The residents meet their mass net-work of secret informers usually somewhere near their places of work or residence, but here is also no general rule, everything depending on local conditions. But this is always done according to a shedule the copy of which is being sent to the operative worker who may sometimes control such meetings.

The encounters with the agents are arranged in the comspiratorial lodgings or, depending on the circumstances, in various places: in the atreets, in squares and gardens, out of town etc.

The HKVD premises may be used only for seeing residents (rather infrequently) or "itinerent agents". The latter demonishment is used for a special group of agents employed by the Secret-Pelitical edministration of the HKVD. This group is being recruited from a certain "tint" and is supposed to travel in the domain of their "tint". Such agents are usually informed by phone that they must visit a certain person, and then the encounter is arranged in some of the HKVD quarters. But even in these cases the encounters do not take place in the very premises of the HKVD regional administration, but in some less conspicious, though subordinate to that administration, place.

The general principle of Soviet work with agents may be expressed in few words - "No stone must be left unturned to schieve the sim". Any lies, any provocations may be used for recruiting agents, and any crimes may be staged for the same purpose. All this is called in the MKVD slang "agenturneys kombinatelys" (agent work combination) and is carried on according to approved plans. It is also the principal subject in the course of training MKVD officials in special schools - in the Central MKVD School in Moscow, in inter-regional MKVD schools in different cities of the Soviet Union and in the Higher School for border Guards MKVD in Moscow.

Sotal The authors once more call the attention to the fact that the theme concerning NAVD agents was worked out in connection with the work of the lat opecial Division therefore as this problem is common for all divisions and administrations of the GUGB MKVD USSE. All operative work work with agents, including recruiting and training, is carried out by the operative organs of the MKVD-MGB, while the lat Special Division is only concerned with the operative-statistical recording of agents and supplies the People's Commisser (new Minister of State Security) or the Ghief of the MKVD-MGB administration it belongs to with operative-statistical information of all kind. It may also give similar information to other MKVD agencies and to the

Party, but only according to the indications of the secreterist of the HEVD People's Commissur or the Chief of the HEVD regional administration this particular 1st Special Divisions belongs to, and only in the wording wished by the above mentioned HEVD insitutions. The same order was preserved when the GUGB HEVD was transformed into the Ministry of State Security. - 21 -

CHAPTER Y

OF THE GUID SEAD USES

Diegran So 9

The activities of all organs of the State Security of the USAR, or, strictly speaking, their operative work with agents, is besed, upon the whole, on feur principal foundations, mentioned below according to their succession:

- 1. Operative recording:
- 2. Agents:
 - 3. Operative technique,
 - 4. Inquest,

These are, so to say, four corner stones of the whole MKVD-MGB system supporting the entire practical work of its operative agencies or "organs" (using the Chekist terminology). The operative recording gives a full, manifold and detailed picture of how and where the real or potential centers of resistance to the Conmunist dictatorship are disposed throughout the country. An intricated and manifold network of agents, that knows ne bounds in attaining its purpose, gives full possibility of locating beforehand the centers of such a future resistance, defining its forms, and exposing its participators and possible leaders. The organisation and functions of these two first elements of the soviet state security have been discussed in the previous chapter in conmection with the analysis of the structure of two lat Special Division of the GUGB SKVD USAR.

The inquest is the final stage of the whole complicated work, performed by the organs of state accurity of the Usia, and will be discussed in the following chapters of this manuscript.

As to the operative technique of the HAVD, it is a system, not less intricated and manifold than the operative recording

"operative technique", applied to the MKVD-MGB, only if one takes into consideration that the Stalinist dictatorship is the only and exclusive master of all material and technical resources of this vest country and that the organs, securing the seriety of this dictatorship and preventing the outbursts of hatred of the enaleved people, may at any time use any of these unlimited material and technical resources. The NHW may also fully dispose of such extensive technical means, and has in its hands such an elaborate and complicated apparatus for making the most of them, that the punitive organs of all other countries cannot even dress of anything like it.

From the operative point of view, the whele of this diverse and exceedingly intricate apparatus, including various technical means, is the concern of the 2nd Special Division of the GUGB MEVD (now MGB) and of its subdivisions in all republican, regional and area administration of the MKVD-MGB.

Formerly the functions of the 2nd Special Division comprised also the protection of the Bolshvist leaders and this task was entrusted to the 1st subdivision of the 2nd Special Division. But by the end of the thirties this subdivision was reorganized into the so-called 1st Division of the GUGB MKVD, the structure and functions of which will be discussed in Chapter 7. nowever, as regards the operative functions, the 1st Division is still closely connected with the 2nd Special Division, and their fields of operation are so interlined especially in Moscow, that in many cases it is difficult to draw a line of demarcation between them. The importance of the 2nd Special Division is revealed by the fact that in the period of the "Great Purge" it was headed by Erugley, who escupied the pest of the 2nd Deputy to the People's Commisser of Internal Affairs of the USER in 1939-1941, and was appointed Hinister of Internal Affairs of the USER after the war.

The operative or special technique which is the censern of the 2nd Special Division of the GUGB HEVD is usually denominated

Markey C

in MKYD-MGB documents as "letter" ("litere"). The most important of such "letters" are :

- HI ("mereshnoye meblindenie") external observation;
- F photography;
- H membrane control of the telephone metwork;
- E eavesdropping, i.e. listening in by means of special devices and misrephones;
- PY ("perlimetretais kerrespondentail") censoring of letters;
- P ("pelengatalya") control, search sud location of illegal radio receiving and transmitting sets;
- Sh ("shifrovanie") ciphering;
- RSh ("reschifrovke") deciphering.

Sections and subdivisions that are concerned with all these branches of operative and special technique, are usually demonitated by the abbreviations, mentioned above, while letter "L" (abbreviation from the word "litera" - letter) is added to them. Thus, for example, a subdivision, concerned with consoring of letters, is named "L-PK". Each of these subdivisions is, if it possible to say so, something like a trust, comprising a series of very sumbersome and therefore nearly independent industrial objects.

Let us take a closer view of some of these "letters".

"I-W" - External Observation or Outside Surveillance.

The task of this service is the securing of an all-day-round, constant and parsistent observation of all persons who are at this period of time "elaborated" by the MEYD. In Moscow this is the concern of the 2nd Special Division of the MEYD People's Commissariat, in province - of the 2nd Special Divisions of MEYD regional and area administrations, in the capitals of Union Republics - of the 2nd Special Divisions of republican MEYD-MGS. For this purpose a special brigade of agents of external observation is created for trailing after every "figurent". A car, a motor cycle if necessary, is sesigned to this brigade, and it is equipped with technical means, needed in every concrete case. The observa-

ties

is extended not only upon the "figurent" himself, but upon all persons he may meet and speak to in the streets or in public places. According to the Chekist terminology this is called the "setting of the figurent's connections" ("ustanovas svissei figurents").

The "setting" seems that every person, whom the "figurent" greets or addresses, is followed by an agent - amber of the brigade, whose task is to establish the identity of this person, his place of residence, his profession and place of sork. In the Chekist sleng it is calle "to b.ing the connection up to Long". Then the agent makes a short report about the results of his observations, and this report is called the "setting". Later on, such a "setting" is forwarded to the 2nd sector of the 1st opecial wivision where it has to be onecked whether this pursum has been specially recorded and what is his "tint". If the answer is a positive one, these date are copied in the "setting", which is then filed with the "figurant's" case, but even if such a "setting" does not provide any compromising material, nevertheless it is filled for the purpose of "mounting" in case of need. The usual proceedings are as follows: by the end of the day the Wave-man, heading the brigade, compiles a "augmenty of external observation of the figurent", fixing to it all "settings" with dets obtained efter the checking up with the 1st apecial Division. An agent on duty (in especially important cases there say be several agents) is posted near the dwelling of the "figurant". This seemt has to spy on all persons, coming in and out, sud make "settings" for tues.

Besides "figurant" the external observation invaliably extends upon all foreigners.

service "L-AN" does not include spying after the "flourent" at his pieces of residence and of work at well as in the quarters of his friends. This is the tesk of a network of secret informers or egents belonging to the tesm of the operative NAVL official or resident who is concerned with the "elaboration" of this

"figurant". "L-AH" ("narumbka" in the Chekist slang) is not even informed about the essential part of the case of the person under their constant observation. Usually the activity of the brigade is directed by the operative MKVD official who is entrusted with the "elaboration" of the "figurant" in question. But if the "figurant" is a foreigner or case from some other town, the whole work of observation is performed by the "L-AH" subdivision, and only the results of the work are reported to a certain MKVD division or administration.

It is very difficult, and may be even impossible, for a simple mortal to imagine the scope of work of the "L-AA", for in-stance, in Moscow. This "Moscow MM" means, that many hundreds of "figurants" of different "elaborations" are secretly watched day and night, while this secret observation is entrusted to a brigade of j-A, and sometimes more, persons in each case. Mesides, posts of external observation are needed for watching several dozens, and sometimes hundreds, of conspicuous "figurants", coming to Moscow on their business. These "figurants" are being "elaborated" by different regional administrations and republican MKVD People's Commissariets, who often notify the 2nd "pecial Livision about the necessity of watching certain "figurant" just on the day of his arrival to Moscow.

But that is not all t according to a special instruction of the MKVD People's Commisser, a constant external observation has to be cerried on every member of foreign missions, embassies, consulates, all military attaches and their employees, all foreigners coming from abroad, and especially all correspondents of telegraphic agencies and foreign newspapers. It seems that foreign tourists give the least trouble to the organs of "L-MA" as they are always fellowing established routs and are invariably accompanied by an Intourist interpretor who is always in an agent or even an official on staff of the organs of state security. At any rate, the special section of the Intourist, and not the "L-MA", is responsible for the behaviour of foreign tourists and for their intercourse with Soviet citisens in the streets and public places. But some foreigners give a let of trouble to the 2nd Speeial Division.

Bo, for example, before the war the secretary of the Japanese military attache, a certain Monbo Sasaki, was in the habit of going for a quotidien walk. Evening was his favourite time for this purpose, and he usually fellowed the same route - down the Okhotny Ried and along the Gorky Street to the Fushkin momment in the Boulevard Ring. He used to have an unlit digarette in his teeth and maked every men he met for light. Thus he edurement 30-40 persons during his walk, besides he case up to different stalls, flower girls etc., and everywhere entered into short conversations. It is difficult to imagine how many agents were needed to compile a "setting" for everyone he had talked to. bushary of external observation of this weeki alone included daily up to 50-60 "settings", checked up with special records. It was well known in the center that it was sheer sockery from the part of baseki who tried his best to give as much trouble to the MKYD as possible, but nevertheless the external observation of basaki persisted in the same scope.

Germanu, as well as representatives of the neighbouring countries of the Eastern Europe, did not give too much trouble, but the Americans were at first a true plague for the "L-48". Usually, having not the slightest notion about the real state of things in the Soviet Union, and enjoying full liberty back at home, the Americans strived to preserve all their habits in Moscow and persistently tried to study the life of the Soviet Union applying the same methods that were habitual for the study of all other countries. They visited all public places, were in a hurry to make private acquaintances, and deaks of the reopie's Commissariat of Foreign Affairs were piled with their applications to get the permission of travelling all over the Suviet Union. Set taking into consideration all other reasons, this poculiarity of Americans, that assoyed the HKTD so much, could be explained by the fact that the USA established the diplomatic relations with the USAR nearly 15 years later than all other great powers, and the American

representatives tried to get into "contact" with Soviet citisens directly at the time when the main point of the WEVD/ activity was just to out off any connections between the Soviet population and the foreigners.

It was not easy for the "L-MA" to hendle William C.Bullitt, the first embassedor of the USA in Moscow (1935-1936). He was very fond of sports and eften attended the "Byname" stadium where he tried to make acquaintances with Soviet sportamen. By the Way, Mr. Bullitt was the first who tought Soviet officers to play pole. Thus, taking into consideration such habits of the American ambassador, a special intensified brigade of the external observation was required, and several dozens of "settings" mre compiled every day. To make the work of the AKVD easier two special egents were attached to Mr. Bullitt : a record runner and a tends player that has represented the USSR at international games in France, an exceedingly slender woman whose good figure attracted general attention. But the combination with the tennis player did not pass. then the winter case, Ar. Bullitt started skiing out of toms, and this drove to dispair agents, stached to him, who could not sai well. At the time he, like other Americans, was often discussed by the MKVD men, for there were piles of MH "settings", trying to fix his connections. The MEVD could breathe freely only when Mr. Bullitt "nibbled" at an attractive bait - the renowned ballet dencer Lepeshinskeys, sgent of the 2nd Special Division, purposedly seat on a secret message, and spent all his free time exclusively in her company.

Bosides all the above mentioned objects, the external observation is extrict on for all exents of the foreign Administration of the StyD and of the Intelligence Administration of the General Staff of the Soviet army, during their stay in the USSA. Many of the Comintern werkers were exposed to such a control observation, which is periodically extended even on the NKYD-MGS men, to shock their behaviour and their commentions.

All these various tasks explain the fact that only in Moscow there are many thousands of "i-MM" agents. An exception in all other countries of the world, this extensive "external observation" is a daily practice in the USSR, the usual routine of the "i-MM" section of the 2nd Special Division of the MKVD-MGB.

"I-F" - Photographing

Letter "F" comprises not only the photographing of objects and persons, but also the preparation of photostat copies of doduments, drafts, projects and even complete books. Microphotography and photosounting, i.e. preparation of one ploture out of several ones, are also within the prevince of this branch, supplying first-rate "proofs" for lewsuits, recruiting of agents etc.

A classical example of applying such forged photographs is the well-known action against the "Industrial rarty" ("Prompertiya) is 1930, when, during the lawsuit, "secret instructions" of the French 2nd Bureau, mounted from the documents dating back to the period of the First World war, were produced. As another colourful example of applying such "proofs" in the USSA may serve a widespread trick of producing to the accused, denying his acquaintance, let us say, with some leader of the antistelinist opposition in the Communist Party, a photomounting, on which he is represented conferring with Trotaky or Bucherin.

The team of the "i-F" includes also a special sub-unit, the printing one, that is able to prepare any certificate or vise in any language, with any stamps or signs. So, for example, during the reception of Molotov in the British House of Commons, in 1942, the galleries for guests were invaded by araed British communists, who used cards that had been forged in moscow for the purpose of entering the House. The same team may forge any technical draft or calculation in an extraordinarily short time.

Let us again turn to examples: once, in summer 1937, an agent of the Secret Intelligence administration of the People's Commissarist of Defence, who was at the same time employed on the staff of the Japanese military attache in Moseew, informed his administration about the necessity of an urgent interview. The

latter took place in the same evening, approximately at 22.00 in the neighbourhood of the Timiryssev Agricultural Academy. During the interview the agent stated that the assistant of the military attache had just received a percel with the following stamps:

" All-Union Communist Party (bolsheviks), Central Committee, Military Department", and locked it in his safe. The agent was ordered to bring this parcel. Approximately at 1 c.m., a second interview book place and the agent handed the parcel to the official of Intelligence administration.

Some 20 minutes later the percel was pessed to the 204 speeial Division of the MEVD for an urgent preparation of forged docaments to be returned to: the sale of the Japanese stracks. At 6.30 in the morning, at a third interview, the agent received the parcel back, and did not even suspect that he got a copy, which had been considerably changed in comparison with the original. This forged copy was passed off for the use of the attache. The envelope contained some ten documents, including 3 drafts, which had been approved by the Poople's Consisser for Defense Industry, the deputy People's Commisser for Lefence, and by the Chief of the Military Department of the Central Party Committee. The matter was in the switching of a giant plant on the production of a new type of the enti-sirefft guns. Forged calculations and drafts were prepared for the desinformation of the ettache. The signatures were made so well that they did not call out any suspicions. but in the case of a graphological analysis they would not be identical and the document would be considered as a sample of forgery, made by the foreigners.

By the by, it has to be mentioned to the credit of the Japanese Intelligence Service, that the military extends got into the possession of the documents only one hour and a half later than the director of the plant, who received them personally from the secretary of the Military Department and scknowledged their receipt with his signature.

The "i-F" functions include also copying and changing of let-

accounts etc. For instance, a letter from a certian Prof.Eluchaikey was sent to the address of his acquaintence, a lawyer Kolchanoveky, employed in the People's comisseriet for Foreign Affairs. who was at that time being "elaborated" as a conspicuous "figurant". In this letter Kolchenovaky was invited to call on the professor and pick the book he was in need of. This letter was intercepted at the post-office by a "L-FK" exect and forwarded to the "F" branch where it was changed and then posted again. This time the letter requested the "figurent" to take an inglish book from the library of the People's Commissariet for Foreign Affairs and give it to Eluchnikov's domestic worker, who would come a -cially for this purpose from the summer cottage of the professor. Two days later Kolchenovsky was summoned to the MAYD where he was told that a secret document of the Commissariat, employing him. was found in the book which he sent to the professor. This decument was even shown to the penic-stricken Kolchanovsky, and soon thereafter he was recruited as a MKVL informer and dave detailed statements about his business conversations with poviet Foreign Commisser Maxim Mitvinov and his deputy Asrakhan, both of whom were also under secret "elabo. stion" of the secret-rolitical administration of the MAVD.

Such forgeries do not embarass in the least the pontiffs of the Soviet "justice", and are systematically studied in all MAVD schools as examples of "operative work combinations".

"L-PK" - Censoring of Letters. The scope of work of this branch is so extensive that it is impossible to give a detailed description of its functions. Covering themselves with the formal garantee of inviolability of private correspondence, stated in the "Stalinist Constitution", the "L-PK" agents constantly open, read and even make photographs of the correspondence of the Seviet citizens with their relatives or friends abroad, as well as of the whole correspondence of those categories or "tists" of the population which are being "elaborated" by the organs of the State Security at this period of time. In the course of mass purges and

repressions or at some particular moments of international or internal tension, the "L-PK" agents read all letters in the USCR.

All major post-offices (up to the district caes) have special officials who are consoring the correspondence. But the post-office chiefs are not aware of this fact, at least not officially. Usually it is done in such a way : the chief of the special branch "recommends" to the head of the Regional Administration of Post and Telegraph to appoint small "Courade I." as a telegraphist or se a clerk to a certain post-office. This man appears before his new chief showing simply a paper from the provincial office of Post and Telegraph. For some time he carries on the usual work of an ordinary clerk and is completely subordinate to the chief of the post-office. Then he is instructed to get into contact with a certain group of employees of this post-office, and proceeds to his special tasks, not reporting about them to the chief of the pesteffice. Usually this work is entrusted to letter-carriers, employees sorting out the correspondence or taking the letters out of the letter-boxes.

Copies of the letters that are characteristic in any way are forwarded to the district section of the MAYD, and in provincial offices - to the chief of the 2nd Special Division of the MAYD administration for this region. Depending on the "general line" of the Party and on the MAYD instructions, the utmost attention may be paid to "alien elements", to persons connected with different kinds of eposition, to "corrupt elements" in the army etc

In the army this system is completed in such a way that every military unit has its ewn letter-box, and all soldiers and junior efficers are obliged to use it for mailing their letters (officially it is done to have the letters posted free of charge). All these letters are read by the efficience of the MEVD Special Section ("Ocobiy Otdel") or of the political section of the military unit. During the war such a system eccounted for the fact that a letter sent through the field post at Pulkeve (five miles from Lemingrad) reached the addressee in Lemingrad only in ten days.

All correspondence of "figurents" of special "claberations" is under a constant control of "i-FE", and summaries of this control are being separately fearmaried to the 2nd Special Division. The "i-FE" team semetimes includes special agents, controlling the work of the "i-FE" non. These agents belong to the group "ap/ag" - special agents - and are specially paid. Ordinary "i-FE" non usually work as secret informers, i.e. without pay, but from time to time they may get some rewards.

As a result of this complex system of all-round and selective conscretip without informing the exicts of the post-offices, the letters in the USSE often disappear or reach the addressess with a considerable delay. This system erestes most favourable conditions for abuses on the part of post officials. With an obvious purpose of facilitating the work of "L-PK" agents, long before the war in the USSE an obligatory rule was introduced that the address of the sender had to be written on the obverse side of the envelope. In all telegrams the address of the sender had to be invariably mentioned.

"-" - Kenhrang. The "Letter H" branch is in charge of contrelling the telephone conversations. The center of its activity in Mesow is the special section of the central telephone station, in the capitals of the Union Republics and in regional centers special sections of local telephone exchanges.

The operative technique "N" may be considered as one of the most popular means of the "eleborations". Usually the number of the "figurent" is taken for centrel, and any call, even from the automatic telephones, is easily checked up. The number of the phone is automatically recorded after the conversation by means of the operative technique "N", and theffere the "N" summary alveys shows on which telephone the call was made and where this telephone is altusted, if the call was made from a booth with extensite telephone. There is nothing now in such a method, and it is regularly applied by the police agencies of other countries, but there, in the time of posce, it is used only for the expenition

and science of portionically desperous criminal offenders, while in the USER it is a constant and expectingly remification aysten for assisting the Party in its daily struggle with all elements of opposition in the country.

The operative technique "" is particularly often applied for the "elaboration" of preminent "figurants", as the bureaueratic circles of the Seviet Union make a breed use of the telephone network. The Seviet people knew very well that the telephone conversations are tapped, and therefore they get escustemed to use a code for their telephone calls. But exactly this
eddified character of the simplest telephone conversations is
necessary for the HEVD, being just the proper thing for the
"elaborations", blackmailing and bringing charges, senetimes of
a phentestic and improbable nature.

The case of the former head of the Central Council of "Ososviskhim" (the semi-miliraty organization for development of serial and chemical defence of the Soviet Union) General R. P. Mideman, who was executed together with Marshal Tukhashevaky in 1937, may serve as a characteristic example of the work of "L-M" branch. It was known in the circles of the leading AKVD efficials that at the moment when the Tukhachevsky plot had been exposed, no compromising material was available for Eldeman who had only assess some suspicions. Bideman was a close friend of General Kork, the Commanding Officer of the France Military Acadony, who was also executed later on for having been involved in the Zukhachevsky plet. The fellowing trick was used to expose Eldonon : an HKYD agent rong him up through a local telephone exchange of the "M" breach, and, calling himself Kork, "warmed" him of the impending denger of an immediate errest. As MKYD man was selected for this conversation, whose voice had exectly the same timbre as that of Kork. The well informed MEVD officials mentioned afterwards that Eldemen took immediate stops to disappear and was arrested at the accent when he was ready to get into his car.

Division of the GUGB Zecharev who was present at the inquest of Rideman, told his intimate friends that Rideman immediately started to make confessions after having been directly asked where he wanted to flee and what were the reasons for his flight. Then Rideman gave an evasive ensuer, probably to gain time, he was eaked without besting around the bush : did he receive a warning about an impending arrest? Then Rideman enswered in the negative, the investigator declared that he was lying, that the apparatus of the control telephone station was used for this communication and that he spoke with a MKVD man and not with Kork.

Then Eideasn confessed that such a conversation had really taken place, and that having been warned he decided to flee, but did not know where. After that he was questioned about the reason of his denying the call and the warning (all persons, examined in the HEVD, have to sign all their answers without any delay) and he had to explain, why he, a person without any sense officialt, decided to leave his summer cottage near Moscow and to flee not knowing where?

Thus, such a measure provided the investigator with concrete material, and on its base, one hour later, mideman gave detailed depositions; still later, the same hideman convicted others, including Kork, at the cress-examinations.

The listening-in of telephone conversations is called "passive measures" in the instruction about the operative technique "M". But the "M" tasks of the 2nd Special Division include also the column "active measures" where following steps are enumerated: "to out off the conversation", or "in case of a conversation about some appointment to make it one hour later, urgently actifying the section ..." or "to switch off the telephone from... till..." etc.

Booldes "figurents" the "L-H" constantly tape the following estegories of stigicats :

- a) foreign embassies and consulates;
- b) private telephones of all foreigners,

- e) all telephones of much hotels as "Nescow", "Metropol" and "Savoy";
- d) all telephones of People's Commissariats of Fareign Affairs, of Defence, of External Trade and of the Executive Committee of the Communist International (Commissar).

As to the governmental telephone metwork, the so called "Frenlin Automatic Telephone Muchange" (or "whirligig" in the Chekist slang), the "L-M" control decement extends were only very few of the highest leaders of the UBSR. They are put on the list by Stelin himself and the list is forwarded through the Special Sector of the Central Party Committee. This sector is supervised by the member of the ORGburo Shkilyatov.

In P - Pelengation or Radio Location. The tasks of this branch comprise sending of ciphered radiograms from the central MEVD administrations in Moscow to every corner of the Soviet Union, receiving of such ciphered radiograms from local MEVD agencies, discovering the presence of underground radio-stations on the USER territory and locating them, as well as muffling of all undesirable broadcasts what ever their origin may be.

The section "L-P" has its own radio-stations and radio losetion posts as well as other devices for carrying out these various and complicated tasks. Before the war the Central MAVD radiostation was located in the hamlet Monino near Moscow, but in Detober 1941, when the German troops draw nearer to the Soviet capital, it was partly evacuated and partly destroyed by the desclition detachments of the MAVD. The authors of this manuscript are not informed about the location of this radio-station after the war.

Already before the war, the functions of the "L-P" acquired such a scope that it became necessary to bring into effect a fundamental reorganization of the whole branch.

So, for instance, the new functions of the "L-P" included the propagate breakcasts in foreign languages which were received and re-broadcasted further through secret radio-stations of local

Communist parties. A great stress was put on this work in relation to the Latin-American countries (Cuba, the region of the Punama Channel, Brasil, Chile etc.). The habitual time for such breadcasts was the period from 1 a.m. till 5 a.m. (Mescew time). The se-called "white spots" appeared for that period in the regular breadcasting program of the Moscow radio-countities, and mething was officially known about these "spots".

The using of the short-wave stations of the USBR for current instructing of the foreign agents of the Foreign MEVD Administration, the Intelligence Administration of the General Staff, and the Communist International (now Cominform) is snether function of the "L-P" branch. Usually a code is used for such transmissions Anyhow, in a series of cases - for example, instructions to the Spanish guerills in Asturia in 1959-41 (and now, undoubtedly, to the Greek generals), - such broadcasts wer made openly, but, of course, in the name of the Central Committee of the corresponding Communist party. So, for instance, it is known, that the order for the dismissal of Harry Pollitt (British Communist party) im as the result of his tectical error at the moment of the declaration of the war, case through radio directly from Moscow.

The information intended for the agents is usually received by the eighering branch of the Soviet embassy of of the Soviet connercial representation with the help of "PPUh-38" radio set, and is transmitted further in the same way, i.e. to the receiver of the agent, which has, as a rule, only one wave for transmissions, thus making possible the control of the setting from some ether point.

The scope of work for deciphering or simply for tapping of fereign broadcasts and radio-telephone communications was also increased in an unusual way. Already before the war, a special section for recording the radio-telephone communications between the Pereign Departments of Landon and Washington was organized in the "L-P" branch. There are also some evidences that the first successful attempts to intercept the transatlantic talks between Churchill and Reconvelt took place in 1940.

Finally, the "L-P" was transferred into a huge organisation with international staff of workers. These were mostly members of foreign Communist parties who were ment to Moscow in the result of a secret mobilisation which was personally performed by the secretaries of the Communist parties abroad. The eld premises in the Malaya Labyanks Street were too small for this department, and in 1941 it was transferred into a spacious building in Lenin Hills by Moscow. The whole central Comintern apparatus had been transferred there from the Saposhkov Square somewhat earlier, in 1940. As to its organisation, the "L-P" still belonged to the MAVD system but practically it was subordinated to the Special Sector of the All-Union Communist party Central Committee.

"L-E". The work of this branch consists in overhearing the conversations in different premises with the help of special devices. The central Moscow hotels are the principal field of operations of this branch, for they usually give shelter to foreigners and most prominent party men, coming to Moscow from the provinces.

The most habitual method of listening-in is the installation of special membranes-dictophones into the switches, ventilators, elocks, table legs etc. Hidden wires go from these membranes through the intensifying sub-stations to the Control center (in Malays Lubyanka Street 7).

The "L-E" branch pays even more attention to the buildings of foreign embassies, missions, consulates and different commercial and cultural representations. But this portion of work belongs first of all to the field of operations of the MEVD Foreign and Counter-Intelligence Administrations and will be discussed in more details in the corresponding chapters of this manim book.

Such are the manifold and intricate functions of the 2nd Special Division of the 6568 MEVD USER. The specific features of its west account for the fact, that each of its branches has a considerable independence and the Chief of the Division only co-ordinates the functioning of different kinds of operative technique. Like the 1st Special Division it does not perform any

_ , _ , _ , _ , _ , _ , _

operative work of its own and is intended to assist all operative divisions and administrations of the EKVD wherever such an assistance might be needed. This is true for Moscow and for all EKVD regional administrations, each of which has its own 2nd Special Division, subordinated to its territorial EKVD administration and to the 2nd Special Division of the Moscow EKVD headquarters.

Formerly the functions of this division comprised also the protection of leaders, but some years before the ferld for II this task went over to the newly created 1st Division of the GUGB. The 1st Division of the MKVD USSE exists only in Moscow, and the protection of all provincial leaders is still entrusted to the 2nd Special Division, or, to be more exact, to its "L-MM" branch.

The majority of the workers of the 2nd Special Dividion are the MKVD staff officials and they machine are on the MKVD pay-roll. This division usually hires "special agents" for the needs of operative MKVD divisions and administrations - thieves, burglars, pick-pockets, specialits in kicking up a riw in the street, and other criminals.

The abundance of technical devices in this division and their complexity accounts for the fact that this branch is one of the most expensive in the AKVD system. According to some data the "technique" absorbs up to 50% of efficial budget appropriations for the AKVD needs.

The organisation of the 2nd Special Division is shown on the diagram No 9.

CHAPTER VI

OF THE OURS HEVD USES

Diagree He 10

It has alreedy been mentioned above that the max of the MEVD ergons is besed on four principal foundations: operative recording, agents, operative technique and inquest. To avoid a gap in the unity of exposition, we place the analysis of structure and principles of work of the MEVD inquest organs immediately after the analysis of structure and functions of the let and 2nd Special Division and previously to the study of the activity and structure of purely operative agencies of the MEVD.

First of all, let us call to our mind that by a sormal legal procedure the inquest is the preliminary stage for the expesure of the circumstances of the crime and for the establishment of the identity of persons who might have possibly committed it, and the conclusions of the investigator are in no way obligatory for the decision of the court. The investigator cannot take part in the proceedings of the court or influence them in any way. The body of the crime has to be irrefutably proved, and only under this condition the verdiet of guilty may be pessed. Furthermore, the court cannot be influenced only by indirect proofs and evidences when passing in a verdiet. An inward conviction of the jury that the assumed really committed a certain crime, not substantisted by any proofs, cannot be a reason, sufficient for passing a sentence. These elementary rules of logal procedure are obligatory for judicial organs of normal countries but new Yor those of the Soviet Union.

In order to understand the role of Seviet inquest organs and methods of their work, it is necessary to dwell upon the principles of judicial proofs in the Seviet law. The next detailed sensideration of this problem is found in the book of the

fermer Attorney Seneral of the USSR, new Minister of Pereign Affairs A.I. Vishinsky "Theory of Judicial Preofs in the Seviet Les" (first edition - Moseow, 1941; second - 1946). Vishinsky was awarded the Stalin premium of the first grade (200,000 rubles) and the title of the regular member of the Academy of Sciences of the USSR for this work. This book served also as an initial point for the compilation of new criminal and civil codes of the USSR (this work was begun in 1947). Vishinsky does not set out any new standards or regulations in his work, but he lays down in very plain and precise terms the fundamental regulations of the Seviet legal procedure already used in practice.

These fundamental regulations may be briefly formulated as follows:

- 1. The Soviet jurisprudence is permeated by party-spirit and is based upon the Mrxist- Leminist methodology.
- 2. The Soviet state (i.e. the Communist party) is the begetter of the Soviet court which is flesh and blood of the new Socialist society.
- 3. The inward conviction of the Boviet judges is connected with their socialist interpretation of the law, with their communist conception of law based upon the social-political world outlook of the working class. The sentence passed by the sourt is based upon this conviction of the judges, but this conviction has to be persuasive being supported by the Merxist-Leninist principles of the Soviet juridical science.
- 4. If there is a lack of direct proofs or if they are insufficient to state the body of the crime, the decisions of the Soviet court may be based upon indirect proofs or evidences.

These four regulations make the Soviet court a simple tool of the raling party, one of the organs of the Stalinist distatorable. The Soviet court may condom a person even if the direct proofs of his guilt are lacking - and this is its principal peculiarity. Analyzing numerous facts, purposedly selected out of practice of Soviet courts, Vishinsky rather symically states that if the indirect proofs are applied correctly, the court-

exemination may be absolutely reliable and the results, thus askinged - veritable and persuasive. This statement of Vishinsky is nothing but an attempt to lay a theoretical foundation for iniquity and club-law of the MEVD-MGB "judicial boards", "special councils" and "troikes".

In the Soviet Union the system of public legal procedures - with their pleadings, debetes, with leaving the secused the right of defending himself, with citation of witnesses etc. - is pletically reserved only for "People's Court" ("Mersud") that considers only criminal offences, unimportant misdemeancurs or litigations, and controversies between separate citizens or institutions. At the trials of these insignificant offenders the Soviet courts adber to the usual standards of legal procedure, and this enables the Soviet government and its numerous naive or dishonest friends abroad to demonstrate the fairness, logality and even democratic character of Soviet justice.

However, in all cases when the Soviet government itself or the Communist party plays the role of the accuser - and this happens in the absolute majority of cases and leads to the most drastie sentences, - this normal standard of legal procedure is not followed, the trial takes place behind closed doors, even without the accused and his defenders, and is practically reduced to the epproval of accusing materials or "notices", that had been prepered by the investigator beforehend. ie have already dwelt on this procedure when we mentioned the Special Council attached to the People's Commisser of the MEVD. This kind of "trial" is nothing but meckery at all morms of legal procedure and at the very conception of justice. But namely this was the practice of condenning millions of innocent citizens of the Soviet Union to execution, long years of imprisonment or deportation. In all these cases special NKVD-MGS "courts" have passed their vardicts on the besis of indirect proofs, as in majority of such cases the MAYD investigators are usually unable to discover any direct proofs of the "guilt".

When the actions of the SKVD-MGB follow the line of a new compaign of political terror proclaimed by the Politburo, and

this is mostly the case, - the inquest is not the preliminary but the final stage of the court-exemination (if we can apply this name to the procedure, hebitual in the USSA), and it concludes the process, that had its beginning in the operative recording and the so-called "elaboration of the figurant". The "notice" submitted by the investigator to the judgement of the "apecial board" usually encloses not only the material, provided by the inquest itself, but also the indictment and a suggestion as to the punitive measure, in the form of a certain paragraph of the Criminal Code of the RSFER or some other Union Republic. The work of the "Special Council" usually consists only in approving of the investigator's conclusions or in the selection of some other clause of the Criminal-Political Code with the corresponding changes in the punitive measures. The "legal procedure" of the "troiks" is even more simplified (Bee chapter "negional Organs of the MKVD").

is not separated from the inquest (especially at the periods of political campaigns and purges). One and the same MAVD operative worker begins the elaboration of the case, i.e. organizes the trailing after the "figurent", collects preliminary data and is very often charged with detaining of this person and making a search of his lodgings. After the arrest of the "figurent" or of a group of persons involved in the same case, the operative worker is temporarily transferred to the inquest department. He personally makes the examination and, having completed the investigation, he reports on the case to the corresponding MAVD court having completed and closed the ease, the operative worker returns again to his operative unit. This may be illustrated by the following example:

The operative recording of the 1st Special Division disclesses a group of tearist officers, noblemen and other "have beens" among the lecturers and professors of the Leningrad university.

The "elaboration" of this group is entrusted to the operative

agent-representative of the secret-political division of the Loningred SEYD regional administration. He organises the trailing, fixes the network of agents, succeeds in his efforts to secure the expulsion from the party of all persons who "wriggled" into the reaks of the Party, and finally arrests them as "enemies of the people".

Heving completed all these preliminary stages, he is transferred to the inquest division of the Leningrad MKVD regional edministration and starts to obtain from the arrestees such "confessions" of the crimes which seem to him to be the most suitable ones in this case. Having completed the investigation, he compiles a "reference notice" ("sprayke") which is announced at the meeting of the "troike" of the Leningrad NKVD regional administration.

Thereafter the case is considered to be closed, and the operative worker in question is again returned to his permanent work in the secret-political division. If the case is brought before the "apecial Council", this operative agent-representative, having compiled a "notice" and the indictment, leaves for Moscow and personally reports his material at a meeting of the "Special Council" of the NKVD USSR.

Such an order of carrying on the investigation is especially fevourable for the inequity, club-law and fabrication of false eases and forged accusations, as the operative agent-representative earrying on the lawsuit, is personally interested in condensing persons whom he has been "elaborating". This is a kind of a chain reaction and the only pessible result is the conviction of all suspected persons.

Prectically, a person is convicted elready at the measure when his none appears on the registration eard of the 1st Special Division, The only question is how long it will take to liquidate his and what forms will this liquidation assume. Having reserved the order for the "elaboration" of a certain person and being in personsion of the date, provided by special recording, the agent-representative must obtain the confirmation of these materials,

securing the conviction of his victim. Already when he starts working at the case, he is ewere of the fact that if he does not get the required confirmation of the data, provided by special recording, the case will not be closed, but passed ever to another HEVD man, and he timself will be recorded as a "complice" of this "figurent" and will be liquidated seener or later.

Therefore the question of the real sulpability of this man does not exist for the agent. He must be guilty, if the agent-representative wasts to be safe and sound. The oulpability of the "figurent" is a settled thing for the agent-representative electly at the moment when the "elaboration" of this person is being entrusted to him. "The MKVD does not arrest for nothing" - such is the standard answer, given to all, trying to protect their relatives or intimates who got into trouble, and expressing a naive hope that it is only a mistake, a misunderstanding.

From the very beginning of the "elaboration", the suspected man becomes the personal enemy of the operative-agent-representative as the well-being and security of the later depend on the "success" of the elaboration. The Charlet-apy-investigator-judge persecutes his victim with the obstinacy and jury of a hound trying to bunt his down as soon as possible.

After the errest of the "enemy of the people" the operative agent-representative assumes the role of the investigator, and he must prove that the arrest and all the accusations of the "figurent" have been justified, otherwise another AKYD man will be entrusted with the inquest, and this operative agent-representative will be punished in some way for his failure, at least losing his official position. In this stage he is not even interested in getting to the bottom of the matters the accused has to be convicted and the difficulty lies only in the best "mounting" of the case. If several cases have been successfully mounted and their "form" was! found to be adequate, this investigator, i.e. the operative agent-representative, will be promoted and rewarded; if the mounting is found to be poor, he will stay without promotion or

will be even reduced to a lower rank. The MKVD-MGB releases its victims from its deadly grip only in those rare cases when the supreme party organs have some reasons for sending general instructions to reconsider cases of all persons, whose arrests have not been substantiated, and rehabilitate them. This happened, for instance, in 1939, when Beria replaced Yeshev in the post of the head of the MKVD.

The structure of the inquest division is comparatively simple and it reflects in general lines the structure of the NKVD-MGB operative agencies (See diagram Se 10).

Rech MKVD edministration or division has the inquest section or the inquest branch which is subordinated both to this MKVD administration or division and to the inquest division of the center, in Moscow. It is more convenient to make an analysis of this structure using, as an example, the inquest marked of the MKVD regional administration. In this case the inquest branch is composed out of several sections, depending on the number of the operative divisions of this MKVD regional administration. Usually it consists of the following sections: 1st - Secretariat; 2nd - "serving" the Counter Intelligence Division (EKO); 3rd - serving the Secretariation (EKO), and 5th - serving the Special Division ("Osobiy Otdel").

Operative workers of each group of the inquest branch are divided in accordance with the number of operative sections accommodated by this inquest group. Thus in 1958-59 the 3rd group of the inquest branch of a large regional MKYD administration consisted at least extend 8 senior investigators, and was organized in such a way that one of them worked with the lat section of the SPO, the other - with the 2nd etc. In such a way the investigators are specialised on cases of a similar type, and besides it is very helpful in respect to the compilerty, for only one person is infermed about all cases under the jurisdiction of this section.

Smally every section of the provincial inquest branch consists of only one senior investigator with the rank of an operative agent-representative, and of several investigators having the rank of assistant operative agents-representatives. But, as we have seen

in the above mentioned examples of a branch serving the Secret-Political Division (SPO), the number of menior investigators may be considerably increased depending on the attention paid to a certain operative division or administration of the MKYD. This example refers to the persion when the essential attention of the Communist party and of the HKYD itself was drawn to the Secret-Political Administration.

The staffs of the branches in the central inquest division in Moscow are much more numerous and the investigators have higher ranks there. Besides, there is a special inquest branch serving the 1st Division of the NEVD USER, i.e. considering the cases connected with the protection of the members of the Soviet Government, party leaders and the Kremlin.

Every central administration of the GUGB (now MGB) also has its own inquest section or inquest branch which is subordinated to the inquest division of the GUGB MKVD USLE. It consists of subsections which correspond to the division of this central administration of the GUGB. Thus, for example, the inquest section of the Konomic Administration of the GUGB is composed of sub-sections concerned with all industry, fishing trade etc.

Inquest and Methods of Examination

inquest in the MKVD practice. Its purpose is not the finding out of the fact, under which circumstances the real crime was committed, and not the escertaining of the persons who have possibly committed that crime, but only the maintaining of decorum in the retribution of the arrested "enery", who usually has to be liquidated only on the basis of some general instructions of higher Party ergans and of the data of the operative recording and of his previous "elaboration" by the MKVD agents. In the observableing majority of cases the MKVD-MGB investigators succeed only in squeezing out of their victims the confessions about some crimes they intended to commit, but very seldom the arrestees admit that they have really committed these crimes.

Permelly, the NEW investigators must stick to certain norms of the legal precedure, but prectically they never either to them and nobody prevents them from applying any "methods of physical influence", i.e. tertures to their victims. The most harrid tertures the besting and termenting of expectoes were always practiced by the Cheke-GFG-KKYD-KGB, but they echloved unbeard-of dimensions at the times of Yeshev - this period is called the "Great Parge" abroad, but - the "yesevahine" in the Soviet Union. Yeshev's prodecessor on the post of the MKVD People's Commissariat, Yegoda strached a very great importance to the operative technique and to the work with agents. He was an adherent of applying chiefly the psychological and not the physical methods of influence. Just when he was heading the MIVD, a masterly system of trailing, spying, blackmeiling and provocations was set to work. He used to say that if the investigator beats or tortures an arrestee, he seknowledges his own utter insbility of extorting a confession from this erestee by any other means. Of course it does not mean that at the times of Yegoda the MEVD investigators behaved like gentlemen with their victimes tortures and bestings always took place but they were not the only or the essential method.

all these "deresonies with the enemies of the people" were completely rejected in the fearful period of the "Great Purge" and of Teshov's reign. The deputy to the MKVD People's Commisser Sekovsky behaved with particular brutality. In 1937-38 he introduced a system of mass bestings and murders during the inquest. At the same time Zakovsky held the effice of the Chief of the Messew regional MKVD administration, while prior to that he had been heading for several years the MKVD administration of the Lemingred region. As an illustration of the inquest methods introduced by this dreadful man in Seviet punitive organs may serve the beastful declaration of Sakovsky himself, at a meeting of leeding MKVD officials in Messew, in 1936, that "in aix weeks he centrived to draw a confession out of 11 thousands of spices in the Lemingred region". It is very significent that the horrisperiod of 1937-38, called "Techovshine" (Yoshov's reign) by 'ne

- 108 -

Soviet people, was usually nominated "Sakovshohina" in the Chekist eireles.

By the end of this period the number of arrestees was so great, that no spy-work of agents ("agenturnays rabota") was possible before the beginning of the inquest in prison. People were arrested by hundreds with on the basis of the data of operative recording or as a result of a libel, squeezed out of some prisoner by means of horrid tortures. For several years an ignorant, exual and dull investigator became the "MKVD God" while the leg of a chair, the handle of a revolver or simply a boot or a fist, combined with dirtiest sweering and most fearful insults were his "methods of inquest". When "softhearted" Beris replaced Yeahov, he declared 1 " it is not forbidden to beat, and it is necessary to best, but not everybody as 15 was done before".

In all periods of the Soviet regime in hussia the investigators of the punitive organs have acted and still act more according to the principle of "revolutionary consciousness" than according to juridical norms. Besides all ressons, mentioned above, this is also explained by the fact that the investigators (i.e. the MKVD operative agents-representatives) very often have no notion about these norms in general, and it they refer in the end of every case to the clause 200 of the Criminal Code (aboutthe conclusion of the inquest), they do it only because it has been ordered by the office of the Attorney General to do so. They are directed in all their actions by the simple rule that "purpose justifies the mesns", and if the "enemy" has already been arrested he has to be forced to make his confession by any means. The usual and the most widespread method of the Soviet investigators of screwing real or, much more often, false confessions out of a prisoner, may be briefly represented in the following formula (1) terrorising of the prisoner by bringing against him the most phentestic accusetions; 2) a systematic exhaustion of ell physical and moral strength of the prisoner; 3) arousing hopes and striking of a paychological bargain between the investigator and the prisoner.

This method ruised the lives of thousands and even millions of imaginary people. After the war the same aethod is applied to the new hundreds of thousands or even millions of victims of the Soviet regime in the countries of the Central and South-Asstera Marape. Therefore it deserves to be studied in the nost detailed and attentive way.

The authors of this work have interviewed several dozens of persons, former prisoners of Soviet places of detention and consentration comps as well as former MEVD men as to this problem. The picture of the gradual "working up" of the victims of this institution is nearly the same in its pricipal features though somewhat differs in details. The following method is the most typical:

For instance, the operative agent-representative of the Secret-Political Division of the Moscow regional MKVD administration
is ordered to "elaborate" the economist of the Moscow machinebuilding plant "Sharikepodshipnik", a certain ivanov. The MKVD
has no incriminating materials for this Ivanov, but a registra
tion card has been filled out for his by the special recording
as he was seen in the theatre in the company of Petrov, engineerconstructor of the same plant who had been arrested after naving
told a wat, connected in some way with the attempt upon the life
of Kirov, to other workers of his section. Ivanov was not present
then, but owing to this casual encounter in the theatre he was
included into the "agentur case" of the "in-teller" retroy, who
was sentenced to ten years of banishment for his crime.

By the way, it is worth of mentioning that a wave of arrests, executions and depostations which followed the assasination of Kirev was called by the people "the Kirev recruitment", a similar wave that followed the death of Kuibyshev - "the Kuibyshev recruitment", and the fearful period of 1936-1938, the so-called "Yeshevshehins", was also defined as "the Great Mecruitment".

Thus, the operative agent-representative begins the "elaboration" of the economist Ivanov, who, since this very moment, has been transformed in the MEVD files into the "figurent Ivanov".

The operative agent-representative makes enquiries in the special section of the plant, and the collected information shows that Ivenev is a painstaking and assurate employee, and that during the whole period of his work at this plant he was never reprinented by his chiefs. But he leads a very retisent life, devokt all his free time to his family (he has a wife and two children), seldom attends meetings, does not display any enthusiasm at the prospect of a new subscription to the loan, evades social obligations and therefore was recorded as a "passive member" by the trade-union organisation. Direct anti-Soviet declarations (criticism of the Soviet regime) were not recorded, but he likes to take from the "Techprop" (propagands of technical knowledge) American technical magasines, and when the Austrian film "Peter" appeared on Soviet screens, he made the following remark: "At last we shall be able to see a really good film".

But this scarce information does not disappoint the operative agent-representative. He decides to classify Ivanov with the category of "concealed SOE" (socially dengerous elements) and to "create" the meterial for his "elaboration". Hehaning the old proverb, the MKVD men say in such cases : "Find the man, and you will find the case".

And so a systematic elaboration begins. Through the secret informers at Ivanov's place of work, and through the "lodging agent" at his place of living the operative agent-representative learns little by little all the details of Ivanov's biography, he becomes acquainted with his character, manuers, habits, his circle of/ friends, his way of life.

Meanwhile the MKVD agencies gathered information at his place of birth and his former place of residence. Similar information was also gathered for his wife. It has been found out that his father had a small grocery shop in Saratov before the revolution, and that the father of his wife was "dekulakised" ("reskulachen") in 1950 and deported to the Kasakhstan steppes for colonisation. This information "lawfully" enables the operative agent-representative to consider Ivanev as SOE (socially dangerous element

(in Ressian - "socialine epasmiy element?), for he has conceeled both his end his wife's origin. There are still so concrete accumations against Ivanov, but his "ease" gradually swells with these and other "indirect proofs", as Vishinsky calls them. Whenthis case is sufficiently voluminous, the operative agent-representative gets an order for the "detention of potentially dangerous and suspicious as to his connections citizen Ivanov".

At might a car stops near Ivanov's house ... Sleepy and frightened Ivanov, not understanding smything, is roused from his bed. A search is made and Ivanov is stunned by horrifying questions: "Where is the pistol?", "where have you hidden it?", ""e know everything, so better confess, it will help you"...

The first task of the operative agent-representative is to frighten his victim with accusation of some most terrific crises and victous intentions. Thus, the "working up" of the arrestee begins with terrorising him. He is brought to the MAYD and is left till morning in the waiting-room jammed with the "night take". Frightened people, not understanding anything, sit or stand around him. While he is still not able to come to his senses, a men in the MAYD uniform approaches him and looking into some papers asked "You are citizen so-and-so?" The flabbergasted arrestee answers "yes" in a shaky voice and wants to ask why he was arrested, but the men in the uniform autters: "A fine fellow indeed! It teek us a long time to catch you!", -end steps saide.

The legs of the arrestee give way under him. He wants to make the situation clear, he wants to say that he was arrested by mistake, but everybody he addresses, gives the same enfawer: "Keep silent, it is prohibited to apeak here!" In the norming he is mammaed for registration, a careful search is made once more, all his personal belongings are taken away and approximately at 10 a.m. he is brought to a evergrammed prison call.

Inmediately he is surrounded by some unshaken, tangloheired persons in rumpled coets and evercosts. He hears questions: "Why have you been errested?", "What news are there in the free world?", and so forth. The errestee desides that he has been put into a cell with criminals and timidly clings to the well. But gradually it becomes known that persons, surrounding him, are also economists, engineers, professors, actors, officers of the Red Army and party sorkers. He does not put any questions, his instinct of a Soviet citizen tells him that all of them are "enemies" who have been arrested for some real crimes, but he is quite innecent and therefore this misunderstanding will be cleared after the first interview with the investigator. But, of course, he has to shum any contact with these "enemies of the people".

The second stage of the previous "working up" takes place. The arrestee is left in peace, and it seems to him that the investigator has forgotten him. Meanwhile, other prisoners are summened to the inquest. They are brought back after a long time and in a terrific state. Sometimes they are pushed into the cell being quite unconscious. The new prisoner (in our case - Ivanev) begins to realize that people do not leave this place, but still he nurses the hope that he will be set free as soon as the "misunderstanding" will be cleared. In the megatime he listens to sed and hopeless tales of other prisoners, who have been arrested in the seme unexpected way, but still he refuses to believe them. Gredually all his surroundings create a psychological preparedness for his first interview with the investigator. This preparatory period may be different as to its duration - from one day up to several weeks, depending on the intentions of the investigator and the number of other cases he has at hands at that time.

At last our Ivanov is summaned to the inquest. He is led through long corridors, and on the way he must stand with his face turned to the well if some other prisoner meets his helfway. He will hear all the time the jimgling of a large key, besting against the cleap on the soldier's belt; that is how the warders notify each other that another arrestee is being brought along the certifor, to enable the warder to turn his prisoner with his face to the well — so that the prisoners might not see each other. But at last he enters the investigator's rece. A formal inquest begins, and its purpose is the ascertaining of biographical data

of the prisoner and his social origin.

your parents, your grandfather and grandmother, what was their occupation?" - these questions have to be answered in details, day after day, year after year. During this preliminary inquest the investigator studies the prisoner, tries to understand his psychology, and his conclusions as well as the impression, made by the prisoner, will determine the behaviour of the investigator during this first inquest. Depending on them he will be either polite and obliging, treating the arrestee to tee and sandwiches and offering him eigenettes, or will kneck with his pistol at the table, swear and shout: "I'll kill you like a dog!"

At last the formal part of the inquest is finished. The investigator came to certain conclusions and he proceeds to the "case" as such.

His first question so to this "business part" has normally such a sense though it may very as to the form :

"Your attitude towards the boviet regime?" - whereby he adds:
"You have to take into account, that we know averything, and you have to make an open-hearted confession, which will prove your complete loyalty to the Party and Soviet Government. In that case we shall not bring you to the trial. But if you persist in denying your guilt, I shall remind you of the words of Maxim Gorky:
"If the enery does not surrender, he is crushed".

By saying this, the operative agenti-representative at once shows the prisoner the general direction - denounce yourself as such as possible. But in spite of this all prisoners usually vow that they are absolutely loyal and are ready to sacrifice their life for the Soviet Fower and their leaders.

At this moment of the inquest, the investigator comes down upon the arrestee with all his stock of information collected from secret informers. We tells the prisoner about his intimate friends. He shows that he knows who and when paid any visits to the arrestee, he describes the character of these ersons and the kind of relations between them and the prisoner. He may even

describe the colour of the heir of the girl with whom the prisoner had an affair and he may mention a whole series of the sost intimate details of the prisoner's life. But he will not say a word about his anti-Seviet ections or crimes, for his information does not sention any of such ections or crimes, he will only slap the file of the case with the back of his hand, repeating again and again: "You see, so know everything but we would like you to confess sincerely in all your errors, hepent, and we shall forgive you. But if you don't plead guilty, you will be executed as an invetorate class chemy".

Section is brought into action which the the operative exent-representative (who is not acting as the investigator) invented
and prepared during his preliminary "elaboration" of this man.
Such versions and combinations greatly vary, and they say be even
of fentastic nature: from an attempt to all stalin and other
members of the Soviet Government up to an intention to blow up
a coal mine. This part completely depends on the phantasy and
tastes of the investigator. In such cases the very first inquest
beging with swearing, threstening and beating.

But in many cases the investigator does not bring any concrete accusation against the prisoner at the first inquest, but simply mentions several names of persons, known to the prisoner, who have been arrested some time before, and affirms, that they have already confessed everything, and that the MKVD knows about the part of the prisoner in their crimes, but he does not mention the crimes as such. From time to time he only puts some leading questions, provoking the prisoner to choose the necessary version.

But netwithstending the nature of the chosen version, the investigator leads the inquest in such a way that the prisoner has the impression that he is not considered by the investigator to be the chief sulprit, but only a blind tool in the needs of some main persons, who have to be brought to light with the help of this prisoner. Thus, from the very beginning, the investigator gives the prisoner a clue for the future psychological bargain,

while the form and character of this bergain are determined by the investigator in the course of the inquest, depending on the persenal qualities of the prisoner, his education, intellectuality, etc.

This first stormy attack of the investigator usually at once sets the prisoner off the rails. He is abashed, he has never expected that all the details of his personal life, his acquaintenses and connections, even his own words and thoughts are so well known to the investigator. Hearly every citizen of the Soviet Union has in his past such facts which, he carefully conseals from the representatives of the Soviet power. All these facts from his own past or that of his parents, as insignificant as they say be in reality, here, in the investigator's room, acquire in his termented brain the meaning of a terrible deathly danger threatening him and to his family. Such a state of mind is explained by the "normal" psychology of the Soviet Citizen, terrorised by constant purges, check-ups, self-criticism etc. and this factor is fully taken into consideration by the investigator.

Some of the arrestees "crack-up" i.e. agree to sign anything suggested by the investigator, already during the first inquest, but in the most cases the first violent attack of the investigator does not give any decisive results, and the prisoner
keeps on proving his innocence. In such cases the investigator,
sprawling on a chair and smoking one cigarette after another,
for many hours will repeat his only requirement: "Speak!". In
the intervals he will knock at the table with his pistol, swear,
stamp with his feet, threaten with tortures and execution and
even best the prisoner, though it is not always done in the course
of the first inquest.

The continuence of the first inquest may vary from several hours to several days. This depends entirely on the investigator, his intentions, the character of the material collected during the preliminary "elaboration", on the version of the "erime", prepared by the investigator, on the impression created by the arrestee, on the physical and moral firmness of the prisoner himself.

The inquests that lasted for several days were especially widespread in the period of "Yeshevshehina" when the lock of material that had to be collected previously, and the abundance of "cases" did not give any possibility to the investigators to pursue a systematic "working up" of the prisoners, and forced them to try "eracking" the arrestees by means of a single furious attack.

In the case of one of the authors of this work, such an inquest in the Special Division of the HEVD lasted for five days and a half without any interruption.

If such method is applied, after some hours of the inquest, when the will of the prisoner in not yet broken but the organism already begins to lose capacity of resisting owing to the fatigue and nervous strain, the investigator usually leaves with the words : "Stand and think!" Here it is necessary to have in view that during the inquests in the MAVD the prisoners are very rarely allowed to sit. Usually the arrestee has to stand all the time he is in the investigator's room. This necessity of standing for many hours and sometimes even for several days is already a cruel torture in itself, and may break the resistance even of fire people; but the chief purpose of this measure is to bring prisoners to a half-consious state when they lose control over their enswers. Sometimes (as in the case with one of the authors of this book) the prisoner under investigation is driven to such a state that, being influenced by the investigator on duty, he begins imagining that the latter helps him and proposes the best version for his defence and the best course to edept in this situation. But this measure is not included into the category of "physical measures for influencing" and represents the "normal" way of the "work" of the HIVD organs. Depriving the prisoner of food and drink during the inquest, or feeding his with herrings not giving any water efterwards, is also considered to be the usual method. To emphasise this measure, the investigator usually puts a carefe with veter and a glass on his deak, and source himself from time to time by pouring water into the glass and back again into the carafo.

and so, the investigator leaves. Instead of him some operative worker in a low rank who is on duty, or a student of sevenced course of the Moscow School of the SKYD investigators who is on probation, stay with the prisoner. The orderly MKVD man uninterruptedly speaks with the prisoner, using, as a rule, the mest insulting lenguage, trying to humiliate and outrage him. The purpose of such a behaviour is to oppress morally and to tire physically the person under investigation not giving him a single minute of rest. If the prisoner, exhausted by sleeplessness and long inquest, falls asleep while standing, the MEVD man on duty wakes him with a new fleod of bad language and sometimes by pushing him. So it goes for a long time. Every six hours the investigators on duty are changed while the man under investigation must keep standing and "thinking". For emphasizing this measure the investigator sometimes draws two lines on the well near the shoulders of the prisoner or on the floor near his feet, and prohibits to swerve from it or to step over them.

At last, on the next day, the investigator appears again. He has slept well and rested, he is cleanly shaven, even sprayed with eau de Cologne. He is quite ready to begin his normal working day. But the prisoner hardly stends on his feet by this time. The investigator usually begins this second half of the inquest with s violent attack, demanding the prisoner to take a seat and write down his testimony as he had time enough to think them over by night. And usually the investigator edds : "Then you can go and sleep". A characteristic detail has to be mentioned here : almost always in the beginning of the first inquest the investigator addresses the prisoner in the second person of plural ("wy"the polite form in Bussian), but later on he replaces this form by a rude "ty" (the second person of singular), and revely uses other expressions than "villein", "rascal", "fascist Vermin" etc. while addressing his victim. He returns to the polite form "vy" only when the prisoner agrees to take a seet and write the required testimony.

In such case the prisoner is always given tea with sendwiches, and a package of cigarettes or of cheep tobacco is put on the table for his use. All errestees know about it, and after a cramed cell, swarming with bugs, this tea with sandwiches and the possibility of smoking again turn into such an alluring bait that cannot be resisted by many a prisoner.

Here the investigator applies the following, very typical psychological trick. Before closing the night inquest he comes down upon the prisoner with some horrible and even fightestic. accusation, as, for instance, the organization of an attempt upon Stalin's life, an attempt of blowing up the plant where the prisoner works or something like that. The prisoner is left for the night to "think over" this terrible accusation, that threatens him with a "pass into eternity". In the course of the night the prisoner gets accustomed to the thought of the impending death and all his mental ability is directed upon attaining only one purpose : to avoid this terrible menacing prospect and at least to save his life. If in the beginning of the inquest the prisoner strove to prove his innocence and wanted to be set free. he has only one wish now - to escape impending death and as soon as possible to put an end to this exeruciating inquest. His feet are swollen from the long standing, his brains are influend and he has almost lost his capacity for understanding.

The investigator takes into consideration such a state of the prisoner and abruptly changes his tactics, he begins the morning inquest in a soothing tone: "Both of us lest our temper yesterday, hach of us was tired. Your enemies have slandered you a lot. But we know that you are not such a bad man. Everybody may make an error. We do not want to ruin innocent people, we want only to know the truth." - The further harangue is of the similar nature but ends with releasing the prisoner from the most terrible escusation while the prisoner is summoned to sign some "trifle", i.e. the testimony of a "disloyal attitude towards the Soviet power", "petty wreekage" etc. Here the investigator adds with a pretended sympathy to the fate of the prisoner: "Nothing particular will threaten you for that. May be you will be only

forced to spend a couple of years in a casp. Then the Soviet pewer will forgive you and you will be free again." After the terrible experience of the last night the prospect of "going to a camp for a couple of years" seems to be almost a blessing to the weary prisoner. Many take the bait of the "compassionate" investigator and ruin themselves and their relatives and intimates.

But if the prisoner is firm enough to refuse signing this "trifle", the investigator uses floods of bed language, and throwing saids all his "compassion" and "sympathy" applies to the prisoner the most cruel "measures of physical influence" in the result of which the prisoner usually loses his senses. Then cold water is poured on his and he is dragged into the solitary confinement cell or back to his ordinary cell, or even to the prison hospital, — depending on the wish of the investigator and on the state of the prisoner.

but besides the "physical influence" there is also the following method which is applied very frequently. Seing tired out with shouting and having exhausted his stock of curses the investigator declares : "All is finished with you. You are such an incorrigible vermin that there is nothing else to be done with you but to shoot you down. That's enough!"

The prisoner is put into an elevator, he feels that he comes down somewhere. The memories of all his past life pass before his mental sight. But suddenly the elevator stops, the door is opened and the prisoner sees a long corridor, dimly lit by electrical bulbs. Two MKVD men stand by the elevator holding pistols in their hands. The prisoner is ordered to go sheed. Staggering, clinging to the well, he slowly moves and sees the bullet marks on the corridor walls. The MKVD men gradually fall behind, he hears their steps, echoing hollowly in the stillness of the corridor. Manages

But no shots are fired. The prisoner reaches the end of the corridor. Again he is put into an elevator and brought before the investigator who meets him with the words : "Well, have you seen? I was sorry for you and thought you might repeat. You have wife and children, then think it over once more! We don't stand upon ceremony with the enemies of the people: one, two and ready !"

Again the herrid accusation of terrorism, spying activities, diversion etc. appears on the stage, then the investigator again has "pity" on the prisoner, and summons him to sign some "trifle" which will cost him only two-three years in the camp. Variations and forms of the methods used by the investigator may be different, but the argumentation is nearly always the same : "Bign this "trifle" and the accusation of terrorism and diversion will be taken off, as you will show that you sincerely repent in your errors". At last the worn-out man signs this "trifle" and is sent to some concentration, damp for 5-10 years.

However, the investigator rarely achieves his purpose in the course of the first inquest though it may last for several days. An opinion is wide-apread abroad that the NKVD investigators can model enything out of the prisoners as if they were soft wax. Such an opinion was created after the "big processes" of 1936-38 but it is quite a wrong one.

These big processes are called "show trials" or "descastretive triels" in the US.R. But in reality they do not demonstrate enything. Only such "enemies of the people" who "cracked up", capitulated and agreed to be partners of Erylenko and Visninsky appear on the platform of the Column Hall of the Moscow Union House, But all those who have courageously endured moral and physical tortures simply get a bullet into the napes of their necks and this is done without any pomposity. It is sufficient to mention only the most popular names of those who perished without this comedy of an open trial - the names of Marabels lumbachevsky, Yegorov, Blucher, Army Generals Kork, Gborevich, Yekir, Admirals Pundershansky and Orlev, ministers of the government and members of the Central Party Committee and even of the Politbure as Budsutak, Kossior, Postychev and others, prominent diplomats es Karakhan and Raskolnikov, and shat is more important - let us recollect millions of courageous kussisms, men whose names and whose very existence remained unnoticed by the foreign correspondents, eager only to find a sensation - millions of patriots and enti-communists, tortured and executed in the secret HKVD places, killed as they could not be curbed or broken.

The names of generals Vlassov and Malyahkin, Trukhin and Mesndrov who were executed in 1946 without witnesses, may serve as a symbol of all, than innumerate army of fighters for freedom who conquered the horrors of the skyll system.

Thus, this monstrous system of moral and physical vielence is not always the winner. More often it is conquered by the human spirit, strong in its hate of all evil, in its love of the good, i.e. by those qualities of the people which the Communica was unsble to change in the long thirty years of its complete mastery over bodies but not the souls of the hussian people.

The unknown victims of Stelin's dictatorship lead their heroical struggle against their tormentors for long months, though they are denied all human rights and though they are fully asare of the fact that this struggle leads only to their death. Many lose their strength and firmness in this inequal struggle, sign everything they are requested to, and even turn into obedient agents of their tormentors. But still greater number of Russian people remain firm to the very end in spite of all indescribable physical and moral tortures.

The procedure of a gradual influence of the NaVD investigator upon the prisoner's mind, as described above, is foten apun out for many months and even years. It happens very often that one and the same investigator is in charge of several dosens of cases, and as a result of this persons under investigation are called out by him for the inquest once in a way. In 1937-38 it was not infrequent that people were summoned to the first inquest. only after 4-5 months of imprisonment, and then they were again forgotten for several months. There were also cases when persons errested in the very height of "Yeshovshching". i.e. in winter of 1937-38, had not been called for the inquest until Yeshov himself was dismissed by the end of the year 1938, and then they were set free, "for lack of the body of the crime". These people mever learned why they had been arrested and why they had to spend a year in prison. But all these cases have to be considered as exceptions and they cannot be characteristic for the usual methods of the inquest in the MEVD prisons.

in order to understand the actions of the investigator and of the prisoner in such cases when the investigation is not limited only by the first violent inquest but is spun out for a long period of time, it is necessary to take into consideration the atmosphere of the MKVD prison cell. In the period of great repressions 25-30 persons were crammed into normal cells, designed for four persons. People could sit only by turns, and for the night large wooden shields were brought into the cells and put on the plank-beds across the whole cell. Thus the whole space of the cell was divided into two or three stories the height of which did not exceed one meter. 8-10 and even more prisoners were placed on these storess, so that they were lying tightly pressed to each other and filling almost the whole of the cubature of the cell with their bodies. Those who had to lie on the floor under the plank-beds and the first row of shields were in the worst position. In the Moscow prisons these places were called "subways".

hierrid filth, stanch from the close-stool, lice, bugs swarsing in plank-beds and in the shields, an impossibility of washing, shaving or combing, a thin soup called "balanda" with a piece of bread for dinner and supper, complete lack of news from outside and the agenizing incertitude about the fate of two relatives and intimates, shrieks of tortured men, means of these who have come back from an inquest, the night calls "without things" for execution and desfening rear of sutemobile meters that had to muffle the sound of shots in the cellars - all this created such an atmosphere in the cells, in comparison to which even the worst concentration camp seemed like a rest home.

In such conditions the investigator had only to create in the mind of the prisoner a certitude that he won't be released under any circumstances and that death is lurking for him. Such a state of mind was achieved in the result of the most terrible and even immitaatic accusations and by means of brutal beatings and tortures during the first inquests. Then, for some time, the prisoner is left in passe. As it is prohibited to speak in a loud voice in the cells, the prisoners talk in a low whisper sith each

other for the whole days, and gradually losing the sense of fear, tell their stories and ask for advice as to their behaviour at future inquests, though each prisoner is sware of the fact that two-three secret agents are normally present among the prisoners of the cell. However, each arrestee tells his fellow-prisoners only a part of the truth - the fear of the investigator is too strong. Therefore, of course, it is impossible to speak about any co-ordinated actions of the insates of one and the same cell - each of them takes his own risk and acts according to his own pian. The inveterate habit of Soviet people to hide their innermost "I" from the eyes of the strangers is preserved even in the hell of a NEVD cell. The analysis of the conditions in the MEVD prisons is not the purpose of this work, but we are oblised to dwell on the following two points that are of decisive value a

1. buck conditions have been created in the Navu prisons, in comparison to which any punitive measure (with the only exception of a death penalty) seems to the prisoners a facilitation of their face.

2. Collective demonstrations, riots, hunger-atrikes etc. take place in the prisons of other countries, shile in the NKVD prison, as a rule, a duel between the investigator and the prisoner is going on.

Though the circumstances of each separate case may greatly very, it is possible to state three essential lines in the behaviour of the prisoners, and consequently all political prisoners of the NKVD are divided into three main categories.

The first category embraces those persons who rapidly lose their moral and physical strength, strike a bargain with the investigator, "crack up" i.e. sign everything they are suggested to by the investigator, and in the most cases perish or consent to become MKVD agents.

The second category consists of persons who are strong enough to bear all tortures of the inquest as well as inhuman conditions of their imprisonment, admitting none of the points of the accusation, brought against them by the investigator. Many of them perish in the result of false testimenies of minds other prisoners or friends, colleages and fellow-workers who have not been arrested but berrorised to beer witness against them. However, a certain number of such prisoners are lucky enough to be released "because of the lack of the body of the crime" after many months of inhuman tortures and at the cost of a colossel strain of their physical and moral strength. Usually they draw this fortunate let in such instances when the Erealia decides, for certain reasons, to reconsider the cases of the prisoners.

The third category is the most numerous and the most charactristic one for the Soviet conditions, though such a category cannot be found emong the prisoners of any other countries. It consists of persons who rather quickly come to the conclusion that they won't be able to enatch out of the NAYD clutches, and therefore these people lead their struggle with the investigator not for their freedom, but for applying to their cases such a clause of the criminal code in the indictment which seems to them to be the most favourable one. This is approximately the same course of action, adopted by the advocates of other countries when they see the impossibility of gaining a lawsuit for their client. But here is a principal difference : the defenders of obviously hopeless cases concentrate their efforts on the extenuating circumstances in so far as the fact of the crime is beyond any doubt. The Soviet prisoners of the third category have themselves invented for their "cases" such crimes that Mive never bows committed by them, and direct all their phantamy and mental ability to bring the characterisis and circumstances of these "crizes" in conformance with certain clauses of the criminal code that may threaten them "only" with deportation to, a concentration camp.

The tecties of this original "defease" of the MEVD prisoners is approximately the following :

M's certain stege of the investigation the prisoner clearly sees that he won't be repleased, that his conviction has been decided beforehend by the investigator and his superiors. The atmosphere in the cell and tortures during the inquests gradually

undermine his will for struggle. On the other hand the absurdity of the investigator's version of his "erime" is also obvious to him in all its details. His brain is painfully and strenuously working in the effort of making this version like the truth, but at the same time taking care that the punishment does not exceed "deportation to the camp for 2-5 years". Usually this way is chesen by persons who have been arrested by the organs of the Hosnomic Administration of the HKVD and charged with "diversion", "eccanonic apping" and "wreekage".

arrestess begin consulting their fellow-prisoners. In every cell there are always several "specialists" as to the Criminal Code, who know by heart the most frequently used clauses of the Soviet Criminal Code and punitive measures involved by them. The prisoner choses a clause which seems to him to be the most suitable one, and starts sorking on the details of his "crime" as well as on the general plan of his "confession". When such a plan is made out, the prisoner comes up to the judes in the door of his cell and sake the warder to give him an interview with the investigator for "giving testimony". Buch an interview is normally given without any delay, being brought before the investigator he declares that he has "reslized his errors" and wants to "make an open-hearted confession" and therefore asks for some ink, pen and the files of his case.

heving received all this, the prisoner, in the presence of the investigator, begins working at his own case. The attitude of the investigator is immediately changed into the most sympathetic one and the prisoner invariably gets to with sandwiches and eigerettes or tobacco. The investigator has by that time fully realized all the discrepancies and even absurdities of his version of the accusation, and he gladly accepts the prisoner's co-operation. He is interested neither in the essential part of the "ease" as such nor in the punitive measure, but only in the suitable "mounting" or "framing" of the notice which he has to prepare for the session of the "troiks" or "special Council". The rudeness of the investigator's abuses, blows and tortures

on a sympathetick and even good-humoured mank.

This way is usually chosen by intellectuals and specialists. As soon as the prisoner has started writing his "version", he becomes the temperary master of the situation. In such cases he works without hurrying, trying to prolong his "leave" from the cell and enjoy comparatively human conditions. There are eases when prisoners work at their "testimonies" for a week or even more, and they compile a really-scientific work, imbued with formulas and calculations. The investigator does not hasten him, and only attentively wather over the prisoner to prevent him from trying to prove his complete innocence. As long as he "confesses" and does not reput directly the version of the investigator — the latter will not intrude.

investigator, the prisoner may pursue different objects, but in the majority of cases he strives to facilitate his rate or that of his family. Under the most favourable circumstances such a "detailed confession" may lead to the appointment of a commission for revising his case. But much more frequently the prisoner "goes" to a camp for several years and all his inventiveness serves only for mitigating his fate to a certain extent and somewhat shortening his prison term. This strange work of prisoners for inventing the crimes they have never committed shows in the clearest way how desperate and hopeless the people feel in the MKVD prisons. In fact, it is the same principle of the boviet "self-criticism" but amounting to absurdity in prison.

Sometimes the wish to escape from the lousy and stinking cell and to go to the concentration camp acquires the character of a real psychosis. Mangry and weary people begin to point in the brightest colours the pictures of the Siberian teigs (vast ferest;) and of rivers, abounding in water and swarning with fish. They can discuss for hours and with the participation of all insetes of the cell, how they will fell trees, build their barracks in the desolate teigs, how they will go s-fishing and cook a

fish-soup. In their imagination the "correctional camp" of the MEVD turns into the climax of the human well-being, and in order to achieve their deporatation as soon as possible, people compile the various of the crimes, never committed by them but required by the investigator. Such psychoses, very profitable for the investigator, are sometimes provoked by his through his agents in the cell. A lot of people under investigation, especially former soldiers and officers of the hed army, try to be deported to a camp as soon as possible, while they are still healthy and strong in order to flee from there. On this account there is even a special saying in the prisons : "I go to the camp, - to the green prosecutor..."

There are also cases when the prisoners try to mock quite consciously at their ignorent investigators. to, for instance, in 1937, an immate of the SEVD prison invented with all details a story how he intended to sink several ships of the black Hee navy in armavir, and the lavestigator put down all this nonsense, not knowing that armovir is situated 300 miles may from the slack See const. Unly on the next day he saw what a trick was played on him by the prisoner, summoned this prisoner to his room and best him so that he was more dead then alive. Another "participator of an armed revolt on the Lower solge" signed a testimony that he, being the chief of the auto-regaining shop of the all (Machine-tractor station), intended to muse tames out of the tractors "Fordson" and armoured cars out of the auto-eisterns in order to secure the success for this "revolt". But more often there are cases when weary and desperate prisoners - this is mostly the case with almost elliterate peasants and workers - ask the investigator to write down exactly what he wants and finds better for them and thus sign themselves their death sentences.

It is absolutely impossible to give a detailed analysis of all methods of the inquest and investigation of the MAVE-MGS in a short chapter of this book. Such an analysis must be a theme for a special work.

- 128 -

Cleaning this chapter it is only necessary to point out that the chief weapon of a NEWD investigator is neither the material which has been collected by him during the "claboration of the figurent", nor the physical measures of influence, but this atmosphere of ultimate despeir and complete lawlesoness which envelops every prisoner since the very first memont of his amount, and to which he has been propered by all his provious life in the "normal" Soviet surroundings. It wen't be an exaggraphicalif we say that the etmosphere of this "normal" Soviet life differs from the atmosphere of an NEVD prison only by a consentration and scuteness of the measures of enforcement as here and there the Soviet cities has no personal freedom and all his hade fate in in the hands of the authorities in power.

The work with the witnesses is of a much simpler nature. The investigator reads to the summoned witness a false testimony of the prisoner, where the latter makes a clean breast of everything. If the witness does not want to say anything that may be of any harm to the prisoner, the investigator declares : "Well, you are such an enemy as he is, even a more dangerous one, for he has confessed and reputs openheartedly for what he has done while you want to conseal everything from us".

the premises without the signature of the investigator on his pass. The investigator suggests to the witness to go out into a sorridor and think there, while a soldier bids him to stand with his face turned to the wall, and he may be kept in such a position for many hours according to the investigator's order. As a result persons of weak character sign everything given to them by the investigator, only anxious to leave this demand building.

The foreigners often ask : what does the Moviet government arrest such a let of people for, especially as they are obviously innocent? The usual answer is that it is necessary for the reinferences of the army of the prisoners who are carrying out the most difficult work without being paid. But this answer does not give an exhaustive explanation of the problem, as the whole population of the Soviet Union already works for the state, i.e. party,

and gots starvation wages for their labous. And the work of a aleve is always less productive them that of a free man, even if his freedom is an ephanoral as it is in the Soviet Union. Therefore, the above question will be more correct if we put the word "why" instead of "what for", used there.

Then the enswer will be as following a because being afraid of the people's hatred the Seviet government created a multimillianed army of jailers, who have to arrest, terture and depart millians of people in order to justify their existence, and because there is no organ in the Seviet Union that could step on a certain limit the signal, received from the center, for liquidating or "purging" that or another group of the Seviet population. Thus the well-known theory of the snow-ball is brought into life. The distatorship of the Communist party cannot exist without the army of SKVD-MGB butchers, and this army requires millions of victims to justify its existence. This is a vicious circle from which there is no other escape but the making away of both the distatorship and the butchers in its service.

CHAPTER VII

THE FIRST DIVISION OF THE GUGB MEVD USER

The task of this division is to protect stellin and other top ranking leaders of the Party and Government, as the stellinist cligarchy is officially nominated.

The 1st Division is particularly concerned eith the protection of a Stalin, all members and candidates of the Polithuro, secretaries of the Central Party Committee, members and candidates of the Orghuro, the chairman and some members of the Commission for Party Control, all Vice-Chairman of the Sovnarkom (now - Council of Ministers) of the Junn, and some People's Commissars (now Ministers) as well as a series of the nighest officials according to a list approved by Stalin himself.

The most important objects, guarded by the ist division, are :

- -a) the Kremlin ;
 - B7 the building of the Central Committee of the raity.
 - e) the building of the Sovnerkom in Jkhotny misd in Moscow;
 - d) the buildings of the Party Control Commission, of the Executive Committee of the Committee, that of the Central Committee of Komsomol, and a series of others;
- e) the building of the MKVD USSR Moscow, Dzershinsky Square, House No 2;
- f) Stalin's country-house;
- g) Country-houses of all the Polithuro members and other persons under protection of the 1st Division;
- h) the road from the Kremlin to the country-houses of the above mentioned persons;
- 1) Government villes in the Caussus and the Crimes;
- j) Government trains, aeroplanes, cars, yachts and other transport means.

Besides these main objects, the 1st Division guards absolutely all places, Visited by Stalin and his obsect collaborators, as well as all reads, shown for their reutes. For instance, the 1st Division guards the government bewes in the descent art Theater, in the Bolshoi and Maly Theaters, the government hunting estate near Moscow etc.

The strictly specific tack of the 1st Division is, Esturally, reflected in its whole structure (see Diagram Se 11). Unlike all other organs of the GUGS (now MGS) the 1st Division has no reminfications going domwards, and it exists only in the central symperatus of the GUGS, as its main object is the region of the city of Moscow.

The 1st Division is closely connected in all its work with the 2nd Special Division, especially with its "L-dd" branch. in the depitals of the Union Republics and regional centers the functions of the 1st Division as to the protection or local party leaders (secretaries of regional and area connittees) go over to the 2nd special Divisions of the sorresponding Navu administrations in these cities. However, when Etalia and other Moseow leaders visit these cities, they are guarded on their say and during their stay there by the 1st Division, though the letter uses the already existing brigades and groups of the 2nd special winvision of the local MEVD administrations for the exterior observation, regulation of traffic and other purposes.

they are accompanied by a special reinferred brigade of the Sava men on the staff of the 1st Division. Two of these men must always accompany the leader wherever he goes, without leaving his alone. They may wear uniforms or plain elethes. Sesides, long before the "leader" leaves for a certain country, a special brigade of the 1st Division is sent there (usually under the pretence of cending sheed technical workers of the Soviet delegation), being entrusted with the tesk of securing protective measures in local conditions. During the whole stay of the leader shroad, all the serving personnel consists of the 1st Division men. So, for instance, during the diplomatic journey of Molotov to dan-

Prenciose in the spring of 1945, he was accompanied by a whole plateen of guards of the 1st hitision, and Eruglev himself, the future Majoter for State Security, was entrusted with the smaral direction of operations for securing the safety of Austia's leader to 2.

The journey of Stelin shreed is technically impossible. The position of Stelin prevents his from using foreign means of semumication, and it would be accessary for the 1st Division to get the exclusive right for guarding everything that has to do with Stelin's route, i.e. the guarding of all routs, railway stations, ports, streets that lie in the btalin's way, and the government of no country will agree to such a measure. For the last 30 years Stalin formally crossed the boundaries of the Soviet Union only twice: in November 1945, going to Teberan, and in August 1945, leaving for Putadam. But in both cases he practically moved in the regions, occupiedly by the boviet troops, and therefore there was full possibility for the 1st Division to new ourse his safety according to the strictly set rules.

But even is such conditions, precentions of quite exceptional nature were taken in Teheran and Petadam. In the first case up to three thousands MEVD men on staff of the 1st Division and Special Sector of the Central Committee of the All-Union Communist Party as well as a battalism of troops, guarding the arcalia, errived in Teheran. The conference with Churchill and Moosevelt took place in the premises of the Soviet embassy, and in its course Stalin left the building only twice: for the first time to pay efficial calls to Receivelt and Churchill, and for the second a telestand the celebration of Churchill's birthday.

In Potedon the inhabitants were custed from all buildings in the streets adjaining the area, where the conference took place, and the shele area was encompassed by the intensified detachments of "MERRER", "L-HH" and let Division. All the way from Moscow to Potedon was guarded by the HEVD treeps, and Stalin arrived at Potedon in a special train, leaving Berlin saids.

AND THE PROPERTY OF THE PARTY O

The 1st Division eriginated as a special ergan evidently after the attempt upon Lemin's life in August 1918, but its erganisational set-up was not completed during Lemin's life. It is possible to assume that in these times Trotaky, and not Lemin; paid more attention to the development of this ergan. It was Trotaky who took for his private use the train that featurely bealonged to the Mussian tear, and that was he who introduced special body-guard for himself and other Soviet leaders. This bodyguard was the initial stage of the 1st Division. It is difficult to decide which part was played by Stelin in the creation of thin appealific organ in that early period of the Soviet power, but it is characteristic that during the defence of Tearitayn (Stelingrad) in suturn 1918, Stelin surrounded himself by a detachment of the-kists and under no circumstances parted with this special body-

In the Niff period the 1st Division was joined with the 2nd Special D vision and, according to some information, it was a mething like a subdivision of the 2nd Special Division, though its functions were highly specialized. In the other hand, the general structure of the SKVD and the numeration of its main divisions and administrations make as suppose that the 1st openial Division, the 2nd Special Division and the 1st Division constituted formerly a general 1st Division, which was divided later into three divisions in connection with the complication and specialization of its functions. However, the authors did not succeed as yet in finding a definite enswer as to the history of organization of the 1st Division.

In any case there is no doubt that before the war the lat Division closely coordinated its setivity with the 2nd Special Division, and both these divisions were subordinated to the them Deputy People's Commisser of the AKYD, S.M.Kruglev, who was personally responsible for the safety of Stelin and other Mosnew leaders. The same Eruglev appointed the superintendent of the Krentin and checked up all technical workers on the staff of the Contraction and checked up all technical workers on the staff of the Contract Commistee of the All-Union Communist Party, and of the Sownerical of the USSR, After the war Kruglev was appointed the Minister for Interfer Affairs of the Sack.

Caline other central engage of the SKTD-MGB, the 1st Division is an independent unit, prestically subordinated not to the SKWD Poople's Commissor (Maister), but to the Special Sector of the Central Party Commisson, i.e. to the Stelin's secretarist. If Stelin or any other looser leaves Second to go to the province, all local agencies of the SKYD-MGB are bound to fulfil emetly and with absolute submission all orders of the SKWD man on the staff of the let Division, assumenying this looder (of source, only in the questions concerned with the protection of the leader during his stay in a certain republic or region). The shief of the lat Division is subordinated both to the chief of the GUGS and directly to the Poople's Commissor of Interrior Affairs (now to the sinister of State Security or directly to Levrobty Beris).

According to the information callected by the authors of this work, the 1st Division included the fallowing units :

- a) Operative section;
- b) Inquest sections
- c) Personnel section;
- d) kegistration and information section;
- e) Chief of the bodyguard;
- f) Commander of the Frentin guard with the 1st Commandant's of: ice of the Frentin guard and the guard division subordinated to nim;
- g) Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Comman-
- M Transport section;
- 1) the Frenish supply department;
- k) the MTO section (material-technical provision);
- 1) Administrative and meintenance section.

Probably there to a series of subdivisions of this division, not mentioned on our list; on the other hand, it is quite possible that some of the mentioned until have been joined together. The musual secreey in the ergonisational structure of the 1st Division makes very difficult the construction of schemes and the correct denomination of its sections and subunits. This must be the object of further studies.

Probably the field of operations and the character of the activity of these sections of the 1st Division are as follows :

Operative section (probably several of them). Plans the work of the special operative groups subordinated to the 1st Division. The number of persons, constituting these groups may vary as well as the tasks, corried out by them.

For example, Stelin strends some theater performance in Mocdow. Several operative groups of the 1st Division will be sent to this theater during Stelin's stay there in order to secure him exfety.

If Stelin or someone of his closest collaborators (the se called "nomenclature workers") leave Moseow, they are protected during their journey by operative groups, specially formed incl. this purpose. These groups do not include the personal bedyguard of each "leader", which is directly subordinated to the commander of the bodyguard.

pesides these essential tanks the personnel of the operative groups makes arrests carrying out the orders of the 1st Division, and searches the quarters of persons, "elaborated" by this division. Besides all this, the operative groups may carry out other operative tasks which are the concern of the 1st Division.

Lacuest section. Is carrying on inquests and inquiries of persons, arrested by the 1st Division. It has to be mentioned here that the whole work of the 1st Division is carried on in close contect with the private secretarist of stalia and with the special Sector of the Central Party Committee, more minerally precisely with the so-called "Stalia's bettalian". In the period of the "Great Purge", 1936-1938, all arrests of members of the Politeburo, the Central Committee and the Sovnerkon, who were not lucky enough to please Stalia, were partly carried out through the iquest section of the 1st Division. Pherefore, it has to be assumed that the field of operations of the inquest section of the 1st Division is not limited only with cases of persons, arrested for breaking the rules, set for the protection of the leaders. Practically the investigators of this section execute the functions of

the investigators for expecially important and super-secret enses. So, in 1957-38, prests of all REVD because, to begin with lagede and leabov, were estated set with the assent of the Special Sector of the Control Party Committee, and the cases went through the quest section of the 1st Divinion.

Paramonal setting. It sensemed with the problem of personnel for the whole 1st Division and also enesks up and selects technical workers for the maintenance of the Aramlia, "nonenclature objects" (i.e. government buildings) and private accommodation of all persons under protection of the 1st Division.

The personnel section of the 1st Division is connected in its work with the Personnel Administration of the MAYD UNDER DUE is not bound to carry out all its orders. However, the instructions of Stalin's personne private secretarist as tof the selection, cheekeding-up and distribution of the personnel are obligatory for the personnel section of the 1st Division. It is even possible to say, that the Special Sector, i.e. Stalin's private secretarist, if we want to be more precise, is directing the work of the whole 1st Division through its personnel section.

Registration and Information Section. Registers all travels of the persons who have to be guarded and accordingly gives instructions to the operative section and to the commandants. Registers all persons, visiting the Kremiin, who are not in the possession of permanent peases, and earries on all other forms and minds of registration, accessary for the current work of the lat Division. Is permanently sensected in its work with the 2nd sector of the 1st Special Division (the recording of anti-soviet elements): from which it gots all the accessary information, it is possible to assume that fermerly this section was a part of the 1st Special Division. The registration section is also directly connected with Stalin's private secretarist, as well as with the secretarists of the Central Party Committee.

Ascording to the date that have not been verified, it publicates a secret information bulletin for the 1st Division. The kencert Office of the 1st Division is attached to this section.

The Commenter of the bodyguard. Is subordinated directly to the Chief of the 1st Division (and through him to the Special hostage of the Control Committee) and is concerned with guarding Stella and other persons under the protection of the 1st Division. The corresponding men of the bodyguard of the persons, mentioned above, are subordinated to him.

A special brigade of bodyguards, densisting exclusively of the SKVD-man on the staff of the 1st Division, is attached to each "leader". Two of his bodyguards have always to accompany the "leader" wherever he is and wherever he goes. These men are changed every eight hours. Thus, the brigade of the podyguards normally consists of 6 guards and one commender. Then the "leader" lasves mosoos, the brigade of the bodyguards in reinforced by the operative group. Secides, the country-houses where the "leaders" resides have their internal and external guard.

Atalia and all members of the Polithuro have quarters in the Kremlin and, besides that, country-houses, situated some 25-4; miles from Momow slong the Mombalak road, on the banks of the gi-ver Momba. All the eres around these government, villag with the redius of 5-10 kilmeters has been proclaimed "forbidden sone", and is guarded by a special division of Save treops, every green who enters this forbidden sone without a special pass, has to be arrested without delay, and his identity has to be assertained through the special recording of the MAYS.

The Commender of the irrelin Guards. Is conserned with the whole internal and external guard of the Krenlin and is subording—ted to the Chief of the 1st Division (and through his - to the Special Sector of the Central Committee). The commender of the kren-lin guards has under him:

- a) the 1st commandant's office of the Arealia guard,
- b) the division of the Kremlin guards a division of the Shekist troops carps d'elite of the MKWD, armed and menned according to special previsions. This division is entrusted with the service of the internal and external guarding of the Kremlin, carried out together with the students of the special military school, bearing the name of the Supreme Soviet of the Usok and situated within the Eremlin walls.

By the way, the commander of the Ercalin guards has not to be confused with the Ercalin superintendent. The latter carries on the edministrative and supply duties as to the inner regulations in the Ercalin, receives fareigners of high standing, plans and organises different receptions at Stalin's, Nelotov's and other "leaders", is responsible for the mainimense of order during the sessions of the Supreme Seviet in the Rig Ercalin Palece etc.

The Kremlin is undoubtedly the most earefully guarded object of the whole world, though an unitiated person will hardly notice it. The visitors can enter the Kremlin mainly through the gates of the Spassky Tower, epening on the Red Square. All other entrances to the Kremlin are closed for the visitors, and they may be used only by persons, living in the Kremlin and having a permanent pass for entering it. The Spassky gate is open in the day time, and the way is apparently barred only by two sentries in the uniferus of the Supreme Soviet military school, but it is, probably, much more difficult to pass through this open gate than to get to the American depot where stom hombs are stored.

Foreign diplomets of high standing and foreign guests of the Soviet government, having been invited to visit the Kremlin, pess the Spassky gate almost without any impediments, and they cannot even imagine what it means for an ordinary poviet citizen to ge 'through the whole procedure for getting a pass to the Kremlin. Such a pass can be get only in the result of a call made by some of the high party and government institutions located there, or according to a personal invitation of one of the leaders. The usual order of issuing a pass is as follows:

The person, calling that or another visitor, sends to the commender of the Kremlin guards a request of the established type, indicating name, petronymic, surname of the visitor, his address, place of work and the reason of his being called to the Aremlin. The commander sends the copy of this request through the registratic section of the 1st Division to the special recording sector of the 1st Special Division of the GUGB. If this person is a non-resident of Mossow, a ciphered enquiry about him As-being sent

to the 1st Special Division of the regional administration of the MEVD that is concerned with his place of residence or work. If such a person was recorded with the registration files of the ARE (enti-Seviet elements), the pass will not be issued to him, but noither he, nor the person who submitted the request for seeing his will be informed about the reasons of the denial.

If the ensuer of the 1st Special Division is a favourable one. The request is being forwarded to the effice of the Arealin superintendent, that summens this person to visit the Kremlia on a certain day and at a certain time. In such cases a car on suty with the transport section of the 1st Division is being ment to bring the men to the Spassky Tower. My this time a pess has already been made out, in four copies and usually of different colors, in the peas office. All these four sepies are handed to the visitor and he is told, politely but firmly, to up in a certain direction without stopping envelors or stering at anything. Some two bundred neters away the visitor is not by a genriamen who cheeks up his passes, leaves one of them with him and directs the visitor to the next guardemen with the same instructions. The last guardeman on duty accompanies him to the door of the reca where he has been called. There he is met by the private secretary of the person calling him, who cheeks up his documents and instructs the visitor to give a short account of his business, not detaining the chief with unnecessary talk. As soon is the "audience" is closed, the visitor is eccupanied exactly in the same way to the exit from the Krealia.

If a Polithuro member works outside the Kroulin walls, the same procedure is introduced in the institution where he is the bess. So, for instance, when lessr M. Laganovich was the People's Commisser for Rail Ways (1935-1942), the pass to the building of the People's Commisserist was issued by the Transport administration of the MEVD, but a special official of the 1st Division issued the passes to the flat where the office of Esgenovich was located. In this case the visitor size received four passes, the last of which he handed to the official of the 1st Division on dutyfor the

Marken's flat, the showed him the necessary door and instructed his to pass quickly without stopping and looking at the beards on other doors. Two guards in the MATO uniform, armed with guas were on duty at the door of Enganovich's reception-room.

Ordehonikides, the only one from all members of the Polithure, who flatly refused to have special guards, and note the second to his comparatively simple. Ordehonikides protested against the setting up of the bodyguard in such a categorical way, that the 1st Division was obliged to protest him secretly, in a way, not noticeable to Ordehonikides himself.

Commander of the Guard of Chicata is consermed with guarding of the government objects, mentioned above, with the exception of the Kremlin. He has in his subordination the seconds generalent's office (vtoray memordantees komendature) that has in its disposal the following units of the NKVD guard troops:

- a) Special division MID (regulirevan ulichaege dvisheniya) regulation of traffie). This division consists of approximately three thousand MIVD men, that have been specially trained. The division owes its name to the fact, that a considerable part of its personnel wears the militia uniforms with the oversloeve sign "MID". This division guards the road from the framiin to the country residences of Stalin and other persons on the "memenclature list". Their permanent duties include also the regulation of the traffic and the guarding of all streets between the Kremlin and the buildings occupied by the Central Party Counittee, the Central Counittee of the Komsonel, the Central of the People's Commissors of the USSR and other objects under protection of the lat Livision. If Stelin or other members of the Politbure visit some plants or constructions in Moscow, the guarding of all streets included in the Foute is immediately pessed from the militis to the EUD division.
- b) A special division of might grands is used for granding the governmental high reed in Messow at might. The posts manual by these guards intensify the protection of this reed, already sesured by other sub-units. The staff of this division is situated in one of the houses in the Balakey Grandikovsky lane.

e) Grand division of the HKVD - mennet and assessing to the same standards as the grand division of the Kremlin, in granding the territory, where persons under protection of the 1st Division reside.

Besides this, a special group of water militie, guarding the part of the river Moskva where it flows through the territory reserved for the residence of the Government members, is obviously subordinated to the 2nd commendant's office.

Besides the two Kemmandsture's (commandant's offices), meationed above, there are other Kemmandantures, concerned with the guarding of other objects under protection of the 1st Division. The authors had no possibility of clearing up the functions and tasks of all these kommandantures of the 1st Division, but it is known that the red Kemmandanture is concerned with the anti-aireraft defence of Moscow.

The protection of Stalin and other high party officials dering their daily journey from the Fremlin to the "governmental area" is carried on with utmost care, and even at the time of peace surpasses by far enything that was permitted, for example, by Mitler during the years of war.

Assording to the general plan of reconstruction of Moseow all streets, included into the daily route of Stalin and his collaborators, acquired unusual breakth of 40 and even 60 meters, that is practically absolutely unnecessary. The care of "leaders" run always along the very middle of these streets what practically excludes every possibility of an attempt. The inhabitants of the houses along this route are subjected to a special check-up of the lat Division, and all families that smake a suspicion in any may are immediately custod, that water regions of Moseow.

on the Mesheisk highrest all the territory up to the government villes and Santher-sheet, for some 80 miles from Moscow, is divided into several homeostatures, with an all-day-round duty in the area of each homeostature. Before the wer these homeostature were meaned employees of the 1st Division, and this system has probably been preserved after the war.

Usually these men were the militie uniforms without any distinguishing features of their special destination. Each section of the most was secured with signal posts and telephones. Aben Stelin left the Freelin or the gates of his ville, the "elern" signal was given to all posts.

is soon as the cortege of Stalin or of some other leader has left the section of one kommendantura, the next one is notified by a special signal about the approach of cers in order to stop any cross-movement. Any person, riding or walking slong the highroad at this moment and stopping for any reason (for instance, to gump the tire of a car or a bicycle, etc.) has to present him personal documents for a check-up, and if snything seems suspicious he is arrested and questioned in the inquest section of the 1st Division. One former prisoner of the Ukhts-rechors "corrective labor emp" told the authors of this work that one of his fellowinnetes was a collective farmer from the environs of Moscow, who was sentenced in 1936 for an attempt upon stalin's life. This collective farmer came to Moscow on some business. By the even was he had a drop too, such, and being drunk, fell down to sleep somewhere near the Moshaisk highroad. He woke in the MKVD. During the search a "weapon" was found on him - a kitchen mile of the kind used in the country. Three days later this collective farmer was brought to the Butyrks prises, and the "troiks" of the Moseow regional MEVD administration sentenced him to five years of deportation, according to the clause 56, per.8 - terrorism. laking into consideration such cases one must not be astonished at the fest, that Moscow eltisons try to turn into the side streets as sees as they hear the heesens of the approaching government cars.

Stalin's cortège for his journeys in Moscow and along the Mosheick highrest usually consists of 3-4 cars with the "218-7" trade-mark. These cars are home-made, armoured, their greenish glasses are bullet-proof. A representative of the 1st Division must be always present at their reception from the plant.

The first ear in the Stalin's certage has the tesk of knocking down all persons creasing the road before the cortage as well se my ser that might be a danger to the governmental care. Hemides the driver, men of the 1st Division are in the first ear, keeping an attentive eye on all persons and sars on Stelin's route. Stelin himself is usually in the second or in the third car, which periodically change their place in the cortege. Stalin's ear could get to the head of the column only before the very entrance to the Kremlin or directly at the gate of Stelin's villa. The drivers of all governmental sars were without any exception on the staff of the 1St Division as werkers of its transport section

The commandant of the guard of objects is also concerned with guarding the government hunting estates. The so called "presserve" at the station los of the Morthern railway by Moscow, was one of such estates. Alk were among other animals of this estates, though ordinary citizens of the Soviet Union were prohibited to hunt them.

Transport section. Is concerned with all governmental means of transportation.

shile travelling over the Soviet Union, Stalin and other folithuro members use their private railway cars. Before the war the Soviet leaders almost never used tem simplanes, finding this kind of transport teo risky for their precious seives. According to some information, a special, absolutely secret order was issued by Stalin before the war, formally promibiting to the "nomenclature workers" to use planes without exceptionally serious reasons and without his own approval of every flight, may be, the "great leader" feared that someone of his collaborators might flee abroadili as far as it is known, btalin himself flew only once - from Moscos to Teheram, in 1985.

The former chief of the government trein dislovedex-sochi informed the suthers about the following details of protecting Stalin and other "leaders" during their railway travels.

Every member of the Polithuro has its own private relicay ear that may be used only by himself and by his family members. As to their outward appearance these cars differed in no way from the usual passenger's cars, but they were exceedingly luxurious inside. So, for instance, managony was used for the

interior deceration and farmiture of Stalin's ear, Karelian birch was used for the same purposes in Karenovich's car etc. The care were constructed in such a way that the jerks at the joints of rails were not felt inside the ear. For this aim a thick layer of lead, two layers of rough felt and one of cork were put under the weeden planking of the floor which was covered in its turn with a layer of felt, lineisum and a magnificent carpet. Such a personal car was used only few 20-30 days in the year, but nevertheless every year there were chligatory capital repairs, the costs of which amounted to hundreds of thousands of roubles for only one ear.

The Soviet bureaucrats of a lower rank travelled generally in alceping-care (the so-called "Mitropa" care) of the usual fast trains; several fast trains were accusodating them: the "Med Arrow" express plying between Moscow and Leningrad, "LAIX-happens to 1" - Moscow-Manchuria etc. The governmental train Mislowodsk-Sochi, plying between the groups of spas, was of the same kind.

their personal car was coupled in the end of the train, and it was followed by exactly the same "covering" car with an MAVD detechment. Such an order existed only for the governmental train Kislovodsh-Sochi; if Stalin or his collegiques were travelling in other directions, a special train was put together for each of them including the personal car of the "leader". Before such person got into the train, the chief of the train had been summoned to the MAVD headquarters of this railroad and signed a special promise of avoiding any leakage about the person of the traveller and his guards.

when the train leaves the station, the chief of the train and the chief of the railroad MEVD get into the lecomotive and stay there until the train reaches its place of destination.

A day or two before the arrival of Stalin, a special official of the 1st Division comes to every relirond edministration to work out with the chief of the railread SEVD measures securing the safety of the "leader". Stalin is accompanied only by a small

TO SEE HEALTH STREET

Declassified in Part - Sanitized Copy Approved for Release 2012/10/04 : CIA-RDP80-00926A003100010005-3

group of his bodygmard and efficiels of the 1st Division, coming from Mescew. All the rest of the guards are provided by the chief of the railroad MKVD. The men of the MKVD team always wear plain clothes, and are distributed in a more or less proportional way to stand in the tembours of the whole train, or are mixed up with other passengers of the train. Some men always take a seet in the dining-car to listen the conversations of the passengers. The chief of the railroad MKVD, travelling in the locomotive, is considered to be the chief of the local guards, but besides him, a pagessentative of the 1st Division, is travelling in Stalin's car. Before the train leaves the station, the chief of the train is introduced to him, and the orders of this official of the 1st Division are obligatory both for the chief of the train and the chief of the railroad MKVD.

Resides those three persons nobody else has the right to know sho travels in the special car. coupled in the end of the train. But usually the personnel of the train and the station assters guess the rank of the traveller by the character of the protective measures. Such a train stops only at central stations to take water. Then the train has to pass, all arrival and departure railway points are tightly closed with spixes at all stetions. A pointman stands together with an MAYD agent-representative of this station at each railway point. The guards mearing MAYD uniforms, operative agents-representatives of the Transport Section of the railroad MAYD, the railway militia stand along the transhes, in tunnels and along the road-bed.

The train is stopped at the departure and arrival platforms in such a way that the pursuant personal car of atalin or of any other member of the Folithuro would be exactly opposite the operative post of the MEYD of this station. Immediately after the arrival of the train the MEYD guards in plain elothes range themselves in lines on both sides of the car, and a group of guards fills in the adjoining part of the platform and im different ways prevents the public to go sheed, though no formal order is given to the people to stop, at first two official of the lat

Division slight from the ear, then they are followed by Stalin and a souple of EKVD men. All this group passes quickly the EKVD post and gets into some ears, looking exactly the same and waiting for Stalin. Usually the "Buick" cars are waiting for Stalin at the Sochi station. During all this correctly even the enief of the train cannot approach the Stalin's car. All these measures of presention are taken in spite of the fast that only the members of the government, the high renking party officials and some distinguished generals enjoy the right to travel in this governmental train.

In case of any breakage or direpair in Stalin's car, the master may enter it only accompanied by the chief of the railroad HEVD, and his box with tools is previously inspected with greatest care. A "forbidden zone" with a radius of more than 5 kilometers has been established around the governmental villas between Bochi and Matsesta. But the fear of the NKVD is so intense, that people don't even try to approach this some. when molotow, magamovich, Voroshilov, indreyev, chdsnov and other leaders were travelling, the same precaution measures were taxen. The only exception was made by the member of rolithuro and reople's Commisser for desty Industry, Sergo Ordshonikicze (died in 193/) who liked to walk along the platform enoug the public that helied him. buch . behaviour of the "leader" grove to dispair the men of the 1st Division who had to guard nim. The second-best "leaders" travelled in general cars of this governmental train, while sudenniy spent most of his time in the dining-car, where he took a lot of crimes of different kinds.

Stalin and other Polithuro members did not take their food from the dining-car during their travels, as each of them had, a kitchen in his personal car, where food for him and the group of persons, accompanying him, was prepared. The normal car of this train had eight two-seated compartments, with a bath-room for each two compartments. Stalin's car consisted of a kitchen, a study, secretary's office, two bed-rooms, a bath-room, a drawing-room and a reserve compartment. All of this was furnished with highest possible confort and lummery that beet by far the interior decora-

tion of the former train train. It is characteristic that the train of the markered tear Sikolai the Second was left on the side-track of Detaknyo Sele (formerly Tearskeye Sele) near Lenin-grad and its cars could not be used for this governmental train,—not saying enything about using them for Stalin's personal needs,—as they were found to be "unsufficiently confortable".

The yearly meintenance of only this governmental train gave about a million roubles of dead loss, which was severed out of the special fund of the Sownerkon of the Usak. Capital repairs of this train were node every year, when absolutely all the equipment of the cars was changed, while all other passenger trains in the USSE are subjected: to capital repairs once in aix years. And what are the costs for maintaining all personal sars? There are more than a thousand of them in the USAR for the use of different Seviet and Party burequerate, though, of source, they are not furnished with such a luxury, as Stalin's ear. It is sufficient to mention that before the war personal cars were assigned, besides the Krealin aristocracy, to all the secretaries of the regional party committees, all chiefs of the regional MAYD administrations. all the commenders of the military districts, all chiefs of the railways, all chiefs of the railwaoad SavDis etc., etc. inst is how the leaders of the first socialistic state in world arrange their personal life !

If stalin's train is stopped on its way even for five minutes, all the personnel guilty of this "crime" is subjected to immediate arrest. Such a case occured once in 1954 on the way from Mostov to Sochi. A train of tank-cars with bensine was runming essually sheed of Stalin's train, and for some reasons or others it could not be put on the side track. As a result of this, the governmental train was stopped before the semaphore of an intermédiate station for three minutes. This happened at night, and Stalin did not even notice it, but the man on duty at the station the station-master and even the chief of the railroad were immediately arrested.

All, described above, gives some ideas of the functions and tasks of the transport section of the 1st Division.

The Kremlin Supely Department. Controls all food products received for the use in the Kremlin and in governmental country-houses. Is subordinated to the Kremlin superintendent and to the chief of the 1st Division.

The department consists of samitary section, laboratory and transport section. The laboratory is concerned with the analysis of all food stuffs coming to the Kremlin, while the transport section of the Kremlin supply department not only delivers these food products to the Kremlin, but also takes care that they may not be poisoned on the way.

So, for instance, if, let us say, milk is being delivered to the Kremlin from the governmental state farm near Mo. com, it is accompanied without fail by an official of the transport section of the multiply department of the lat Division.

The ATO section (meterial-technical provision) is concerned with covering the material and technical needs of the 1st Division, from arms, military and civil clothing and up to fuel for the auto-transport section.

Administrative and Maintenance nection. Is concerned with the problems of supplying the officials of the 1st Division, of providing them with lodgings, permits for a place in a rest-home and fulfils hundreds of other administrative and maintenance functions, connected with the well-being of the employees of the lat Division.

x x x

such are tests, structure and field of operations of the 1st division of the MIVD USER. Let us call once more to our sind AL that the 1st Division exists only in Moscow, while the protection of provincial "leaders" of the Communist party and Soviet government is carried on by the 2nd Special Divisions of the corresponding territorial, administrations of the MAVD-mulb.

This chapter could not be so complete and exact as it might be desirable, but it is possible to give a complete survey of the activity of the let Division only after a long and minute collection

of all possible materials

stemp "top secret" on all . (Olimption connected with the property of the Kremlia distatorable made this work particularly difficult. The authors were obliged to collect this in-

Declassified in Part - Sanitized Copy Approved for Release 2012/10/04 : CIA-RDP80-00926A003100010005-3

Declassified in Part - Sanitized Copy Approved for Release 2012/10/04: CIA-RDP80-00926A003100010005-

POREAGED

Every dietatorial or, as it is now commonly called, totalitarian regime keeps itself in power mainly by seems of a carefully conceived system of terror directed against the subjects of this regime. The more radical and absolute the character of the dietatorship, the more developed are its organs of terror and appression.

. .

The 20th Century gave birth to a new form of dictaterships the dictatorship of a party, subordinating to itself the governmental apparatus and forcibly directing the shole life of the country and even the private life of its citizens. Two countries presented a picture of this dictatorship of a party in its most redical and perfected forms dational-socialist Germany and the Communistic coviet union. At present we co not need to point out the similarity of these two dictatorships or even of their apparent autual nomities declared in their foreign and domestic policies, the goal of world domination and both have made merciless terror the chief weapon of their policy.

permitted world public opinion to become acquainted with all the repulsive details of the activities of the vestago, but, and other organs of nitherite terror. But the activities of the organs of Doviet terror have remained for long years midden from the world public opinion. Only from time to time has the tentimony of individual victims of this terror appeared in the foreign press and attracted some reaction even if only of a weak nature. The problem of Soviet terror was considered as a mussian domestic affair, but how when an ever increasing number of nations fear that Communism will lay on them its deadly pay and when some nations are already becoming acquainted with the MAVD (AUB) in practice, this problem has begun to attract a special attention.

But even now the system of Soviet terror and suppression is known, rather, according to the testimony of individual victims of the Stalinistic terror. The world is becoming acquainted gradually with the results of the activities of the SEVD (MGB), but not with the inner mechanism of this mest grinder, which exterminates people according to the principles "If he is not one of us - then he is against us?"

Unly the Russian people can disclose theAdetails of the structure and methods of work, of the Soviet terror system, for they themselves have been subjected to the activities of that institutions for 30 years. These people are not deceived by the Kreslinslying propagands about the construction of a free and democratic socialist society in the Soviet Union nor are they misled by the illusions of those who believe that an agreement with Stalin is possible concerning peace and co-operation.

Only the Russian people may acquaint the other peoples of the world with all the details of the distastful aspects of Communise and only they can perform this work with sufficient knowledge of the matter. This is their moral duty to the suffering Mussian people and to all of humanity. But this is, at the same time, their practical contribution to the general struggle for national ladependence and personal freedom. The deciding moment for the clash between the forces of freedom and forces of tyranny is approaching. In order to halt the attack of Communism and then to destroy this denger it is necessary first of all to know its main weaponstactics and technique of its undermining work outside the Soviet sphere, and methods of terror and suppression inside that sphere. It is 100 necessary to know the most important instruments of the Communist party and of the Stelia dictatorships its organs of "State Beenrity".

The present work is an attempt to analyse the inner structure and methods of work of the Soviet organs of state security. By means of laborious collection of various data, by means of questioning of many former officials of these organs, and from the personal recollections of the authors an attempt has been made to create a picture of the Soviet organs of state security as they existed ""

en the eve of the world wer II. As a matter of fact, in many cases, the authors could not be quite certain of their data, not to speak of the exectness of details. We have to point out that the work was written not mainly from documents but from the testimo-may of individuals. Some of them, from the number of former MIVL speats, could have intentionally distorted the picture in order to misinform the reader, but this could mainly be in the details.

The authors set for themselves the aim of giving a general picture of the organs of the MKVD in a certain limited period of its developments between the end of the "Great Purge" period and the start of the world war II - that is between 1938 and 1941. In this period all organs of Soviet terrorism were united in one office - People's Commissariat for Internal Affairs of the USSK (MKVD). After the war these organs were split between two ministries - Ministry for State Security (MGB) and the Ministry for Internal Affairs (MVD).

50X1-HUM

14

46

P**PE**

17

1

CHAPTER I

THE MEANING AND ROLL OF THE MKVD IN THE SOVIET STOTAM

1. The Meaning of the NKVD

The rede's Commisseriat for Internal Affairs, divided after the war into two ministries, is deservedly called one of the mais supports of the Soviet Communist dictatorship in hussia. The soviet dictatorship has two main weapons to dominate the people: propagas de and terror. The skillful and aggressive propaganda utiligas within the User misinformation of the surrounding world, and outside the USSk misinformation of Soviet reality, and in that way gives the Breakin oligarchy rather wide support smong the masses of people, - especially in the west. But the MAYD is the most important tant weapon to suppress and dominate the people inside the bowlet Union. For this purpose the akti concentrates in its against and unlimited means of control, provocation, and terror. One may say that if the Uosh itself is merely the weepon which Communists are using to conquer the world, then the davi is the means of securing the reliability and compliance of that weapon (Ulba) in the already begun struggle for world domination.

abroad, the MKVL is ordinarily called the soviet secret relice. This definition is incorrect in substance. It is incorrect
because it does not reflect either the true character of the
sphese of action of this most important organ of the noishevist
dictatoranip. Any police, whether open or secret, is normally an
agency of state power. Its mission is to protect the interests of
the state, its political security in the first instance. Even the
Gestapo, guarding Hitler's dictatorable, was a state police, and
not a personal inquisition of Hitler Misself. In the Usen the signature in principle and practice is otherwise. Here are the basic characteristics of this institution:

1. The RKVD is an agency not of state, but of party power. Under this party power one must understand not the Communist Party as a whole, but only its oligarchical and absolute leadership the Politbure of the Central Committee of the Party, and the leaders of the Party central and local apparatus which help the Politbute to rule the country: in all, perhaps, sees 250-300 persons. 100

*14

##

*1

1

. 4

.....

. 1

1

400

The mission of the MKVD is to serve the securing of the interests not of the state, but of this headful of usurpers, who are making kussia their chief weapon in the struggle for the seizure of power over the entire world. The MKYD guards the security not of the state as a whole, - that is, of the country, the people, and authority .- but solely and alone the security of the ruling group of persons, which is commonly known under its abstract name-10000 the Soviet Power. This power finds itself in persenent conflict 110 with the majority of the people from the very first days of its 144 birth, as a result of the antidemocratic treacherous coup d'etat of October, 1917. Its policies inside and outside the country are directed against the natural, basic interests of the mussian people and the country.

Those who are inclined to see in this definition some kind of "propagande", are advised to think over the question once more when they acquaint themselves with the fact that the "Anti-boviet Elements" files of the MKVD and the system of "GULAG" (Concentre-4 tion Camps Administration of the MAYD), together embrace nearly all the adult population of the Unuk. we can mention, to the same effect, the activities of the Economic Administration of the MAVD in preventing the "sabotage" and "diversionist acts", which testify to the compulsory character of the Boviet "building of socialism in one country".

Thus, the first peculiarity of the MAVD is that this type of secret police serves only the interests of the ruling chiefs of the party in power, egainst the interests of the state which this group rules, contrary to the will of the people which it exploits.

2. The MKVD is an organization completely independent of the government system in the USSK, and, pertially, of the Party itself. Note than that, thanks to their exclusively conspiratorial character, the organization and activities of the MKVD are known in the country only in the most general terms, and then only, for example, after some facts concerning executions and arrestablesk out.

- 5 - . 111

. . .

It would be wrong to think that the Boviet Government - The Council of Mimisters - st any time would discuss the work of the **\#**.**** NEVD or would order it to do or not to do something. It is sufficlent to say that the Minister of Finance of the Usak, who preparately res the state budget, and later supervises its fulfilment, does not know the structure, nor the personnel, nor the utilization of expenses of the MKVD. To the sinencial Section of the Gosplan and to the State Budget sector of the Planning Administration of the Administration Ministry of Finance of the Ubbk is presented only the total sum 434 which the day needs. There is no discussion or verification and - 111 even this sum does not reveal all the expenditures of the MAVD. . because a certain part of these expanditures is included in a special secret fund of the Kremlin.

Not only the ordinary person, but the most high ranking officials in the USER know only one thing about the maVD: that it is The better not to know enything. If this work were to fell into the hands of a Soviet reader, it would be accepted as a revelation. Here is a fact established by one of the authors: soviet roreign -4.00 Minister Maxim Litvinov did not know what depart@ment of the MXVD Maria I was located in a building which he saw every day from the window of his office in Ujershinsky Street, in Moscow (former Lubjanks Street). One may excuse him, howevers not every official of the MKVD itself is informed of that which is outside the frame of his imagaiste competence. And this fact, by the way, has made extremely difficult the writing of this work, based, as was said in the Fore-word, on the evidence of former Chekists.

This insulation of the MKVD in the Soviet system of the party - we would say even its independence - is the second outstanding therecteristic of the Soviet Secret Police.

3. It would be possible to say, by analogy, that the SEVD is a state within a state. But the insulation of the SEVD within the Soviet state bears a very specific character. It is impossible to understand this if one does not take into account its third peculiarity: the simultaneously insulated and dominating position of the Soviet Secret Police.

This expresses itself in the fact that if the MKVD is made a complete secret from other governmental and even party organs (with exception of the yery highest - understood to be the Politheuro and its apparatus), these organs are as well known to the MKVD as the palm of your hand; at least they should be I The tentacles of the NKVD penetrate all reaches of governmental and party life in the USSR, beginning with the Council of ministers and ending in the basic party group of some kolkos, lest in the Siberian forests. It goes without saying that there are no secrets from the MKVD in the private lives of people of the USSK; it is not said in jest that each Soviet citizen has two shadows - one of his own and the other of the SKV...

It is only logical to exphasize that in the governmental and party system of the UBLE special conditions are created in order to favor the apy activities of the MAVD. We may characterize the Soviet system as one in which there occurs a fusion of the state and party, the leadership of which formally is in the hands of the state, but actually in the party. But in this emalgamention there is still one more element, unseen but slways present - the MKVD. Its organs are infiltrated into governmental and party organization nizations, unknown to the latter, in order to fully utilize their opposituaities to check every step of the state and party officials. up to the highest levels of the Soviet bureaucratic machine. The of this fusion, or better to say, permeation, most wide spread & of the MKVD in any Boviet governmental institution present "Special Offices" or "Special Branches" which exist is every factor ry, in every institution or governmental office.

According to its official regulations (the so called "stetus of the MEVD of the USSR), the MEVD cannot control or, putting it simply, has no right to apy against the Bolshevik Party, Neverthe-less we see that one of the basic links of the NEVD chain. binding the whole country, is the SPO - Secret Political Section or Administration. Its mission is the rooting out of sedition within the party, the liquidation of all and any deviationists, beginning with old time Trotskiftes and ending with the currently modish originators of cringing before the decedent west. The period of the "Great Purge", 1934-1939, shows us that the HAYD can be used against the Party just as well as it is used daily and hourly against the people and country.

0.1

4. However, the self same period of mass extermination of 1200 any and all, when the NKVL seized the people, - in the words of States lia himself, - only for the fact that "they welled on the same 41 美 street with Protskiptes" showed that sometimes the Party can be 4 used against the dkVD. we apeak of reprisals egainst Tagoda and all his consorts, totaling, it is said, up to 3,000 AVD officials ... and of the following reprisal against his executioner, Yeshev.

From this is follows that the NKVD is not the all-powerful X mester of the situation in the USSA. Spring against the state post er and even against the party, enjoying a greater: concentration 12.0 them-th of power than the state and party apparatus (in their # lower and middle levels), the MaVD finds itself under the thumb -1 of the individual who holds in his hand full power, uncer the thumb of Stalin. For this sim Stalin uses his own private apparatus, - so called "Stalin's Secretarist", - which operates through * ... the top secret special channels of the Kremlin, dere manifests it-1 7 6 3 8 10 16 self the facous Soviet system of cross-check insurance, that is a system of a double or even triple control of one and the same • ** person, organisation, or action.

Therefore, the fourth peculiarity of the MAVD is that this APP organ, which crose because the Communists trust no one and under no conditions does not enjoy itself the full confidence of the distator and his accomplises.

415

5. Further, it must be resembered that the SKVD is a kind of secret police which has its own armed forces, ladependent from the regular army of the USSA.

The mission of the MEVD armed forces is to support Stalin's power within the country against internal enemies, i.e. the people. while the army is designated for defence of his power only egainst foreign enemies. The bordder, internal, and escort troops of the MKVD are better armed than units of the regular army; their fighting sbility is much greater than that of regular troops located within the country in time of peece. And this is not a coincidence. Stelia still remembers the affair of Marshal Tuhachevaky. And, in addition to this there are special detachments of the JKW inside the army. *e shall recall only two titles: the "Saundh", with its crew of executioners, and the "Strangle Line Detachments", which liquidated deserters and atranglers from the field of bettle. However ever, the protection of Stelin, himself, is not in the hands of MKVD troops, assigned only for the external guard around the Krestill lin, but is performed by two special units: a) by the so-called "School of the Supreme Soviet", and b) by the First section of the HEVD - both of which are, directly subordinated to the "Stalin's . 1 Secretariat" and form a permanent garrison of the Arealin. W-23

The MKVT spies against the army, and against the MKVD, spies Stalin, hisself. Such is the system. The existence of two armies in one country is the fifth peculiarity of the MAVU, which distinguil uishes it from the secret police of any other, more normal regime

6. The history of our times shows that even in the most usdemocratic countries of South America or Central surope the secret police, at least formally, are not invested with judicial powers and the courts are separated from the police. The sixth peculiarity of the MKVD is that it has its own court system independent free the regular court system of the USSE, but completely subordinated to directives from the highest Communist Party organs. 75.4

The major characteristic of the AKVL court system is that the functions of arrest, presecution, and adjudication are very efter in the hands of one and the same official. The MKVD can

411

errest and try by means of its secret "court" any citizen of the USSR. There do exist certain regulations, restricting to some extent the arbitrary ections of the MKVD, but only with respect to those party officials employed in duties of party administration. The entire field of political crime, which is more than wide in the USSR, remains the sphere of the NKVD, and it operates this sphere as it wishes with no control or accounting what so ever, except to the dictator in the Arealin.

211

nearer, the more important political cases remain in the hands of the NAVD only during the preliminary investigation, after which they are decided by the high party leadership. These decisions one are then carried out by the NAVD, just as similar decisions and directives are carried out by the regular court system of the Usba.

7. It is necessary to mention here still one more peculiaries ty of the MAVD, although since the time of the destape this ceased to be its monopoly. We have in mind that the MAVD operates all penal institutions. Included in this term of penal institutions are those prisons which hold so many inmetes that they are organized as camps. We speak here about the system called whole (Administration of Camps) which operates all numerous concentration and labor camps with their many millions of immetes. All these prisoners find themselves in an uncontrolled power of the MAVD which prescribes the conditions of their confinement, which can change and previous court decision by means of special camp "courts", which operates special spy rings inside the camps just as it does in the "free" Soviet society, etc.

to note that in its usage of forced labor the MKVD is semi-official—
ly recognised as an organisation taking part in the "planned coastruction of the socialistic economy of the Ubik". The same will of the MKVD carries out a number of most important governmental industrial projects — it digs canals, brings into production coal mines and oil wells in the Arctic, cuts timber far export etc., thereby providing the Boviet Union and the World Communist movement with dollars and gold.

As a result, the seventh and not unimportant peculiarity of the NKVD is its function as a slave owner and coloniser of arctic regions.

be incorrect if still one more very important aspect of the Mayberre not treated for - its significance to the outer world. If we were not treated for - its significance to the outer world. If we were to say that the USER is nothing ather than a case for the spreading of communistic world revolution, then it would be clear that the MAYD must play its own great role in this undertaking. Then the reader acquaints nimself with the functions of the Foreign Administration of the MAYD, then it would not be difficult to case to the realization that the MAYD may be termed not so much a service as an international communistic secret police. This side of the scrivities of the MAYD is now better known.

Canadian storic s,y case, that the navi occultes intesti only site ordinary capionage for military and dominary capionage for military and dominaric pulposes, at he the case in other countries, the perscontion of nussian emigrants, the murder of anti-boviet activists - such as irotary, and foreign states on - such as the areana, resident formerly, office general sixorski; its own agents abroad, as, for example, the secretary of the Central Committee of the distinct committee of the distinct tarty, cose mission the Chinase warstal fin nuing branch, the soviet ambressor in action, for examples of the samples of the samples.

not present the monopoly of the NaVD and that political merders have been frequently practiced by the secret police of other countries, mentioning as an obvious example the destapo activities in Nazi Germany. We do not intend to deny this fact, but the new and principally distinguishing factor in the case of the NaVD is its systematic methods, not just isolated cases. We may say it is a planned system, well thought out, organized, and executed with merciless consequence.

against anti-Soviet organisations outside the USER, the MKVD plays still another important role for the Kremlin. This is to spy upon Soviet personnel in other countries - such as diplomats, trade representatives, and even Soviet military espionage agents. Included also within its competence are the leaders of the international Communist movement. Just as within the USER, the NKVD thereby provides for a complete system of double and triple control.

This international function of the MaVL, although the last on our list of peculiarities, is, never the less, in its significance one of the most important characteristics of the Kremlin's secret police.

2. The dethods of the MKVD

methods of the MKVD, features which in many respects differ from those habitually used by ordinary secret police. It is still possible to say this even though the world now knows the methods used by the destapo.

1. From the very first words of Lenin's decree creating the "Cheks", - forefunner of the present day mayb (Mus), - it was clear—
by evident that the Soviet secret police was to be and became a purely terroristic organization. At the present time the period of revolutionary romanticism is past and the MkVb is no longer hailed as the "proleterian guillotine" or the "all devouring flame of the ned terror". "Euresucracism, this second nature of the Communistic experiment, has now laid its heavy hand on this appearatus for the hunting and extermination of people. Now people are liquidated schoulding to the "Five-year plane". This will be made clear in the chapter which describes a map hanging in the office of the First Special Section of the MKVD, in Moscow, the map covered with marks indicating numbers of potential victims, that is, the numbers of "ASE" (anti-Soviet elements) in different areas of the Usba.

This map reveals a direct link or connection between the present form of the "red terror" and the construction of war plants and extended in the wide regions beyond the Arctic circle.

The terror of the NAVD has now become less open. So longer are the names of victims published and slogens edvertised. Sever the less, the terror has become even more cruel. In the earlier days a man might be openly condemned and shot because as a member if of the former upper classes (simply - a "former") he, by the server ist definition of classes, either had or would take part in the fight against the regime. Now people are liquidated by means of overwork, under the inhuman conditions of the soviet labor camps, in only because the regime needs to build a factory or dig a canal. The hunt for people is carried on at present time not only because of danger to the regime, but because of a need for new slave laboration of danger to the regime, but because of a need for new slave laboration of the more active political enemies, and include the executions of the more active political enemies, such as members of the Vlassov movement and the unfortunate fugicatives cought and returned to the bash by the Western powers.

2. From what has been said above it is already possible to see the second peculiarity of poviet terrorian, namely, - the preventive character of this terror, benin himself declared the sorking principle of the Soviet security organs to be directly opposed to the teachings by Christ. That is, it is better that nine innocent should suffer than that one guilty should be allowed to escape publishment. Categories of "automatic arrest" was not an invention of the victors over the Masi Germany, for one of the first steps taxed by the Cheka at the end of 1917 was the introduction of a system was hostages. The difference here is that from those arrested by the Cheka, as a "precautionary measure", - the former officers, are stocrats, bankers, professors, priests etc., - were dragged the victors of the periodic executions.

One can even say that the MEVD has its own sociologists faithed by seems of the Ked Terror, Lenin and then Stalin changed in a draws atic way the social and even age-group structure of the Aussian pulation. When Stalin boasted in one conference that in a Museian III. Village one could not find "in day time with a light" the figure:

the old viliage "elder", village priest or a kulak, he only paid his respects to the sociological talents of his NAVD.

with an utmost energy throughout all those countries which were occupied by the Soviets during and after the war. And if a new war does not interrupt this new wave of the Red Terror, the text-books on ethnography will have to cross out the names of such nations as Estonian or Lettish, and to a greater extent simplify the picture of social composition of the population in Poland, Saech-Slovania and the Belkan countries.

3. In speaking of the methods of the AXVD, we must note that the officials of the MAVD can act arbitrary and enjoy the complete impunity of action as long as they degrade the people, as long as they torture and aurder in eccordance with the currently existing political line - the political line of the Polithero. Though, in the office of the Prosecutor General of the USER there is a special prosecuting attorney for suppervision over the Mayle, never the less it is a zere case, bordering on a miracle, anan a patition is entertained against the actions of some organ or official of the MKVD and a case is reviewed. But even then, no disciplinary seasures are taken against the Chekista even is they are guilty of the desti of an innocent individual. In these cases, as a great kindness to the relatives, is issued a certificate to the effect that "the about mentioned was penalized in connection with certain affairs which, upon further investigation, are not substantiated ... ". buch a certificate at least gives the sides of the penalized one an oppositunity to receive work, and his children the opportunity to enter school, etc.

day's torturer-investigators are thrown in the same prison cell with the persons whom only last night they had tortured by sheakling the vall or finger unil splitting. It is well known that the cesses sations of Tegoda occasioned by themselves the death, without extenditude, of all his closest co-workers, all these Paukers, Trilisses, Bormens, Cohene, and Redeases - who had just before been glorified.

as the "wonderful Chekist legion". Together with them "welked down the corridor" as enemies of the people" hundreds and hundreds of their essistants; nearly all of whom, through long years, themselves "sent down the corridor" tens of thousands of Bussian people, in the greater part innocent even in the face of the famous 58th article of the Soviet penal code xx.

Though Stalin thought that he was liquidating only his own enemies, in these cases he was putting a bullet in the nape of the neck of the unquestionably real enemies of the people. In his own turn, the downfall of the killer and successor of Yagoda - the "Stalinist", "Iron" commissar Yezhov, brought about its own bloody purge enong those who only just before thoroughly purged the Checkist cadres. All those executors who worked with Yezhov were shot without exception. Stalin know how to emerge from water dry.

Generally speaking, every unsuccessful operation, especially a failure in the secret work abroad, results in the severe punishment of the responsible MKVD personnel. There is no doubt that Campadian justice indirectly caught up with others, in adultion to those who sat on the defendant's bench at montreals the MKVD dealty severely with all of those people who, being in Canada, were so institutive as not to apprehend Igor Guzenko. It is certain that some of the former collegues of the Russian school teacher Kosienkina, who jumped from the window of the Soviet consulate in New York, were obliged to pay dearly for her act when they, in turn, had to "jump" from America back into imbjenks street.

actually, suspicion and apy fever flourish not less, but more, within the walls of the MKVD than outside. Behind every Checkist stands another one, if not two, checkist on his loyalty. Consequently, the inclination is to think that the object of this surveillance is nothing more than another "heretofore undiscovered enemy of the people". This spirit of sutual suspicion and internal any fever was successfully exploited by the Japanese intelligences.

z) One of meny Chekista terms for the death penalty.

zz) This article deals with "crimes" egainst the Soviet political system.

in the chapter on the "KRU" (Counter Intelligence Administration) had we shall cite the case of a successful provocation which resulted the in the massacre of Chekists by Chekists themselves.

4. One of the most peculiar characteristics of the MAYD lies in its methods for utilisation of agents. The Soviet secret police !!! relies not so such upon the quality, as upon the quantity of its agents. From the outside it may appear that this mania of the MKVD tends to convert the entire population of the Soviet Union into a men gigantic network of its spice. Ministers and housesside, generals 1927 and inmates of concentration camps, scientists and miners, artists and school boys, people without regard for age and sex, are recruited as agents of AKVD. There is only one restriction: the manual one recruiting "does not recommend the recruiting or children less than" twelve years old" in view of "the danger that they will not obserted ve the rules of secrecy". It is understandable that nobody can even approximately estimete the number of Navi agents. But there is no doubt that they number millions, if not tens of millions. It is sufficient to say that "according to regulations" the ordinary abscount house must have the following number of any agents: the careteker. the doorsen, and at least one scent per spertment . It is no wonder that in the Soviet Union it is said, half joxingly, nelf seriously that if two people are chosen at random, on of them is a "seksot" | that is, a secret seent of the MKVD.

The explanation of the reliance upon the quantity of agentalies evidently in the lack within the MKVD of qualified parsonnel able to properly train agents. We will treat apparately the characteristics of MKVD personnel, showing the extremely low level of their general and even police education. These people are very often unable to cope with their tasks, and in order to clear their cases they resort either to beatings of the arrestess or to exhausting ay means of endless questioning and special conditions of confinements.

n) This applies to the typical soscow spartment, which houses five or six families.

According to a Mussian saying, the Chaka makes a virtue of its shortcomings, proclaiming that " the whole people side the SAYDE In practice this means that the Communists and members of the Komacan sol are formally required to collaborate with the SAYD. As Legian said: "Every Communist must be a Chakist". Then repruited as against they are told that this is their party duty. To the non party people who refuse such work it is hinted that such refusal shows that they are evidently "against the Soviet Power". And if some brave men still refuse to become a traitor to his relatives and friends, they are directly placed in the file of "ASE" (anti-Soviet elements) and sooner or later repressed.

As a result, there is created a gigantic net of secret agents of all embracing types. This net covers, without exception, all Soviet institutions, beginning with the rollthuro and ending with the levetory attendents. Using this net, the MKVD "keeps Chesist vigi-" lence", that is, it uses the daily reports of its millions of secuta for the operation of its system of preventive terror. Of course, the value of these sgents, recruited in large part under threats, is not great and for experienced intelligence spency they by themselves, do not present auch danger. On the other hand, because of their very abundance the MAVD reaches its goal, so to say, from the opposit site end: knowing that SKVD agents are everywhere and seeing such en egent in almost every person, the opponents of the buviet regime simply fear to show any activity, not to speak of organizing any opposition. The preventive nature of soviet terror, in this case, also plays its prominent role is forbiduing the very conception of ideas of struggle against Communism.

The system under which the MKVD uses agents may be compared to the actions of a fisherman who, having only bed nets, fills the entire ocean with them in the uppe that in at least one of them he would catch a small fish. But what is impossible for an individual fisherman, however capable or rich he might be, is possible for the MKVD, because it has at its disposal an unlimited number of agents and can at any time turn almost any Soviet citizen into Its agents. The more so, since the agents work for aptning! The sole limiting

factor is the lack of MKVD officials to direct the agents, read their denunciations, and to instruct them. Only in this fact lies the explanation why a certain percentage of the population of this "country of victorious socialism" remains cutside this gigantic art of NKVD agents. Future historians of the epoch of Communism in knisses will undoubtedly take the figure of a miserable and unhappy MKVD informer as a symbol of this period. In other words, this mapport has a mass character but is far from being trustworthy.

5. It is hardly necessary to remind of the fact that the MKVD is not too scrupulous about its methods and actions. As have no intention to compare in this respect the MKVD with the famous inquisition or with the destape. As avoid this capparison because no one can give the exact number of manie victims of their torture chambers, and because here the palm of priority undoubtedly belong to the MKVD - it has as its object much greater masses of population, and the enormous territory of the Soviet Union and it has no been in operation for a longer period of time, but there is one more peculiarity in the methods of the MKVD which has no precedence even in the most sinister institutions of this kind.

Here we have in mind the artificial febrication of emiprital and forged cases or, using the NKVD terminology, - "activisation of suspects". Certainly, even the principle, laid down by Lenia minself, that it is better to punish nine innocent persons then to let one guilty to escape punishment - even this cainous thesis strain muletes the felse accusations and incorrect court decisions. But the WKVD has invented something which is much corse than the condemnation of a person whose guilt was not proved, or who is know to be innocent but who was forced, in result of the tertures and unbearable conditions in the prison, to bischmail kinself. The -WKYD invented the aethod of provocation. formally, the same of this method is forbidden. But practically, - the prevention is the chief aethod of work in the EXTD. For without this sethed of provocation. the MEVD sould hardly be able to collect even cent of the human rew material meefled for the disgusting meet grinder in the imbyence square.

without a proper number of victims, the akVD would never receive its prestige of a "chastising sword" or "the body-guard of the conquests of October", while the Chemists would not be able to enjoy their good life, their numerous orders and governmental rewards, and all those numerous privileges which transform these namemen into the Soviet elite. One must not forget that as a merit of work of every individual Chekist is taken the number of enemies - Report of the number of the series - Report of the number of t he has discovered, revealed and punished in a certain period of time. If this number is big enough, - then the Chekist is good, when his vigilance is high, and his loyalty to the case of Lenin-Stalin is blameless. But if this number is small, - then this Chekist has the to forget any orders, prosotions, a separate apartment, or a car this dress of every Soviet careerist. Just in the same way, every culef of an Administration or a local organ of the NAVD is eager to demonstrate, by meens of a number of "coffine" that the "unit trusted to him" is successfully fulfilling the program of the Perty and the government, and "is holding sloft the banner of Chekister vigilance".

But what to do if there are no real spies, frotakyites, and areckers? Then they are being "activated", according to a wonderful the sist term. This means that certain previously herked victimate being provoked, with the help of some special agents, to make some remarks or to conduct some actions, which can be interpreted that on as anti-poviet ones, when taking this into account, we can definitely claim that at least a half, or may be even three-querters, of all the victims of the MAVD are composed or the victims of these provoked "activizations".

But we shall not blame here the Chekists alone. As we shall see from the chapter dealing with the activities of the "BPU" - Secret Political Administration of the MAVI, the entire work of this branch, in its struggle against the "anti-rarty deviations" and in spying against the members of the ruling Communist party, is prescribed by special instructions of the Poliburo, changelled through

The Chekist term for those docmed to execution.

the Communism the state is bound to "die out".

the Special Sector of the Central Committee, or coming from Stalin himself. These instructions normally prescribe to "activate" that it or the other "deviation" according to Stalin's political needs. To-day he decides to hit those whom he considers as guilty of Trotakyiam, and the "SiU" immediately "activates", by means of provocative conversations, leaflets etc., those communists and are marked for subsequent "liquidation". To-morrow he needs to "render harms less" the former opponents of Vyshianki at the Institute for howist hight, and the SiU "activates" the "soum of rashukanis", that is """

those Soviet students of les who reposted, efter herx, that under

12/11

The monstrous processes against linguist, hazened, hadek. Substin - all these are simply the examples of those counterfeit cases which Stalin needs in his own political interests. The example of this kind of forged cases represent all those numerous tragedies when millions of innnocent people are being sent to the have campain simply because the cospina decided to die a certain channel or to have some new bil wells, following stalin, every individual chekist starts to force similar counterfeit cases, but in his own interestable knows only too well, that stalin trusts only those satch-does which bite the greatest number of by-passers.

their clumsy character. We have slrescy apoxen of the lack of qualified, intelligent, and good workers that in one atrone turned the "the Cheka-MKVD into a torture chamber. Then we find that the majority of people filling into the mands of the MKVD do so not as a result of any sly or well thought out secret police combination, but because of simple demunciation concerning their careless words or actions which might be interpreted as "sabotage", thanks to the reports of the WKVD, a men, second or later, signs a confession; the mands of the WKVD, a men, second or later, signs a confession; again, not as a result of artful fine work of the investigator but as a result of bestings, torture, coercion, provocation, promises and other methods, in a large part of a physical acture.

If one were to open the doors of the gloomy buildings in the block between the Lubyenka and Myssnitskays streets, one would be convinced that the implements of torture which are to be seen in a museum are no more than children's playthings. The MKVD has its own means of physical persuasion, made to its own specifications in its own work-shops. If to this method is added that the guiding principle of the NKVD is that every arrestee is an "enery of the people" whose guilt must only be made official and his actual complices found, then it is not surprising that a "false arrest" in the USLE is almost impossible. Events of any one escaping with a laconic document of "released by the NKVD" can be counted on one fingers. Outside the walls of the akVD everyone swears of his love and devotion to Stalin. Inside these walls every one confesses to his "criminal plots" against Stalin ...

Such is the system of the soviet terror, the flesh and bode of the Communist system.

3. The Men of the MKVD

regimes, the profession has never been considered particularly nominated however, the USAk has in this has its own word, for the first organizer of the Communistic torture-chamber, leader of the Coviet hangmen-Chekists, Felix Ljershinsky, was called even in his lifetime "Knight of the projectarism revolution", and Lenin and Stering directed their most flattering epitaphs to the Chekists, here are a few examples:

"Chekists - threat to the world bourgeoisie", "Highest and first sons of the revolution", "we higher or more honorable name that that of a Chekist" (Lenin), "Chekists - bodyguard of Socialist".

"Eyes and ears of the Parist", and so forth.

Not only among the Communists themselves, but among all the people there is carried on the uninterrupted work of praising the "difficult but noble profession of the Chexist" (Stalin), setting up the Chekist as an ideal for other workers, as an "example of

messes of literature, the object of which is not only to direct
the enthusiasm of the people toward the preise and love their
henchmen, but also to incite the people to help them in their dirty work of espionage and treachery. Even in the chglidren's readers
one finds descriptions of the "brave deeds" of various Chekists
and praise for their activities, which are siding socialist construction by the "liquidating of all of its enemies". Djershinsky,
Kirov, and Beris are "beloved" heroes of children's textbooks, adags
etc., with the help of which the Communists are poisoning the

The libelous casignation "Chekist" which is pronounced sith
fear and caution by the man on the street, was accepted arrogantly
by the Soviet reline as a badge of the most honorable profession
in the Soviet Union. The Chekists call themselves Chekists, and
for the most outstanding of them there has even been established
a special emblem "monorable Chekist", - a sword, surrounded by a
laurel wreath, mounted on a rhomboid. Djerzhinsky was possesed
with the idea of creating out of his henchmen a sort of closed
caste, resembling a monastic orders with severe, ascetic customs,
elmost isolating themselves from life.

bjerzhinsky, a role by birth, and as it Lappens, a Catholical obviously borrowed his idea from Ignatius Loyola. Not long before his strangely sudden death in 1926, bjerzhinsky even ordered work started on the writing of special "Chekist btatus", that is, a callection of rules of conduct, a codex of morals, so to speak. Although the word "moral" is definitely out of place in this instance this fact did not disturb Djerzhinsky and his successors. All the more, since Lenin gave such a definition of morals & "The besis of Communistic morals is the struggle for the strengthening and fulfilment of Communism".

And this definition was later completed by Stalin thus:
"From the viewpoint of Communist morals, that is moral which coats butes to the extermination of the old regime and the strengthening of the new, socialist order". Consequently, the fellows from

Imbyenke Street consider themselves as some sort of "Stakhanevites" of Communist morels". And so they babble about Chekist ethics. In the first place in "Chekist ethics" stands the idea of devotion to the Party. This means that a Chekist must torture, torment, and kill any body whom the Party considers or might consider an enemy. This notwithstanding the fact that tomorrow any and everybody might be proclaimed "enemies of the people". It is a known fact that by consider of stalin, Yagoda and his closest collaborators, among whom were all of the members of the Collegium of the MKVD, were shot, not by ordinary henchmen of the MKVD, but by their closest subordinates.

be vigitant and "undefatiguebly uncover and destroy the enemies of the people". If we substitute the word "preventiveness" for the werd "vigitance" then the question will become clear. A classic example of vigitance, depicted in all Chekist textbooks, is how a member of the Politburo, hazar Amgenovich, serving at that time as the right hand of stalin, "uncovered the camouflaged enemies of the people".

In the late thirties, Kagenovich supervised the construction of the subway in Moscow. At one of the tunnels two squaers, somiliterate pessents, father and son just arrived from the country, cided to drink water from the fire nose, having left they failed to turn off the fauset. As a result of this, a section of the tuanel the next day was flooded. In egent - representative of the MKVD - reported to Assanovich, that the offenders were already are rested. But Kegenovich ordered the arrest elso of the chief of the subwey section. "In the first place he was negligent toward his work - his duty was to supply the mines with drinking water formtains. In the second place - added Asgenovich - investigate theroughly his beckground", After two weeks the unfortunate enginess confessed, that in the past he was an officer of the tearist army e a conclusion, about the Hence it was made rather easy to m sebotes.

"incorruptibility", one has to recognise, that, as a rule, in the MEVD this requisite is respected. But this is because of the simple reason : the Chekists are much better off materially than their visitins. In those few cases, however, when the victims have valuable stones or gold (and this occurs rarely in the Upok), this does not produce an impression on the Chekists wealth in the Soviet society plays an insignificant rele - the power of money there is exchange fully for the force of power.

It is necessary to note still another requirement which is presented to the Chekist. This requirement is - to be merciless toward the enemy. As in the above case, this principle of the "Chekist ethics" does not present in practice any sort of difficulty. "It has been already mentioned this, while speaking about the methods of sork of the Soviet secret police. On the contrary, sometimes the leaders have to ask the Chekists not to be so energetic in following their "ethics of mercilessness". So, for example, Seria, having replaced the crazed Yezhov, in a special order pointed out to the almost crazed subordinates of Yezhov: "One can and even must beat, but it is not necessary to best every one".

In this case Beria was least of all led by the feeling of humanity : to be human seams to be a poor Consumist. The reason was simply that the prisons of the NKVD were filled with victims at the wild terror during the time of Yezhov. All these people were clearly innocent of the crimes, to which they had confessed only because of the methods of questioning of the "Iron People's Commission re-examined their cases, and not desired them a seek free the witnesses who had seek the horror, gave the timber cutting in the extreme north. However, the besten, tortured almost crass, people firmly held to their previous confessions, extracted from these during the days of Yeshov. They repeated, for example, that they wanted to kill Yeshov himself (at that time almost for the long non-existent state Austria-Hungary.

Not only among campae people, but also emong the Communist among the very highest circles of the Soviet state and Party dight taries, the very word NKVD brought fear; carefully acreened from Line other, of course, under the pretense of hypocritical praise a regards to "our glorious Chexists". Therefore, usuaslly: they stoop and crawl in order to try to gain the favor of the Chekists. The uniform of the Chekist is equal to the master key of a thief - to this man, with the crimson braid on his coller and with a blue top on his hat, are available all of the goods of the meager Boviet life: s room in the hotel, s berth on the train, a ticket to the - 30 theater etc., - and ell this without quelng, this plague of simple Soviet mortels. It goes without saying that to bring a suit in court against the Chekists - is a thing unthinascle is the Sid. in a country, in which laws exist only on paper, there is one unwritten but strictly observed laws the anvio is above the Law, the mayou is authorized to do as it pleases because it is the have who creates the laws.

It is not surplishing that, under such conditions of unlimited.

Britteriness, the members of the MayD feel themselves semi-gods. The secret character of the work, coupled with self isolation in private life (as a rule the Chekista live in houses of the MayD or in special constrate spartments), led to the forming in the Glan diminal a particular closed casts. In their own country, the Chekista live similar to the Americana in their occupation zone of carmany: they have their own mode of life, their better supply, their places for relexation and rest, and last out not least their own courts.

man. The experienced eye can unmistakably suess whether a stranger has any relation to the "organs" or not. And this not only by conversation, but by his behaviour, even by appearance.

From the very first days of the Soviet power this question began to play an important role in the internal politics. It must be explained that, as the leaders of Bolshevism, also the management of the

x) In the Chexist along - MKVD:

central Soviet institutions, including the Cheke-OGFU-MKVD, in the majority of cases were people of non-Russian erigin. This fact was particularly apparent during the years of the leadership of Yegoda. It is well known that during this time there took place the cruel reprisels against the Russian peasants (liquidation of the "Rulaks"). In the spees eyes of the population, MKVD and its work acquired a definite significance.

eppesition, the leaders of which, basically, were of non-Russian origin. The place of Yagoda and his companions in the MAVD was eccupied by new people, whose acceptance depended largely upon three conditions: they had to be, if possible, of Russian nationality; they had to come from the inferior regions of the Soviet Union; and they were to have neither relatives nor close acquaintances abroad. This was a tribute to the apy fever which gripped the Kramilia in the middle thirties. One of the first results of this delivery of the "avenging sword of the proletariat" into the flands of people "from behind the plow", - the Soviet axpression meaning simple and poorly educated people, with a low mental development, but "to the bitter and devoted to the case of Lenin-Stalin", was a significant lowering of the effectiveness of the MKVD.

1

Having lost its experienced agents and investigators, the MKVD was forced to use the most primitive methods of a provincial police establishment. There began a period, when the entire task of the MKVD was achieved similpy by beating prisoners. Formerly, the MKVD was joined "by calling", that is, by those who had a taste for bestial, sadistic blood shed. Now people joined the MKVD as a result of "Party mebilization", i.e. at the directive of the Party It is not surprising, that many of them proved to be absolutely was fit for the "specifis" work of the MKVD. One of the orders of the MKVD mentions with indignation, for the education of others, that and of the new batch of Chekists, having sequeinted bimself with the demonistion of a former Trotalyite, called him into his office.

and began to admonish him: "it is not good to engage in anti-Perty propaganda, Comrade P., didn't you, in the old days, sign an oath to be loyal to the Party?"

only by slow stages could the MKVD re-establish a cadre of qualified agents, spies, and technicians of secret work. However, the war with Germany once more found the Soviet secret police in a state of complete disorganisation. This explains such bungling methods in the fight against the German espionage as the wholesale errest of all people with "German names", or the banishment to hiddle asis of the entire population of the autonomous German Volganian depublic. They did not know how to ferret out the actual agents, and besides, they did not went to be bothered with "trifles".

wer was the NAVA able to conduct some limited activity in German territory. This can be seen, for instance, in the attempted assemble successfully infiltrated into other countries were very poorly qualified. So, notwithstanding the broadest co-operation, which was seconded to the Soviet repatriation missions in the Western zones of Germany and Amatria, the majority of the anti-soviet elements and deserters from the Soviet Union have successfully secreted themselves, either within the masses of Deris of within the Germany. It must be believed that the weskness of their own cadrages of local fifth column members in the "capitalistic" countries.

CHAPTER II

HISTORY OF THE NEVE

During the three decades of its existence, the apparatus of the boviet secret police experienced a whole series of re-organizations and even changed its name five times. This fact did not by one lots change the essence of Stalin's secret police, one of the principal means to organise the world-wide Communist revolution.

The following is a short history of the days

on December 20, 1917, just two months after the October revolution in mussis, the Council of People's Commission for the halfall created the "All-Russian Extraordinary Commission for the fight against counter-revolution, sabotage, and speculation". This agency was ordinarily called, in abbreviation, Ch.A. and therefore received, among the people, the colloquial designation "Cheka" or "Chrezvichsika". The first chairman of the All-Russian Cheka was the above mentioned Felix Djerzhinsky, at whose Instigation the Commission was created.

The total ked ferror was begun by the wheke in august, 1918, after the murder of the chairmen of the retrogred Cheke Aikhail (acise) Unitaky and an attempt on the life of Ledin.

of the Bolshevik dictatorship were clearly determined. So, for instance, in the proclamation of the retrograd Soviet on the occasion of the attempt upon the life of Lenin, it was said: "For the murder of Comrade Uritaky, and for the attempt upon the life of the leader of the world revolution, Comrade Lenin, the proletariat will answer the rotten bourgeoisie with death blows. Not with an eye for an eye, but with a thousand eyes for one. A thousand lives of the bourgeoisie for the life of our leader. Long live the aed

Leain thus delineated the goal of the Cheka: "The only way for the liberation of the masses lies in the extermination of exploiters. That is the task of the Cheka."

The executive of Djershinsky in the Cheks, one of the most bloody heachmen of the Russian people, a Latvian Latais, - was still more frank: "The struggle is the of life and death. If you do not kill, you will be killed. Therefore kill, that you may not be killed!

Prom the time of Stalin there appeared in use a number of new, but not less expressive alogans. Here are some of them:

"NKVD - The vindictive sword of the proleterian revolution!"
"Chekists - Bodyguard of the October Mevolution!"

Terror cost many millions of lives. After the termination of the Civil war and after the Bolsheviks had consolidated their power over Mussia, this terrormot only failed to cease, but with each year it consumed more and more victims. System of apencies of supression and compulsion was continually widened and penetrated deeper throughout all the pores of administrative, social, and economic life of the country.

(Cheke) was reorganised into the State Political Administration (Gosudarstvennoye Politicheskeye Upravlenie), in abbreviation -GPV, which quickly was reasond "Unified State Political Administration" (OGPU). The essence of this reorganisation was that the system of viadictive organs of the Soviet distatorship was significantly extended and a new system included additionally: border guards, transport guards, edministration of pieces of confinement, and also might significantly videned the net of secret agencies within the Red Are sy and the Communist Party. Beside that, by 1922 the Cominteen was expanding its large activity. Correspondingly, the outer-political tasks of the GPU were to against the Cominteen in certain special spheres of its activities. The Cheke was designed to act only within the country, while the GPU, from the very first day, stretched out its tenteles beyond the borders of the USSA.

 This reorganisation had also a great significance in principles the Cheke was created, as an extraordinary measure, for the defense of the Soviet power during its most critical moments; but the GPU, at the moment of its creation, was conscived as a permanent organ of the Bolahevik distatorship. Thus, it was directly recognised, that the mass terror is an inclienable part of the soviet system. In the course of twelve years, from 1922 to 1934, the Soviet power openly recognised this situation.

On June 10, 1934, the OGFU was reorganised into the MEVD of the USER. This abbreviation comes from the full Ausmian title of that institution - Mareday Komissariat Vantrennih Del SSER. Formally this reorganisation was explained by the fact that the period of struggle against the counter-revolution had ended, that the Seviet power was definitely strengthened, and therefore there was no mere need for the existence of a special organ for the suppression of counter-revolution and opposition within the country. However, the "Great Purge", - beginning shortly after this reform, - with its millions of victims, showed that this official explanation did not in any measure correspond with the actual reason of the transformation.

The actual reason of this reorganization was that at this time the apparatus of the OGPU again so widened, complicated and expended, that it could no longer be packed into the frame of one administration. The system of universal trailing and spying covered all of the country. This was no more, and by no means, one single organization. This was a complicated net of specialized organs of terror and spying, penetrating to the very deepest corners of the vest territory of the Soviet Union and for beyond its borders.

The essentials of the reorganisation of 1934 were, that besides the complicated not of political suppervision system of the OGPH, a new system of the MEVD included also the administration of the police and eriminal inquiry, passport administration, administration of the fire department and administration of the transport, even a department for the recording of the acts of the civilian state (EAGS). Besides that, the MEVD united and subordinated into one system all the numerous and widespread prisons, places of preliminary confinement, correctional labor colonies and correctional labor

camps (the Soviet memos for different types of consentration camps), with all their numerous and extraordinarily complicated auxiliary enterprises and institutions.

The besis departments of the OGPU, which performed the trailing and appling within the USBR and beyond its borders, were preserved, generally, in their former structure and were unified into the system of the "Administration of State Security" (UGS MKVD), which in the period of the "Great Purge" (1936-38) received the title of the "Chief Administration for State Security" (GUGS MKVD)-"Glavmoye Upravlence Gosudarstvennoi Besopeanesti". Apart of this most important administration, in the system of the MKVD was erested a number of other branches and administrations, which spheres of activity will be examined in the following parts of our work.

The fifth of February, 1941, the MKVD was divided into two ecomissariats: "The People's Commissariat for Internal Affairs" (MKVD) and "The People's Commissariat for State Security" (MKVD). This reform become indispensible after the period of the "wrest Purge" and as a result of the forced annexation by the Soviet Union, in 1939-40, of a number of new republics. The apparatus of the MKVD became exceptionally large and complicated, and there was no longer room for this enormous apparatus in the structure of one commissariat. As a result of this reform, the personnel of both new scenissariats grew yet more.

This reform took place by means of the separation from the NEVD of its principle edministration — that of the Chief Administration for State Security. This organisation was given an independent existence and elevated to the rank of a People's Commissoriat for State Security (Maredaiy Security - The People's Commissoriat for State Security (Maredaiy Semissoriat Geometric Geometric Security or MEGS). To it was given neveral necessary services : an edministrative and service branch etc.

Under the central of the new KKVD were left the following: the edministration of places of confinement and corrective-labor campa (90146), transport, militim (police)/and passport branch, 5405 (civil status registration office), fire-brigades, highway

transportation, administrative and service branch with its samitary section, the numerous sameterist and rest-homes for Chemista etc. As a result, the MKVD was transformed into a subordinate organisation with secondary functions, but the "Bword of kevolution" was entrusted to the MKGS, that is, this new People's Commissariat for State Security reserved for itself the exclusive field of espicance, terrorism and suppression, and at the same time keeping its eye on the activities of the new MEVD.

Almost immediately after the beginning of the war, that is July 20th, 1941, the MKVD and MKGB were again united into the ene MKVD under the direction of its former People's Johnissar, Levrenty Beria, who, at the time of the previous division, had been appointed Stalin's deputy in the Council of People's Commissars of the USLE, with the task of co-ordinating the work of these two Commissariats.

The MKVD existed in this form until the end of the sorld wer II. The reason for this unification could be found in the necessity of simplifying in time of war the suministration of the complicated apparatus of suppression and terror. There is also no doubt that Stelin wented Beris, as his personal friend and confident, to ressure et this critical moment the single-handed control of this most important part of the Soviet system. In addition, this new reform was influenced by the fact that during the four months of their existence, these two new Commissariets did not have time to delimit fully the schere of their activities. Under the conditions of military debacle and retreat, this could have led to the loss of control behind the front lines also. This was the situation in regard to the EKVD until 1945. Reviewing these re-organisations, we do not take into consideration the "SHARRH" ("Death to Spice") which was created during the war within the frame of the MAYD, but as a semi-independent institution.

After the end of the war, the MKVD. was again divided into the MKVD and NKGB and in March 1946 these Commissariats were remembed the "Ministry of Internal Affairs" (MVD) and the "Ministry of State Security". This was accomplished in accordance with the

trensformation of the Countil of People's Commissers of the USSE into the Council of Ministers. The principle of division of the MKVD after the war was the same as it had been in 1941: the Chief Administration of State Security of the MKVD, with the Administration of State Security of the MKVD, with the Administration of interior troops and border guards of the MEVD, and some servicing organisations became the Ministry of State Security (MGB), while all the remaining administrations and divisions of the former MEVD passed into the hands of the Ministry of Internal Affairs (MVD).

According to the information which the authors of the present work have at hand, the internal structure of the separate divisions in the MVD and MGB remained almost the same as it had been in the system of the MEVD in 1939-1940, to which period refer the meterials introduced here. The authors were able to register only one major change: "All former "Administrations" of the mystem of the Chief Administration of State Security have been given the title of the "Chief Administrations" in the MGB. There have been no essential changes in either the methods or practice since that time, only the ecope of activity has become even broader. In those isolated instances where the functions or the structure of these or other MKVD divisions underwent serious changes, these changes will be noted additionally. For this reason, the authors have permitted themselves in this analysis to use the present tense of verbs rether than the pest, although the MKYD formally ceased to exist in 1946.

Union-Republican Commissariat and therefore its local organs must subordinate themselves to the higher organs of Soviet power in the republics, areas, regions and districts. But actually, the local organs of the NEVD are completely sutenceous and are subordinated only to their own top-level agencies, while the NEVD itself, in all important questions of its activities, is subordinated only to the Polithure. The Council of Poole's Commissare of the USBR (new the Council of Ministers) has a former control over the NEVD only in financial metters, but even this is merely an ophesoral prerogative. Prectical control over the NEVD is carried out by the

Polithure through the "Special Section" of the Central Committee of the All-Union Communist Party, through a special group of the Party Control Commission (KPE CE VEP/b/), located since 1930 in the MEVD building, No 2 Djershinsky Square, in Moscow, and through some other special sgencies subordinated directly to the Stalin's "Personal Secretarist".

In a purely abstract case of political divergence or conflict between the government of the USER and the Politburo of the Central Committee of the Communist Party, the MEVD, now the MGB, is obliged to early out only the orders and directives of the Politburo and the General Secretary of the Communist Party, that is of J.V.Stalin. Such a case took place only once, in 1937, when by the order of Stalin, the MEVD arrested and brought to trial the former chief of the Soviet Government,— the former chairman of the Council of the People's Commissars of the USSE, Alexei I. Mykov (it is true that by this time Rykov was "only" the Commissar of Communications). This example clearly illustrates that the MEVD is a governmental organ in form only, but factually it is an all powerful instrument of the party dictatorship, that is, of its supreme agency, the rolitbure of the Central Committee of the Party.

The two ministries remain as the same instrument of Party power, as in the time of the MKVD. The fact that they are subordinate to Berie, who is a deputy chairman of the Council of ministers, changes nothing at all, in so far as Berie is at the same time a member of the Politbure. It will be proper to recall that already in 1934 the transformation from the OGPU to the MKVD was explained thus; instead of a party organ there would be now a normal state organ; however, in reality, this re-organization was not followed by any change whatevever in the character of the organ itself.

Cheke-OGPU-MKVD-MGB are actually different names for the same instrument of a terroristic system, heretefore unprecoverted in the history of humanity. The only difference between them lies in the ever growing widening of their functions and spheres of activity.

In summery, we can say that the mission of the MKVD-MUB

1. sithin the borders of the USSE

- a) The uncovering and liquidating of all political movements and groups, even individuals who are hostile or in opposition to the Party and Soviet system, or even those who take a neutral stand.
- b) The sefeguarding of the secomplishments of party decisions and undertakings by all organisations and individuals without exceptions: this is done by secret observations of the activities of all governmental, economic, social, and in certain cases, even party organizations, and always and especially the armed forces of the USCR.
- c) Permanent control of all correspondence to and from foreign countries, both official as well as private, and periodical and selective control of correspondence within the USSE.
- d) In co-operation with the party, a preventative censorship of all printed matter in the Uses, notwithstanding its charector or significance - beginning with the official Communist party publication "Prayds" and ending with the trademarks on cigarettes.
- e) Protection of stella and other leaders of the Party and the Soviet government.
- f) Security of the UBSR's borders from the point of view of political as well as customs.
- g) Protection of important military objectives, such as factories, bridges, etc.
- h) Counter-intelligence work and observation of all foreigners in the USSH.
- i) The management and protection of concentration camps and the exploitation of alave labor for the realisation of the Fiveyear plans, chiefly in the Fer North.

2. Beyood the borders of the UBBN

- a) Political intelligence and diversionary-terroristic activities in accordance with special instructions of the Politburo and in co-operation with the so-called "bister organisations" ("Smeshnie organi).
- b) Co-operation, according to the decisions of the "Molutov Committee" of the Politburo, and the accretariat of the Comintern (Gominform), with the leadership of the ioneign Communist parties in their struggle against the governments and hostile political parties of their countries.
- c) The disruption, by infiltration, of all anti-Soviet po-
- d) Spying on all members of the Soviet diplomatic, commercial and other representatives and delegates of the USSK, and also on Soviet military spies.
- e) Spying on all lesding personnel of the foreign Communist

CHAPTER III

STRUCTURE OF THE SEVO

1. Administrative Division

In accordance with the 1936 Soviet constitution, the MAVD was an Union-Republic People's Commissariat just as the MVD and MUB are Union-Republic Ministries at present. This means that there is a central Union-Republic Commissariat (or Ministry) in Moscow and that there are Republic People's Commissariats (now Ministries) in each of the 15 republic capitals (for example: Kiev, Minak, Baku, Rige, etc.) which are directly subordinated in all most important features to the Union-Republic Commissariat (or Ministry) in Moscow. Only formally, and even then only in certain secondary administrative and budget questions are the Republic MKVD (now the MVD and MUB) controlled by the Councils of People's Commissars of the corresponding Republics (now) the Councils of ministers)

See the diegrem Me 1

The RSFSR did not have its own NKVD (since 1947 there are MVD and NGB of the RSFSR). The duties of that organ were carried out by the office of the first deputy of the reciple's Commissar of the MKVD of the USSR. The functions of the NKVD of the MSFSR for regions located in the European part of that republic were ordinarily carried out by the MKVD regional administration for Moscow (abbreviated : UMKVD MO - Upravlenie MKVD Moskovskoi Oblasti). However, the UMKVD-MO did not dispatch erders in its own name to the regions, but administrate such regional administration of the MKVD (for example, Tula) by sending orientations and inquiries with references to the orders of the Deputy People's Commissar or of the People's Commissar or

The autonomous republies did not have their own People's Commisseriet for Internal Affairs, but only the regional administrations of the SKYD of these Union Republies to which the given autonomous republic belonged. So, for example, the Abkhasian ABGR,

complising a part of the Georgian SSR, will have the Abrhasian regional administration of the MKVD of the Georgian SDR. Autonomous republics of the MSFSR had the regional administrations of the MKVD of the USBR, while those autonomous republics having small population and no significant military or economic importance, might even come under the jurisdiction of the regional administration of the MKVD of neighboring regions of greater importance. So, for example, the Northern Caucasian autonomous republics of Morthern Osetia and Kabardino-Balkar and the autonomous region of Escachasev were "served" (to use the Chexist terminology) by the Ordonixidze (former Vladikevkas) area administration of the MAVL of the USBR. Mote: The above mentioned autonomous republics were liquidated during the world as II for the anti--oviet activities of their population.

The structure, that is the personnel complement and functions of the MKVD of a Union Republic were determined by the size, as well as the strategic and economic importance of a given republic. In such extremely important republics as the Unraine and Belorussia, their People's Commissariats for internal Affairs represented somewhat smaller replices of the All-Union AnVL in Auscow.

In the less important union Republics, the skyl of the republics were organized and worked, actually, according to the authority of the RKYL regional administration. Earlier, they were termed the "fully empowered representations of the DAPU (abtraviated-PP OGFU - Polnomochnoe Predstavitelstvo DGFU). In such Union Republics the importance of the local RKYL could even be less than the authority of an administration of the RKYL of large regions. For example, the Moldavian Republic's RKYL, by its size and importance, could be considered a such lower level than the AKYL regional administration of the RKYL.

ministrations of Moscow and Leningrad.

2. Local Agencies

See the diagrams No 3 and 4

In general, the regional administrations of the MkVu have an identical atructure and are fully empowered to resolve all local problems. For the MSFSM, the first beauty of the receive commisser of the Ali-Union MKVD and the office of the Chief Administration for State Security in Academ furnished the directives for the local agencies of this republic. The remaining 15 republic MKVDs administered the local MKVD agencies located in the corresponding republics.

inactically, the main burden of work reats on the shoulders of these regional administrations. Itsiin personally gave special attention to the furthering of the effectivenes of their preventive-terroristic activities. In his language this was cynically called: "making the anv. intimate with the masses". It is precisely these local organizations of the anv., which cover the entire country like a rash, that are the basis of the Stain regime. The center only directs their activities and, at that, on the basis of apterial received from the local apencies.

From the point of view of operations, the regional administrations of the MAVA were divided as follows:

- 1. District sections of the MAVL ("reyotical" mavu),
- 2. City sections of the anV.,
- 3. Operational branches of the why ("opersektor any).

The importance and role of the district sections of the NKVL does not require any special explanation at talk place, they are organized in every district of any region ("oblast") or areas ("krai") of the USSA corresponding to the administrative division of the Soviet Union.

City sections of the NAVL exist in all cities and industrial centers of the USCH which in importance are solve the level of district centers. They work along the lines of an operational branch. In the last years before the war, in such pow rful cities as Moscow, Leaingred, Kiev, and others, in the efforts to delineate and divide the work, were introduced city administrations of the RKYD (as in the party system); for example - there were "The Moscow Regional Party Committee" and "The Moscow City Party Committee". In the same way there were: "The Moscow Regional MKYD Administration" and "The Moscow City MKYD Administration". These city administrations directed the work of the MKYD agencies only in the city itself, not considering the surrounding districts.

The operational branch could be compared to a district office of the MKVD ("rejetdel" MKVD), but having certain special
duties. The structure and personnel complement of these branches
are different. Their inauguration in this or that region was dietated by the presence in a given region of some special population group, which could not be dealt with by the ordinary distint
office of the MKVD and so a special "service" was required from
the side of the MKVD. For example, eithin the moscow regional edministration of the MKVD there was created such an operational
branch in connection with the existence in the Marpukhov district
of two or three settlements of German colonists (farmers).

The structure, personnel staff, and activities of the regional, city and district AKVD offices and those of MKVD operational branches will be treated in greater detail in following parts of this work.

Hech organ of the NKVD, from the Feople's Commissariat down to the district office, has its own Party organisation. In the lecal subordinate organs it is the "party group", in the sections - "party collective", in the important divisions and administrations there are "party committees", and in the Feople's Commissariat of the HKVD is the "Party Committee of the HKVD of the USBR".

Prom the regional or republic agency of the MKYD, and up, the Party organs publish their own news-papers. The newspaper of the Party committee of the People's Commissariet, titled "The Chekist", was published by the central printing effice of the MKYD, in Meecew, and its birth goes back to the time of Djershinsky, i.e. to

the early twenties. There are evidences that the first editor of this newspaper was Djershinsky bimself. The secretaries of the perty organisations, beginning with the "party committee", are eccupied exclusively with their party work and are freed from any other duties. All lower level party secretaries work in the party organisations and, at the same time, perform their basic duties in the organs of the MKVD.

In Wistination from all other Soviet (i.e. governmental or public) erganisations, the party organs of the MKVD escupy only a secondary position. In view of the secret character of work of the MKVD, the local party organisations cannot give either any kind of directions or cannot centrol the activity of the whole MKVD or of all its separate parts, or even of individual Communists in the MKVD. Therefore, the sphere of activity of local party organs in the MKVD is limited to political-educational work (orientation of Communists in the spirit of Marxism-Leminism), carrying on political campaigns, as before the 1st of May, for example, etc.

3. Central Accesses

See the diagree He 5

At the mement of its division into two People's Commissorists in 1941, the MEVD of the USER in Mossow had the following central agencies (with their sub-agencies in all Union Republies and in the MEVD administrations of areas and regions) :

- 1. Sentuch Administration of State Security (abbreviated GUES MEVD Glavnoc Upravionic Goodcaratvennoi Besopaemesti MEVD anni.
- 2. Chief Administration of Border Guards and Internal Troops (abbreviated: GUPYO RKWD SBAR - Glavnos Upravionie Pogramichael Chrony 1 Veyob REVD SGAR);
- 3. Chief Minimistration of Comps of the EEVD (abbreviated) SULAS EEVD SOCK Clares Sprevionic Legerel EEVD SOCK);

- 4. Chief Administration of Militia and Criminal Police (abbreviated: GUM MEVD SSSR Glavnos Upravlenie Militii i Ugo-lovnogo Renyaka MEVD SSSR);
- 5. Chief Passport Administration (abbreviated: GPU NKYD Glavnoe Pasportnoe Upravlenie NKVD 866R) this agency was suber-dinated to the Central Administration of Milisia;
- 6. Chief Administration for Civil Status Registration (abbreviated: ZAGS NKVD SSSR Glavnos Upravlenie Zapisiá Aktov Grashdanskogo Sostoyania):
- E. Chief Administration of Fire Guards (abbreviated: GUPO MKVD SSSR Glavnoe Upravlenie Posarnoi Chrany);
- 8. Ghief Administration of High Ways Construction (abbreviated: "Glavahosdor MKVD" Glavanoe Upravlenie atroitelstva Shosseinyh i Besrelsovýh Dorog MKVD SSSR).

In addition to these basic administrations, central agencies of the NEVD included also the sport society "Lynamo" and a series of service administrations and agencies such as, for exemples administration of personnel, finance administration of the MKVD. "house-keeping" administration, with the sanatorium section. which operates the senstoria and rest homes of the MAVD, etc. All these service administrations are organized according to the ordinary type of the similar institutions in other People's Commisearists of the USSK, and there is no especial interest in enslysing them. These service edministrations have sub-sections in all lower organs of the MEVD, but for simplification of the picture, the internal sub-structure of these service agencies will not be explained in detail. There will be exceptions to this only in separate cases, where the work of a service organ of the MAYD has more port of special interest, as for example: the administration of personnel or the financial administration.

The structure, functions, and sphere of activity of each one of these basis administrations of the MKVD will be dealt with in detail in subsequent chapters of this work.

4. Higher EKTD Leedership

Just as in any other Soviet People's Commissariet, the SKVD was headed and directed by a People's Commissar with the help of the so-called "Cellegia", i.e. his deputies and their staff - secretaries, adjutants, etc. But in the SKVD in the years prior to the war, the collegia as such, that is the permanent council of the People's Commissar with his deputies and assistants (so called members of the collegia) did not play the same role as in other governmental organs. The authors do not even have information as to whether the collegia convened to undertake any decisions from the time of Yeshov (1937-38), - as, say, was the case in the time of Yagoda (early thirties), when it was openly declared: "this one was executed by sentence of the collegia of OGPU".

Judging from all available evidences, the collegia in the MKVD was marking by many different agencies created gradually around the People's Commissar in connection with the increasing volume of the "work". Among their number were the agencies which comprise the so-called "Administration of the People's Commissar".

Hee the disgree Mo 6

This directorate seems to have been a super organ of the MKVD and consisted of the following: the Commissar himself, his secretarist, four (4) deputies, a special agent-representative for the Commissar, a special tribunal for the commissar, an interim control council and a central engineering-construction bureau.

First deputy of the People's Commisser. Ordinarily he is the chief of the Chief Administration of State Security (GUGB MEVD), and, at the same time, directs the regional and local MEVD admimistrations in the MSFRR. Senetimes he acts as the chief of the Measur regional administration of the MEVD. Hemely therefore, when the Measur regional administration of the MEVD issues orders to other MEVD regional administrations throughout the RSFRR, this is always done under the authority of the deputy of the People's

SERVICE CONTRACTOR

Commisser, and not from the chief of the Messew regional MEVD administration (CMEVD-MO).

This post was escupied : 1935-35 by Prekofiev; 1936-37 by Sakevsky, 1940-41 by Markelev, who after the war become the first minister of the MGB.

The Section (Perviy Ottel) of the MKYD - protection of the leaders, the Personnel Section, the Communication Section (Feldevyas), the house-keeping administrative offices, and the office of the administrative supervisor of the MKYD (the latter office performing the role of chief executioner of MKYD victims). Excluding the important problem of protection of the Kremlin and Belchevik leaders, this deputy is responsible solely for the immer and administrative problems of the MKYD itself. In 1939-41, Eruglev secupied this post; after the war he was appointed Minister of Internal Affairs of the USSR (MYD).

The Third Deputy of the People's Commisser. He directs the Chief Administration of Militia and Criminal Folice, the Chief Administration of Consentration Camps (GULAG), high ways and transportation administration, EAGS (administration of civil status registration) and other establishments of the MVD type. In 1959, Kabulov occupied this post, and after the merger of the commisseriats, in July 1941, he was appointed deputy to Beria in commanding the ecobined SKVD.

The Fourth Deputy of the Foople's Commissar. He directs to the Chief Administration of the border guards and internal troops of the HEVD, the administration of the border passport central points and all questions of co-ordination of activities of these administrations with other ministries of the USER, primarily with the Ministries of Armed Forces and Fereign Trade. Here must be noted that until 1937 the prisence escart troops were under the joint jurisdiction of the HEVD and of the Gemmissarity of Defence. In 1937-38. Frincycky occupied this post.

The Party Committee of the HEVD People's Commissarias I sees uples, as already stated above, a secondary position of impossor tense. This is explained by the fact that, in addition to the the fidential character of the HEVD work, the Commissar, himself. in the deputies and the directors of the most important administrations are members of the higher party organs, up to the level of that Committee of the Party and the Politburo. Therefore: the start tense not obliged to account for their activities acfore the start tens of their party organization.

In the lower level organs of the MXVD the party committees a enjoy somewhat greater importance, but even there they do not have a shadow of that decisive role which is characteristic in all other Soviet establishments, offices, and undertakings. In this we see still one more confirmation of the fact that the MKVD is not a governmental but purely a party organ, we recall that in the Central Committee of the Party, itself, there is also a party Committee (which runs mostly the part, activities of the auxiliarry personnel of that office) which play an identical secondary role.

Special Council. This is a higher personent judiciary age act of the NKVD. According to its official status, the Special Council consists of a the People's Commisser of Internal Affairs of the USSE (MKVD), one of the secretaries of the Central Commisses of the All-Union Communist Party, and the Attorney General of the USSE. But the Special Council convenes itself in this fame only for the examination of affairs of exceptional importances. On disarilly, it consists of less important officials of those three agencies, acting with authority and on behalf of their superiors.

The MKVD itself ordinarily is represented in the Speaked Geuneil (Ocoboe Sevenhenie) by some important official of the commissariet, but necessarily seting with the full authority and on behalf of the People's Commissar Amenda Misself. This person represents the investigative aspect of any given case. The sendom member of the Special Countil is the representative of the Attarner General of the USSB - fulfilling the prosecutor's functions. Some times, and rather often, this rate is being given to some semilary

with the HKVD. The third permenent member of the council ordinart and in the secretary of the Party Committee of the HKVD, actives with full authority of the Secretary of the Central Committee of the Special Committee of the Special Committee of the Special Councils of each republican SKVD in the Soviet Union.

desling with the activities of the so-called "troike's". Mare see have only to state that the "Special Councils" and "troikes" (Los) that victous ring, by seems of which the NLVL becomes the superment meeter of life and death of every Boviet citises - it sets as a spy, police officer, investigator, attorney and judge simultaneouslyst

Special Agent-Representative for the recole's Consists. In is an official given a complete authority within a defined jurismentation.

To this duty ordinarily is appointed one of the important operational officials of the central organs of the MKVD, his minminum is to settle offenses of personnel of the commissariat itself: in all the republic and regional administrations of the MKVD therm have also special agent-representatives who settle the offenses and other misdeeds committed by officials of the local MKVD organs.

The apparatus of the special agent-representative is designed and of a special operating sector, having 8-10 operative agents representatives, all of whom are efficials of higher authority sates as majors or it.colonels of State Security. The offenses can be offenses to assert varied nature: from reports of disciplinary offenses to assert can of belonging to the opposition or counter-revolutionary activities and plots. All eases of this type go through administrative channels of the MKVD and if the aspect of offense or writes he not fully apparent or is extraordinarily serious, then they are Restricted through the chief of the administration or section to the office of the special agent-representative for settlement. This special agent-representative for settlement. This epocial agent-representative for settlement. This epocial agent-representative for settlement. This epocial agent-representative presents his conclusion to the chief of the regional edministration of the MKVD or even commission by sealf for final decision.

curiously easugh, according to Chekist customs, appear in such conclusions and decisions is considered as "not without the research of these unique "chekist othics" are truly characteristical the investigations are conducted by the "conredes" themselves; these decisions undertaken by the chief of administration, equipment to the factor of the party, they are cut of question because they would immediate by became known, and would result only in complicating the aff size, in a search! (with possible expulsion from the Party) and at may rate would result in diministal from one's work and transfer so where to Archangel or Cheliabinak, if not were.

Inside the MKVD the special agent-representatives ANTH # LEGES feared and avoided or the people attempt to Gurry favour #150 \$50000 by flattery and small gifts; that is to say, within the MATH, the relations of the rank and file Chekists towards the special agents—representatives are just the same as the attitude of the population of the USUR towards all members of the MKVD.

when a special egent-representative, himself, gets in * FORble, then all the other officials of the MAYD do not miss a GRAMSE
to repay him for all former trouble occasioned ... them by this
individual. Se, in 1938, by order of the deputy commisser Make FRAY,
the special agent-representative of the Moscow region, Hypolyter,
was arrested. He was incarecrated in the Taganski prison, in the
common cell block, and then was shot. During the time of the 1970stigation the officials of the administration, who carlier was
cought his favor, went in droves to the prison in order "to simp
him in the face".

The office of the special egent-representative has no special egen

Structure and personnel, in general, as have other seasonant the structure and personnel, in general, as have other seasonant the People's Commissariets (or Ministries) in the USSA. Similar the secretariet is a control commission for the verification of at the Victorian of an analysis and for the clarification of

pensible conflicts and misunderstandings among themselves. Limited with the Secretarist, also, is the office for investigation periodical to the People's Commisser. In the building of the History self, (ordinarily in the office for entry permits) just as is all other Soviet Commisseriats and Ministries, hangs a best for petition black, in which each visiter "may" drop his "petition", the self of the conditions prevailing in the USSR in general, and particulately in the NKYD, the existence of this office and of the bases seems only a cynical frauds since who, would dere to make a selection laint against the NKYD (especially to the NKYD, itself). The single type of "petitions" seem, therefore, confined to demand ations.

The Magineering-Construction Bureau. This bureau play and important role in the large-scale business entopprises, which was found in the undertakings of the MAVD. To this bureau come all technical inventions and projects, worked out by inmates of weather and prisons, spread throughout the whole territory of the dass In special cases, this bureau has authority to free princhage the sential for its work. But in the majority of cases, those prise man who initiate important projects or inventions, simply are trustime ferred from the jurisdiction of the prison or camp authority to the jurisdiction of this bureau, but still remain in the same offson or camp. Senetimes such prisoners are transferred to a sate tal section of the prison. In such cases the prisoners can get am assistants in special sections, have automobiles, better previouses. but remain in strict isolation and fully out off from may him with the outside world. In such circumstances, for instances, with the well known designer of steen boilers, Frof. Kensin, imprise med in the early thirties at the trial of the "Fromparty" ("Industrial perty"), and world renewaed eviction designer A.M. Tupolev, and sted by the NEVD in 1957, and later freed during the war for convince the American 3-29.

This bureau now comes under the jurisdiction of the HWD There is reason to believe that the Soviet experimentations and extense energy comes under the supervision of this body.

- 46 -

5. Penetions of METO Apparatus Compensate

By a more connectation of compensate of the MEVD appearables, one can see that there are two basis types of MEVD agencies, namely:

- a) Operative,
- b) Administrative or accommodative.

Operative sections (divisions or departments) and administrations(that is their official title - call to your mind the signature on the pass issued for foreign diplomats for entering the Red Square or the Kremlin) are such agencies of the MEVD, which directly fulfil the terroristic functions entrusted to them by the Erealiz. oligarehs, - 1.e. the Chief Administration of State Security (GUGE) in the MIVD system and the Ministry of State Security (MGB) nowedays. All other MKYD departments are only scoomodeting, in that or other form, these operative organs. So, for example, the Administrative and Supply Department supplies the operative agencies with stationery, special lamps for making the eyes of the examinees smart, silk stockings - through special Chekist M - "Co-operative for MKWD officials and troops", etc. The Financial Department pays out the salary to the officials and empleyees, and gives out special sums for conspiratorial purposes according to the femous per. 9. The Senitary Department enables the Chekists, were out by terturing their victims, to pick up their health semembers in the lummry of the ferner palece of prince leasourer in Cereis, in the Crises.

Similarly, the HEVD efficiels (we are considering here ealy those HEVD efficiels who are on the permanent staff) are divided into two categories: operative efficiels (setrudaixi) and ordinary efficiels.

There are four grades of the HEVD operative officials:

a) Assistant operative agent-representative (in Mussians posseshmik operativenes upolnomochomogo)

- b) Junier operative agent-representative (in Eusaien: mladahi eperativni upolnomechenni);
- e) Operative agent-representative (in Bussian: operatival upelacoschenni);
- d) Senier operative agent-representative (in Mussian: starshi eperativni upolnomochemni)

In Russian, using the Chekist slang, the operative agentrepresentative is briefly called the "operupolnomochemniy"; for an ordinary Soviet citisem it is one of the most terrible words that he knows, for it reaks of arrest.

The assistant operative agent-representative is the lowest sategory of operative officials. Usually, all novices begin their server in this capacity. But if the newly admitted official has been previously graduated from one of the numerous NKVD schools, he is appointed straight away as junior operative agent-representative after the grade of the Senior operative agent-representative. After the grade of the Senior operative agent-representative the NKVD officials are maded in accordance with the demonination of the operative unit they are supervising; thus, the official supervising a branch, is called "the chief of the NKVD branch",— and official, engaged as an assistant chief of the administration, is called "Assistant Chief of the Administration", etc.

But prestically all these titles are usually abbreviated, and in efficial correspondence they are written like that: "pen.mach. INO" (assistant chief of Fereign Division) or "mach.HOFO (chief of the Administrative department). In the certificates of of the HIVD efficials (a little black card made of cardboard and doubled up) for the make of committeey it is only mentioned : contrade so-end-so is "assistant chief of the Division of the HKVD USSR? or " section chief of UNKVD LO (Lemingred region administration of HIVD). But we will give more details later on.

Since 1937 the military ranks, as existing in the Red Army, were also introduced in the MKVD in addition to the official titles. The essential difference was only in the fact that the scale of

military reaks in HEVD was always one or two grades higher than in the army. Thus, for instance, the sergeant in the MEVD, 1. 2. at acn-commissioned officer, corresponded in reality to the second lightenent is the ermy both so to the rights and to the amount of selary. A lieutement in the SKVD (lieutement of State Security) equals to a captain of the Red Army, and & captain of State Security equals to an army colonel. In other words, here a certain discrimination of the officers of the Soviet army took place. They are morbidly ewere of this fact, especially as the officers of the Seviet secret police are much better provided for. This is one of the reasons for a cortain hostility between the army and the MKW) units; for instance, you will never see army officer walking togother with METD officers. But this is exectly what the Soviet regime moods so bedly: two ermies exist in one country, jealeusly spying after each other, and such a situation is considered by the Erealin as the best guarantee against a military plot.

As to the methods of work of the MKVD from the ergenisetional point of view, so, of course, they differ in many respects from the usual methods, emong them the methods of military instatutions. More than anywhere, the decision in a large part of coses is made resulting from personal or telephone conversations: these are, for the most part, such cases where secret organs are involved, where no traces have to be left, i.e. the meanest cases, often connected with personal interest of the officials etc. But even in this citatel of secrety and conspirate, the bureautrocy has found a stable seat. The typical maledies of the Seviet burecurrer - the unwillingness to take over the responsibility and the tendency of "reinguring" eneself (perestanheths) by getting a written senction of the superiors, thrive also here. Not without reason, in the days of mass messacres, one of the most malicious mesters in the art of butchering, the deputy People's Commissar Sakovsky (executed in 1958) issued "erders about abolition of written orders" in a whole series of cases and especially insisted on the liquidation of "red tape and bureaucrosy" in cases of condemetion to death. He himself brought the treatment of such cases

to the highest grade of simplicity, putting only six letters "MM. Sek." (Typsheys more makesonia - highest degree of punishment - Zekovsky).

In the recent years the prestice of guidance by means of the so called "eperative conferences" has been widely spread. Such conferences, arranged according to edministrative units (administration - division - section - branch), are usually imformed about the important orders of the People's Commissor or about some other urgent arrangements when immediate steps have to be taken. It means that any instructions of the MEVD leaders may be carried into effect on the vast territory of the whole Soviet Union literally in the course of several hours. During the regular, i.e. not so urgent mendanences operative conferences the current problems are usually discussed, the instructions given, the reports heard.

The verbal instructions of higher authorities are called "settings" ("ustanovka"). Arithm orders usually confirm such settings, given formerly. Besides orders, local organs of the EKVD regularly get the so called "orientations" from the center. For the most part these orientations comprise data, received from the agents, about the activity of foreign spice and diversionists. These data may serve for the purpose of their detention if they appear on the terribory of a certain NKVD agency. But there are also orientations of a general character; especially often the erientations of this kind are given to the local agencies and to the Berder Guards, stationed on the frontiers of the Seviet Union. Such general orientations are called the informative case.

The connection with local agencies is realised by means of correspondence, delivered by special armed courriers (field linimes - "Feldsvyas"), with the help of telephone net work of the MKYD, by means of usual telephone network (for non-secret convermetions), by telegraph (using code) and radio, through the special redio-network of the MKYD. It has to be mentioned, that the communication section of the MKYD does not work exclusively for its own ministry, but is also svailable for all governmental and party

organisations when secret letters have to be mailed, but as the USSR is afflicted by a "secretomenia", it is not difficult to imagine the scope of work reserved for the NEVD in its capacity of letter-carrier.

From this point of view the MKVD is something like the second Ministry of communications in the USSR; it is enough to say that even the diplomatic mail going abroad or coming from abroad is delivered by the courriers employed by the MKVD and not by the Soviet Foreign Office. The telephone connection is achieved through a special telephone network, both for local purposes and for the trunk line telephone. For this purpose special cables are used. Besides all the leading officials of the MKVD nave in their offices the so-called direct line, connecting them with their immediate subordinates in other cities of the country (for example in Leningrad, kinsk, Kiev and in other capitals of Union nepublics). One has to believe that now the direct line, connects also the capitals of all poviet satellites with moscow, at least through the diplomatic missions of the USSR in these countries.

the telephone station in Moscow is contected with the keneral city network. The city telephone network is obliged to give an immediate connection with the NKVD switch-board. By automatic telephone exchange the HkVD headquarters in moscow may be reached by setting up "K-6" or "O-4". The MAVD telephone net work is selfproviding and does not depend on the city. Besides all the leaders of central governmental institutions have a direct line connecting them with the MKVD. So, for example, in Stalin's secretarist an MEVD telephone apparatus has been installed begring the number 37-61, but for his conversations with the People's Commisser and other prominent NKVD officials Stalin uses normally the Kremlin sutometic telephone exchange, the so-called "whirligig". As to the telegraph connection, the NAVD sends ciphered telegrams using the general line, but they are given in a special room reserved for governmental correspondence. The workers of this department ere MKVD men, but for the make of conspiracy are on the payroll of the Ministry of Communications. Telegrams, sent by the MAYD, are

forwarded as governmental ones, according to the series "FK". As to the radio connection, more details will be given in the chapter dealing with the 2nd Special Division of the MKYD.

In conclusion we have to mention the MKVD archives where "cases" of all persons. If them the MKVD has already avenged in that or other form, are kept (persons whose turn has not yet come are registered with the 1st Special Division). These archives are used for reference, which may be necessary in connection with the inquest of some new case, and are situated in the cellar of House 2 in Lubjanka (old building). It includes the so-called residing-room where the MKVD officials may get acquainted with the cases, but for this purpose they must get permission from such a prominent worker as chief of the branch, sometimes even from the division chief. The Foreign division has its own archives which may not be used by employees of other MKVL agencies.

6. Chief administration of State Security

Teaks and Structure

See the Diegrem No 7

The Chief Administration of State Security (GUGB NKVD SERR) is the essential and most important agency of the enormous system of Soviet political terror, that has so many ramifications. Strictly speaking, the NKVD or MGB is the Chief Administration of State Security as such, for all other links of the NKVD system or "organs", if we use the Chekist slang, play only an auxiliary part. The "chastising sword" is the GUGB. Just this Chief Administration of State Security is responsible for discovery, isolation and liquidation of real and imaginary "enemies of the people", real and especially potential antegonists of Communical and its dictatorial leadership. The GUGB Shief is always the First Deputy of the People's Commissar for Internal Affairs. After the war, the Chief Administration of State Security was transformed into an independent Ministry of State Security as we have already mentioned above.



The general structure of this administration did not suffer any considerable changes since the time of the JGFU, and it
was accepted by the new Ministry approximately in the same shape.
Anyhow, one has to consider, that, though the structure was preserved, the numeration of some divisions was changed in the course of time, and by the end of the thirties most of the GUGB divisions were remared as administrations, though the MKVD men
continued to call these administrations divisions. This circumstance creates certain difficulties at the classification of the
GUGB structure. Therefore the authors draw the attention of the
readers at the possibility of some errors and inaccurations in
this respect.

As far us we could find out, at the moment of transforming divisions into administrations (approximately beginning sith the year 1937) the G GB had the following structure :

ist opecial Division - a center or statistical operative recording of anti-poviet elements

(Abb) and Mayo agents:

2nd Special rivision - a center of operative technics; 1st Division - protection or the leaders and of the Arealin;

≥nd " - counter-intelligence (KHO);

5rd " - economic (EKO);

4th " - secret political (br0);

5th " - "Osobly Otdel" (OU) - spy work in the Aray;

6th " - transport (TO);

7th " - foreign (IRO);

8th " - prisons and places of detainment

Inquest Office of the GUGB

In the course of expansion and re-organization of the MKVD system, such divisions as counter-intelligence, economic, secret-political, foreign and transport were remand into administrations and their staff was correspondingly enlarged. The authors of this work have no information available as to the transformation of the "Osobiy Otdel" into an administration, though tasks and

functions of this division "ascomodating" the Amy and the Mavy immensely increased for the last 10-15 years. Further, both in the text and in the album of schematic diagrams the following denomination will be used for the GUGB central agencies: Counter-Intelligence administration (KEU), Economic administration (EXU), Secret-Political administration (EXU), Foreign administration (IMU) and Transport administration (TU), but the term Special Division ("Osobiy Otdel" or "OO") will not be changed. To complete the picture, the accomodating agencies such as Maintenance Administration and Financial Administration, with their branches, are shown on the diagrams, but no analysis of their work will be made as they have no essential meaning for the understanding of characteristic features of the MKVD, and their structure, upon the whole, is following the same pattern as its account in all the other People's Commissariats of the Users.

with the exception of the first and the second opecial wivisions and of the lat Division of the GUGB, the numeration of divisions and administrations will not be mentioned either in the text or in the album of diagrams, as the MAY. Frequently changed the numeration for the sake of conspiracy, as he was mentioned before. The last change in the numeration was made by the transformation of the Guib into the Mub. As a result of the above mentioned facts, different materials which were made available to the authors, were often of controversial nature. According to one information, the becret-Folitical administration enigh formerly had number 4, received in the MGB the name of the 3rd administration. Another source indicates that the title of the 3rd administration was reserved for the Counter-Intelligence administration, which was formerly called the 2nd administration, Approximately the same picture may be observed in the cases of the Foreign and Loncaic administrations. Under such circumstances the applying of numeration of schainistrations would only lead to minunderstandings and disorientation of the rester.

The authors are fully aware of the fact that the giving up of the use of numbers for denominating divisions and administrations, will be a serious defect of this work, especially as, approximately since 1937, all divisions and administrations of the MKVD-MGB are usually designated only by numbers in the whole official correspondence for the sake of conspiracy. In the certificates of the MKVD officials the name of the division where they are working, is never given.

The general features of the structure of administrations that were part of the GUGB, were not changed in the last fifteen years; the administrations of the MGB are based upon almost the same schoole that was made out for the corresponding divisions of the OGPU. The difference lies only in the scale, i.e. the administrations of the MGB are more cumbersome and have sany more emplayers than the OGPU divisions. But the number of people on staff is not constant in that or snother administration. Buch stell may be either increased or diminished depending on the fact, which administration has the largest portion of sork at the present moment, or, according to the picturesque expression of laboda, where the "GPU God" is sested, i.e. the terrorization or which part or the Loviet population is more important from the point of view of the folithuro at a certain time, no, for example, during the first Five-year plan and collectivisation the residence of this "GPU God" was the Economic division, after the murder of Airov he moved to the Secret-Folitical division, before the war his presence was distinctly felt in the Foreign administration, but during the war he moved egain to the "Jaobiy Jtdel" and to the Counter-Intelligence administration. In such cases, some of the personnel of edministrations and divisions less important at talk peried of time, are transferred to that administration on which the Particular attention of the Folithure is concentrated at the moment.

In special cases separate administrations may be temporarily joined in order to fulfil this or another special task set by

the Polithuro, but the structure of each reasins unchanged in the principal features. So, for example, during the war a special edministration "MANNSH" ("Smertj shpionem" - death to spies) was formed. Many foreign observers erroneously took this administretion for the Counter-Intelligence easinistration of the Red Aray General staff. In reality it was only a union of the "Caobiy Otdel" with the Counter-Intelligence administration of the MAYD under the general direction of the Leputy Feople's Commisser of the NKVD and Chief of the "Osobiy Otdel", General-Colonel V.C. Abakusov who during the war was directly subordinated to otaling as People's Commissar for Defence. Because of this, a mistake was made abroad in connecting the "Sakhabi" with the General staff of the med Army. After the resignation of btalin of his functions of leopie's Commisser for Defence, "Sammba" was liquidated and the administrations of the MAVD (now sub), out of which it was formed, resumed their previous structure with only some minor Chame es-

nexal structure of the Good NAVL of the Cook was as follows: (See the Disgram No 7) -

1st opecial ilvision - megistration of agents and operative recording of anti-covist elements;

2nd Special Division - Operative technics;

1st Division - protection of leavers and of the kremlin;

<u>KRU</u> - Counter-Intelligence administration (former 2nd wivimion):

BrU - Secret-Political edministration (former 4th or 3rd bivision);

EKU - Economie administration (former 3rd or 4th Livision);

00 - "Usobiy Otadel" or Special Division (former 5th Div.); murbeillence in the ked Army;

TU - Transport administration (former oth Division);

INU - Foreign edministration (former 7th Division);

Administration of prisons and places of Estantion - (former Sth Division)

Inquest Division - (former Inquest Office),

The authors were their resders from confusing the Transport administration of the GUGB ("Transportace upravlenie GUGB NKVD ESSE) with the administration of Highways of the MKVD ("Glavabordor NKVD SSER"), which will be squaidered in the later chapters of this work. The first of these administrations is concerned with maintaining of State Security rules on the rail read and water transport, while the second one controls the auto roads and highways as the NKVD supervises them also from the technical point of view.

CHAPTER IX

OF THE GUGS REVO USSE

Diegree He B

The terreristic activity of the MKYD inside the Soviet Union is based upon the registration and classification of two elements of the Soviet population: 1) MKYD agents, 2) the so-called antiLoviet element ("ABE" - according to the MKYD abbreviation).

The first form of recording is called the agent-net registration ("uchet agentury"), the second one - the operative registering ("operuchet"). The recording of agents and "ADE" is
the concern of the 1st Special Division of the UUUS MEVD, whose
subdivisions or branches are to be found in all territorial ageneies of the NKYD. The work of the 1st Special Division of the
GUGB is closely connected with the Central Archives of the NKYD,
where all the cases that have been dealt with by the Soviet punitive organs since the time of Cheka may be found on the files.
But the work of the Central Archives is not doubled by the 1st
special Division, as the main task of the latter is the service
to the operative organs of the MEYD in their current work.

In the People's Commisseriet (now Ministry) as such, as well as in all territorial agencies, it consists only of two sectors:

1) Recording of agents, 2) hecording of anti-boviet element "Abb". These sectors may be considered as independent divisions and are subdivided into sections or branches, according to the character of the contingent of the population that is being registered or is subject to such a registration. Besides, in both sectors there are statistical sections that have to deal only with general numbers; general number of agents according to different nonemals—tures, number of "ASE" etc.

The "operative-statistical" section of the second sector systematises the figures according to the summary ("svodka") compiled by all local operative agencies of the MKVD about the "political-moral" frame of mind of the population and about its reaction to these or other events inside the USSK and abroad. If no particular events took place, the "operative-statistical" section only systematises the regular summaries of the operative agencies, and on their besis compiles reviews for the whole territory of the USSR and them turns to other problems; for instance, compiles a summary based on the reports of the local agencies of ERU about the anti-Soviet opinions, expressed by the former sussign emigrants who had returned to the USSR. A selection out of these summaries is regularly forwarded to the Central Committee of the Communist Party for the information of corresponding party organs.

DECRATIVE ESCUDING

operative recording or the so-called special recording of the anti-Soviet element is the concern of the 2nd Jector of the lat Special Division GUGB EKYD USER. Its tentactes embrace a huge number of the Soviet citisens and it is based on the individual card of special record, that is on the file for every person who is under suspicion of the EKYD.

All persons, registered with MAVD, are divided into categories, or, using the MAVD terminology, have their "tints". The corresponding category or "tint" is entered on the registration card of a purson, of the recorded person, so, the registration card of a purson, the uses to relate political with is marked by letters "ASZ, put in the corner - it means that the "tint" of this person is "AB"—anti-Moviet. The number of these estegories or "tints" is very great. The basis ones are a

- AS esti-Seriet element;
 - 8 "bielly" "white" (former participents of the white movement in 1917-1921);

- PR "pretimik" entegonist. (This sategory comprises members of former political parties in the pre-revelutionary Russia. The party membership is indicated by putting after this "tint" some additional letters so, "PR/NR, or "PR/N" -will denot in the first compressor "Membersik", in the second former "Membersik", in the second former "Membersik".
- KK Counter-revolutionary:
- TS "teerkovnik" a men connected in some way with the church. Besides priests, this group comprises all believers who are active in their religious communities and in church matters. The sectarions (dissenters) are not recorded under the "tint" TS, for they are forming a separate group.
- g "sektanty" sectarians (dissenters). From the operative point of view this group is considered equal to PR (antagonists).
- P "povetentei" insurgents. This group comprises all persons who took part in any rebellion at the time of Civil Asr, military communism and collectivisation periods, and also persons who have shown seditious tendencies in later periods.
- N nationalists of all shades.
- SI "svyss s impostrentseni" connection with foreigners (personnel of foreign embassies, exchange of letters with relatives abroad, etc.)
- suspected of espionage on the basis of their correspondence, connection with relatives abroad, etc. It represents, so to say, the next stage of natural development after the person was registered as "SI".
- T terrozist.
- D diversionist.
- Prev. "previye" the rightists. Members of the right opposition in the Party (Bukharinites).

Tr. - The Trotskyite. The same symbol is used for the adherents of Einoviev and other participants or supporters of the left opposition.

This list of recorded "tints" is in no case complete and is may be admitted that, in the years of war, it was made considerably longer by adding such new "tinta" as I- fascist, H - adherent of Hitler, B - "benderist" (Ukrainian maticaalist), Vl. - "vlasovets" (member or adherent of the Vlassov movement), As. - "miskepoklemnik" - servility to the bourgeoisie etc. But even the list, given above, shows what a large part of the population is under the comstant supervision of the MXVD. At the same time, it also shows how wide spread is the struggle of the people of the Ubbk egains* the Soviet regime. Together with all arrestoes and millions of persons who are being "punished", the all imminently remind Stalin of the fact that his regime is the most terrible but, at the same time, the weakest in the whole world, for it is opposed by the huge mass of the population. All those persons, on whose cards the symbol of their "tint" has been drawn, are automatically set under a supervision of the divb agents.

once more it has to be repeated that, in case of a corresponding directive from the Politbure, all persons sharing that or enother "tist" are arrested, and their further fate depends not on their real guilt but on the "general line of the Party" for the present period of time.

Data, gathered by the agents during their watch (during "resrabotka" - "elaboration" in the Chemist terminology) of a sertain person who has been recorded with the special MAVD registration, gives a start for building up a "case".

"Cases" are divided into the following groups:

1. "Agenturneys resrebetks" (egent elaboration) which is officially called "egenturneys delo" (egent case), and embraces a group of persons sharing the same views, who are tied together by periodic encounters, conversations or personal friendamip.

2. "Delo formuliar" - (service list case), where only eac principal person who is under suspicion ("figurant" according to the Chekist terminology) is being "elaborated", and all his emmedians are being recorded only to complete the case. In most cases the "service list case" is seener or later transformed into an "agenturnoye delo", or (provided the "figurant" shows any activity) leads to a arrest.

The overwhelming majority of cases of "figurents" who are being "elaborated" by the operative MAVD organs, are on the Mecorota as "service list cases". Under normal conditions, the Aroup cases are comparatively rarely recorded on the files of the st opecial Division.

- 3. "U-D" ("Uchetneye diele") "Megistration case" is brought against less active "figurants". Usually as a basis for such a case serves some instruction from the center ordering to make records about a certain group of population. For example, in 1935, after the customery purge in the party, a considerable percentage of the so-called "hangers on" ("primasovahihaya") was excluded from the party, as being not fit for this high privillage. On the ground of a special secret instruction all such persons were registered as "U-D" in those cases when they were not accused as Trotakyists, or when their ASK registration cards had not been previously marked east with some other "tint". Later on, following a new special secret directive, a campaign of liquidating the people registered within this group, was carried on, and ... par.169 of the Criminal Code of the MSFOK (ill-intended fraud, or forgery) was incriminated against them.
- 4. "Liternoe diele" "Lettered case" is usually concerned with a certain industrial or some other object. This case includes all lists of persons on the staff of this enterprise, different data of official commissions, correspondence with trusts. ects of sudits, materials of Party purges, different declarations, enonymous statements and other casual materials up to the inferential that this enterprise does not fulfil the program of the output, reports about the breaking out of fire, about damages etc.

All this is completed by a special list of persons, included in this "Lettered Case". Such a special list usually does not show persons that have already been recorded according to some "tint". Usually this list is composed of the names of persons, about whom the NKVD has some naterial of small importance, 1.c. ananymous denunciation, expulsion from the Komsomol because of the loss of the membership card, or even some suspicion. All these persons are specially recorded and registration cards are made out marked aith the symbol "i-I" ("Liternoye dielo"). This category is considered to be the least ective one, still the presence of a card, serked with "i-D" on the files of the 1st Special Division, is already like a brand and puts certain restrictions for the person concersed both in his social life and his activity. For instance, if such a person is casually included in a list of guests to be present at a session of the Supress Soviet of the USA (and the names of such guests are invariably checked with the special registration files) he will never get the invitation card for the session.

The center for special recording of anti-Soviet elements is the 2nd sector of the lat Special Division of the SUGB MAVO USSR (now MGB USSR). In its hands detailed statistical data as to "tints" and so to the spreading of these tints in republics, regions and districts of the Soviet Julian are concentrated. Javally, besides collecting statistical data, the lat Special Division makes out special geographical maps according to the "tints". This enables the leadership of the recyle's Commissariat at any time to orient themselves in directing the sork of the Safur agencies in the whole USSR and in separate republics and districts.

not only the "tint", but rether detailed data about the recorded person are marked on the redistration card. (See appendix).

In the local subordinate agencies of the NAVD the registration
card of the recorded person is filled out in three copies; one
copy is forwarded to the agency that is conducting the "elaboration";
the second one is sent to the 2nd special Division of the Regional
administration of the NAVD - to control the "elaboration", and the

third one goes to Moscow, to the 1st Special Division of the conter, statistical section.

Statistical records of the 1st Special Division of the Poople's Commissariet and of the 1st Special Divisions in local MEVD (MGB) administrations are kept in absolute secret. According to an order of Levrenty Beris, issued in 1940, the chiefs of regional administrations were prohibited to give any information in this respect even to the secretaries of the regional semistees of the Comunist Party, who could obtain these data only through the Central Committee of the Party. For this purpose, the chief of the 1st Special Division in Moscow had to adapt and filtrate thesefate , and forward them to the Central Committee of the All-Union Communist Party only when they acquired special wording. It was well known in the MKVD circles that this order was proveked by the fact that new secretaries of the regional committees of the Bolshevik party, who took over this work after the "wreat iurge" and who were often recruited, in this period of time, from the MKVD men, in a series of cases made such demands to the chiefs of the regional manualteess NEVD administrations and received the wished information. This is a clear Illustration of the fact, that the MKVD does not reveal its secrets even to official representatives of the ruling party, with the exception of its highest organs.

In the MKVD (MGB) regional administrations the staff of the 1st Special Division is divided between two branches (operative recording and registration of agents). The employees of these branches enjoy the rights of the operative agents— representatives and their assistants, but in fact they are functionaries, clerks and statisticions.

In addition to the data of special records, all operative agencies of the HKVD-MGB are sytematically and regularly compiling summaries about the frame of mind of the bread masses of the Soviet people and their reaction to certain events inside the Soviet Union and abread. These summaries are forwarded to the

"operative-statistical" branch of the 2nd sector of the 1st Special Division GUGB MKVD for the purpose of systematising the picture of moral-political state of the population throughout the whole Soviet Union. Here is one of specimens of such a summery: efter the governmental decree about the abolition of the retioncard mystem in the USGR, all the regional MEVD administrations through their operative agencies collected reports about "megative attitude in connection with the decision of the Farty and Government to abolish the ration-card system". These summaries depict in short the character of statements made by separate persons, giving their "tints". The most characteristic facts are reported to the chief of the regional NEVD administration and certain measures are taken - up to the arrest. But this is not the most important thing, much more essential is that the chief of the sdministration, having received the statistical picture of the frame of mind of the population in his region, sends a copy of these figures, in the form of a ciphered telegram or radiogram, to the "operative-statistical" branch of the center, in Moscow, where these materials are summarised and forwarded to the MKVD People's Commisser for a report to Polithuro, or simply for his information.

This double system of constant operative recording of "tinta" and regular summaries about the frame of mind of the population fully enables the leadership of the NKVD-MAB to dispose the forces of their network as it is needed by the concrete situation in the country. In fact, it is nothing else but a constantly active and very intensive reconnoitering of forces and disposition of the enemy, where their own people is meant under this term. This is the principal difference between the system of the operative recording in the NKVD-MGB and the similar methods used by police agencies of all other countries of the world. The matter is not only in the scale, and not in the fact that in the USSR the punitive organs carry out a special registration of such elements of the population, who in no case could be classified as "eriminals" in any other country of the world.

The peculiarity of the Soviet eperative recording lies first of all in its preventive character, i.e. the registration eard of the MKVD-MGB is filled out for a certain citizen of the Meviet Union not because he or she committed any crimes or offences, but only because the personnel of the Soviet punitive organs committee him, or her, to be able to commit such crimes or offences in the future.

The second peculiarity may be seen in the fact that a registration card, once filled cut for a certain person, is never
destroyed even if the "tint", marked en it, is not substantiated
or is a result of an obvious calumnity. The man may be acquitted
in the court, may be fully rehabilitated by the party organs,
but the files of the MKVD-MGB will brand him for ever. The AllUnion Communist party and its punitive organs do not apply the
nation of the "term of limitation" to the actions of their political antagonists, and the MKVD-MGB may at any time resume the
persecution of any person for actions performed twenty or even
thirty years: ago. If this happens, it is only necessary to
"removate" to some extent the case of suchin person, and this is
one of the main tasks of the Soviet operative recording. This is
what is called the "record of the figurent's activity".

The third, and may be the most essential, peculiarity of the Soviet operative recording is that its data are never checked up by anybody else. The Commission of the Party Control in Moscow may check the activity of the MKVD-MGB, but there does not exist such an organization in the whole UBSR that could check the equity of data, filling in millions of registration cards in the numerous recording sectors of the punitive organs, scattered all over the country. The lack of "vigilance" is severely punished in the USBB, but the Bolshevist rulers will never blaze their punitive organs for the oversealcusness in this respect.

The Feople's Commissariet as well as the local MEVD administrations strictly stick to the principle that in the 1st Special Division a certain employee occupies himself with one defimate "tint" and does not get in touch with work and data of other branches. The officials of other MKVD divisions and administrations have no access to the files of the 1st Special Division and whey can contect this agency only through their secretarists; which are directly subordinated to higher MKVD organs.

The operative-statistical recording is the basis for all political and operative work of the whole complicated network of NAVD-NGB agencies, that spread their sticky cobweb over the whole country. If any political discontent of anti-communist nature arises in the country, the geographical files of the operative recording will immediately show where this "tint" was nost active for some time past, and where the principal, or most dangerous from the Kremline point of view, center of such a movement is lecated. All NEVD forces will be disposed there, the agents among persons of this "tint" will be recruited and thus the discontent will not be allowed to turn into a direct resistance movement.

The access to the map of "tints" is free only for a very limited circle of the most prominent officials in the Soviet secret police. Neither its whereabouts nor even the fact of its existence is known to the majority of the MKVD men. Probably, from time to time this map is shown to Stalin. It is even more probable that he has either a capy of this map, or his own map which has been compiled by a special "MKVD" inside the MKVD — by a Special Sector of the Central Committee of the Party.

In the days of war the "Generalissise" made his decisions as to the plan of military operations, bending together with Mhu-kov and Vassilevaky ever a secret "operative map" showing the dislocation of Mitler troops. This map was drawn for him by the 4th Administration of the General Staff. In the days of peace he examination the same way, together with Beria, Merkulev and Krug-lov, a map showing the dislocation of anti-communist activists smong the peoples of Russia - the map drawn for him by the 1st Special Division ...

This system of constant and secret "operative recording" makes possible for the MEVD-MGB to leave to its mercy the whole of the population in the USBR. The MEVD-MGB registers every libel.

every anonymous demunciation and, without a special order from the Kremlin, does not show either to its victims or to the court, on which data its actions were based.

A real liberation of the peoples of the USSE from Belmbeview will be completed only at the moment when, after the liquidation of Chekista and their Eremlia beases, all files and archives of the Soviet punitive ergans will be destroyed.

Recording of Agents

If the eperative recording of ASE (enti-Soviet elements) is basic for the distribution of forces and direction of actions of the Soviet punitive organs, the work with agents, their recording and classification is the principal element in the operative work of all MKVD-MGB agencies. The constant tension inside the country and the fact, that the Bolahevist potentates are fully aware of the hatred they have inspired to all strate of the population, led to the creation of a mass net of SKVD agents in the USSE. This net censists of many millions of secret agents belonging to different divisions and administrations of Seviet punitive organs.

It may be supposed that the principle of the German counterintelligence service, aiming at creating a possible wider net of
agents, was borrowed to a certain extent by the detting up of a
Soviet network of agents. But the Soviet system proceded considerebly further, and a network of mass agents was net up not only
by the Counter-Intelligence administration of the SEVD, but also
by the rest of its administrations and divisions, first of all by
the Secret-Political administration, "Ocobiy Otdel", Economic administration and Transport administration.

The system of recruiting, classifying and recording the agents in all these administrations is almost the same, though first of all it is worked out by the counter-intelligence administration. Still it would be erroneous to refer all the work of agents to the counter-intelligence branch, as it is done in all other countries of the world, as for as the Soviet Government

.

leads a constant war not so much against external enonies as against peoples of its own country. The essential forces of the Soviet punitive organs are just concentrated on this internal struggle with the population.

The statistical and operative recording of agents employed by all MEVD-MGB agencies is the consern of the 1st Sector of the 1st Special Division of GUGS in Moseow and corresponding offices of republican, regional and area administrations of the MKVD. All territorial and specialised agencies of the MKVV-mGB fill in special registration eards for all their ageuts (see appendix). Copies of these cards are forwarded to the files of the 1st apecial Division in Moscow (1st Mostor) for further classification and statistical recording. This is the center of recording for agents of all MEVI - MGB organs throughout the Soviet Union. and therefore it is more convenient to make an enlysis of principles of the classification of egents and the work with them, in connection with the analysis of structure and field of operation of the 1st Special Division of the GUGL MEYD USSE (now MGB USGE). But, of course, it does not mean that the recruiting of agents and the work with them is the concern of this MaVu branch. This practical work is carried out by different operative egencies and depends on the tasks they have to fulfil. The 1st Special Division of the Center, in Moscow, and its local branches wie concerned only with the operative recording of scents.

Acents

There are several grades of agents, differentiated by their field of operations, compenses and their significance in the NXVD-aGB system. The principal categories of the agents are the following:

Usual abbreviation:

1. Resident

#g#

2. Agent

"85"

3. Special agent

"BD/82"

4. Agent of internal observation - "sg/V" ("Vnutrenniy" - internal)

5. Secret informer

- "s/e" ("eswiedomitelj" im-
- 6. Beeret informer for lodging "80/K" ("kwartire"-lodging)
- 7. Tenent of conspirative quarters Ch/KK ("Chonyain"-tenent)

These categories of agents have the following poculiarities:

1. Resident. Is usually member of the Communist Party or a former Chekist, failing this - a Komsonel. He may be also picked out of capable and reliable informers, but he must invariably have practical experience in conspiracy and agent's work. Carrying on his usual official tasks, i.e. being the Chief of the Hear ret Department of some factory, Chief of the Personnel Section of some works, Assistant Commander of a military unit as to political work ("pompolit"), such a man is at the same time an HKVD man, "accommodating" this industrial or military object, i.e. supervising it.

A special personal file is kept for every resident with manifold characteristics and check-ups, including a check-up with the files of the 1st Special Division of the regional administration and center. In this file are noted and checked all his connections and acquaintances, whereby his family and all his relatives are checked in the most careful way. Some anti-Soviet statements, i.e. any critical remarks on the address of the Seviet government made by persons, connected with this man or their former social background, can be no obstacle for this man to be appointed resident. But if the registration cards of the persons connected with him, are marked with such "tints" as "Shr" (spy), "T" (terrorist), "KR" (counter-revolutionary), "Frav."(rightists), or "fr" (Trotskyist) - he cannot be appointed resident.

A resident is connected with a "network" of 5-6-12 agents and secret informers, when he receives according to a special time-table, instructs them and collects their information. Only the resident is usually paid for the work. As to the "network", this or another method of empulsion is used, and people work

out of fear for the consequences of not fulfilling their obligations, which these secret agents and informers have signed in the MKVD agency that recruited them.

Residents are future official employees of different MKVD-MGB agencies; There are no specifications as to the terms of their work as residents.

2. Agent. Usually secret informer, but invariably belonging to that or another registered group of "tinto", having connections with the ASE-group. So, for instance, if an agent is needed for the "elaboration" of the Trotakyists, a Trotakyist is picked out for this work, and especially such a Trotakyist who is in full confidence of the group to be elaborated. The agent is recruited with the help of some concrete compromising material and invariably is brought to a stadium where he has to make his decision, having been told - "MKVD work or prison!". Operative expenses of the agent - for trips, entertaining his friends, eac. - are usually paid. Sometimes agents receive some periodical rewards for their work. But upon the whole, agents work out of fear, i.e. trying to save themselves and their families from possible reressions by loyal apying for the skVD.

de Epecial arent. There are two categories of such special agents according to the character of the tasks they have to fulfil, though these categories are not mentioned in the operative recording. The first group is composed out of specialists in some branch of national economy or industry, such as chemists, metcal-lurgists, building engineers etc. The task of these agents is to control the work of some enterprise or trust and to expose all elements of sabotage, wreckage etc.

The second category of agents-specialists includes pickpockets, burglars, specialists for opening safes and other highlyskilled criminals. These agents-specialists fulfil various tasks.
For instance, an agent-representative has to make a secret perquisition (called "vyenka" by the Chekists) in the home of a
"figurant" whose "elaboration" is in process. For some reasons
this perquisition is appointed for 17,00, but usually the owner

of the ledging comes home at that time. It is necessary to detain him in some way so that he does not see the agent-representative making search in his room. For this purpose a specialist-heoligan is summaned. He waits for the "figurent" somewhere in the street end, using some mind of pretent, attacks and beats him. A seandal breaks out, both are brought to a police-station, the same is investigated for 2-3 hours and at last the victim of the assault is set free. In the meantime the parquisition is brought to an end. The agent-representative rings up the police station and the agent-bendit is set free. Though this method is very mean and aynical, nevertheless it is rather often applied by the HKVD men.

The first group of special agents work without pay and exclusively under compulsion, but the agents-criminals get their rewards. The same group comprises cheats, prostitutes, jugglers etc. These "useful services" of the criminal underworld to the operative agencies of the MKVD are partly responsible for the fact that these "socially-close" elements are granted different privileges and advantages in the prisons and comps, and they are even promoted to different administrative posts, including that of camp commanders. The USSR is the only country in the world where bufglars and nurderers command the imprisoned professors, engineers, actors and writers.

a. Arent of internal observation. This is a non-active agent recruited from the immediate environment of the "figurent" (very often from his own family), but who is not registered with the "tint", marking the registration card of the "figurent". As such an agent may serve the sister of a Trotakyist, who is in permanent contact with him and knows or may know more about him them anybody else or may help in carrying out some measures that would lead to the activation of his "elaboration". But persons are restraited after a very careful study, and usually some very important material, mostly of private character, is applied; the fear of revelations forces these persons to work for the MEVD. Thus, these people/ are simply victims of blackmail. If such material is not evailable, it is prepared artificially. Very eften such a

candidate for an agent is persuaded that he must work in this breach for the sake of safety of the very person, who has to be the object for this special observation.

Were instance, the sister of the "figurent" is summoned to the MKYD, where forged papers are shown to her while she is being told, that the MKYD agencies are sware of the fact that somebody wants to restruit her brother or helf succeeded in doing this. But this is not so important, they say, - "We know that your brother is a good man, but we must take held of the persons, she want to entangle your brother into their dirty meshes. You must help us in this repect for the sake of safety of your brother" ... The unfortunate woman gives her consent and, not knowing herself, helps the MKYD to ruin her own brother. Such plotting led and leads to many terrific personal tragedies, but the people "who are guarding the conquests of the revolution" are not at the least embarassed by them.

The work with such kinds of agents is very delicate and requires a lot of test and shrewciness. Therefore, it is usually entrusted to experienced operative agents-representatives or even deputy chiefs of the branches. Such egents are usually rewarded for their work, but not necessarily with money or naterial goods. A frequently applied form of reward is a promise to facilitate the fate of relatives or intimates of such an agent.

Someta informer. This is the most widespread and the less specialised species of MKVD-MGB agents. Ahen millions of agents of the Soviet secret police are mentioned, one refers just tothis category. Secret informers are recruited by the MKVD-MGB organs out of all strate of population, whereby no distinction of age and sex are made. Accerding to a secret instruction, issued at the times of Nagoda (1934-1937), only children below the age of 12 cannot be recruited for this work - they do not stick to conspiracy. As to all the rost of the population of the Seviet Union, the SKVD-MGB agencies consider it to be a gigentic reservoir for recruiting secret informers. This recruiting is usually done by means of blockmoiling, threats, bullying and, in less frequent cases, mostly when young people are consormed, by

influencing their petriotic feelings.

As stronge as it may seem, but directly this misorable flo gure of a secret informer, terrorised and despising himself, is essentially supporting Stelin's distatorship. Experience has shows that Stalin cannot trust either werbers or pessents, or erey, or even his party - all hate him and would sessifice all to overthrow his edieus tyrenny. He can fully rely only upon this miserable secret informer. Of course, the latter also hates "the beloved leader", and may be even more than enybody class. But he has nowhere to go - he is entangled in the MAYD meshes, he camstantly welks with a loop around his nock and therefore, even egainst his will, he is forced to earry out the orders of his tormentors. There ere millions of secret informers - they are recruited smong workers, party members, intelluctuals, collective fermers, students, pensioners, housewives. The overwhelming majerity of them work out of fear and do not get any rewards. Their exact number is unknown, but legion is their name.

secret informer for lodging. This special eathery of secret informers has only the task of controlling who enters a certain house or lodging, when, how long he stayed and what happened then in the lodging. Besides that, such an agent may be entrusted with getting letters, things etc., from a person, whe lives close by and is "elaborated" by the NKVD. This category includes first of all housemesters and house-managers, whose duty is to notify the NKVD in a regular way about all events, happening in their houses. But frequently some lodgers of "communal" i.e. common lodgings are recruited for this purpose, especially housewides and pensioners who spend much time in their lodgings. In many cases domestic servents are recruited to apy after their measters. They are usually paid for this kind of service.

Querrole and squebbles brong families escupying earner lodging are frequently used by the restuiting of these agents. In some cases such agents get a reward, but in most cases they give their information with the wish to do an ili turn to their

neighbour who lives in a better room, has better food, tunes in the radio late at night etc. Seviet conditions of life areate ideal grounds for recruiting such agents, but all their information has to be carefully filtrated, for it often bears strong treess of personal feelings.

Z. Tenest of a Computation Quarters. Usually he is a Communist, a Konsomel or at any rate a person who was well checked up. The principal requirement - limited circle of connections (all of them have to be checked up) and a longing, suitable for computative meetings with residents or agents. Buch a tenent is regularly paid. All members of the family have to sign a promise of silence. If there are any children, conspiratories quarters cannot be established.

Every operative worker must have at least two such conspiratoral questers; one of them may serve for meetings with agents and informers, the other - only with residents (for the sake of comspiracy). Usually for meetings agents two or even three lodgings are available, but agents suspicious or even denterous as to double-dealing are usually seen in hotels. As a rule, operative workers and residents see no agents at home and do not conduct any work there.

The former chief of the American Military Mission in Moseow, General John R. Dean, describes in his book "The birange Alliance" some of his meetings with leading officials of the MaVD Foreign edministration, General-Lieutenant P.M.Fitim and Major-General A.P.Ossipev. The purpose of this meeting was to establish a working arrangement between the American O.S.B. and the Moviet Intelligence agencies. The American general was greatly pushed by the fact that these two leading workers of the Soviet secret intelligence never met him at the same place twice and always took the greatest precautions when arranging these meetings. Once the driver of the MEVD car who had to bring him to this meeting, arranged a true race along the Moseow streets trying to lose the private car of the American general, the Bussian driver of which was following the MEVD car at the heels.

Give up the usual principles of their work, and besides they prebably had instructions to arrange these meetings without any supervision by the agents of the "external observation" (L-HH) of the 2nd Special Division of the GUGS HKVD and "SMARGH" administration, whose agent was, probably, was the private Russian driver of the American general. The circumstances under which these meetings took place greatly surprised the American general, but they were typical for the HKVD principles of work. In this case Fitin and Ossipov met their American counterparts under the same circumstances, as an average HKVD operative agent-representative meets his residents and agents. There can be ne doubts that all this had been done deliberately and after some serious discussion in the highest quarters of the HKVD. what was the secret aim of all these tricks — is hard to say, but there had to be one.

Regruiting of Agents

As a rule, the recruiting of an agent is preceded by checking with data of the 1st Special Division, and, in more important cases, with files of all operative divisions and their special archives. Enquiries are invariably sent to : 1) piace of birth - about the social origin of the parents and their background;
2) MKVD agency, "accombdating" the region where the candidate lives; 3) MKVD agency, "accommodating" the industrial or any other object, where the candidate works. Besides that secret characteristics of the candidate are demanded from the local party organisation (this is very often camouflaged so as if these characteristics are about for by the regional military commissariat, police-station etc.), then a "setting" ("ustamovka"), i.e. checking up is made in his place of residence - usually through house managers, house-masters and other "agents for lodging". All these data are used as basis for a "Report for recruiting"

The recruiting of a resident must be sanctioned: in regional administrations - by the chief of the division or administration in Question to the division in Question to the division of the division in Question to the division of the divis

The recruiting of an agent is senctioned in the sene way. If the egent has been picked out of the number of "figurants" of a cortain "elaboration", for which, of source, he is recruited, his recruiting is sanctioned by the deputy chief of the MKVD administration. Recruiting of other estegories of agents are sanctioned and approved by less responsible officials, usually by chiefs of the branches or sections.

The "report for recruiting" must contain the data for the "setting" of the recruited person (i.e. the conclusions drawn from the materials dealing with his person); besides it must be mentioned where and how the actual recruiting will take place, who is recruiting and for what purpose, and also what steps will be taken providing the recruited person will refuse to work for the REVD.

The actual recruitings are usually based either on the socalled loyalty to the Soviet regime (residents, tenants of conspirattrial quarters, in some cases - secret informers) or on some compromising material which is either available or artificially created. If a "figurant" is recruited out of a certain "elaboration", he has usually to chose : either work for the MKVD or arrest with all its consequences. If the material is erested artificially and the recruiting is based on blacksailing, some additional material of this kind is usually evaluable which is used if the first method of recruiting fails. If the candidate still persists in his refusel to work for the MAVD, he must sign a promise of keeping silence about the aegotiations and then he is recorded as an "antagonist", thus being put in the same level with eppositionists and sectorious. The refusal of work for the MEVD is usually followed, some time later, by the arrest of the unyielding candidate.

There are cases when agents that have been recruited, either commit suicide: or perform some other desperate deeds. So, for example, in 1957 L.Krasotina, relative of late Pobedo-Rostsov, the former attorney general of the Soly Synod, took

poison in Moscow, after having signed her consent to work as an agent of "internal observation", i.e. for spying against her elesest relatives. In 1941 a Hungarian girl K. threw herself cut of the window of her lodging after having given her consent to work against her fisnes. Such tragedies occur for the most part when a certain person is recruited to work inside his or her own family. Both these cases, mentioned above, were threshed out on the operative conferences of NKVD divisions, and the Chekista who actually carried out the recruiting in these cases, were dissisted and sent to some less responsible work — as punishment for "went of skill in recruiting" but not as murderers of two innecent human beings. As far as it is known, the operative workers are always punished in some way for failure at the recruiting.

Curiously enough, according to the MAVL materials, the most difficult categories for recruiting consist of former social-newolutionaries (Me-er), Mensheviks and churchmen. The most easy task is considered in the MEVD to recruit agents out of the number of Trotskyists and Rightists.

while being recruited, the candidate has to sign his consent, and, if he is supposed to be an agent, he is immediately asked to give his first material. Secret informers are gradually introduced into the course of their future activity. At first, their contributions are limited to the information bearing general character, and only after some time they receive definite and concrete tasks. But there are no firm rules in this respect, and in every separate case the operative worker himself must find individual ways of approaching agents and secret informers of his team as he thinks to best.

Special registration eards are filled in for every recruited person and forwarded to the 1st Special Division of the corresponding regional SEVD-MGB administration and to the 1st Sector of the 1st Special Division of the sector, in Mescow. The 1st Special Division of the NEVD-MGB regional administration sends a numerated case for the agent or secret informer which is

further carried on under a special encaynous sobriquet as "Bol-shevik", "Mester", "Fighter", "Ivan" etc. All "Agenturnya resre-botka's" (agent elaboration) and "Service-list cases" are also conducted under sobriquets.

Hark with Acres to

As a rule, operative workers of the MKVD are in "direct contact only with residents and agents (of all three estegories). The work with ordinary secret informers and "secret informers for lodgings" is usually carried on by the residents. But also here no general rules can be applied, and from time to time the operative workers who are on the staff of the MKVD-MGB, see themselves the secret informers (usually in the presence of the resident, to whose team they belong).

The operative worker gives regular instructions to his residents according to his own materials as well as in conformance with requirements of the higher quarters. All operative workers have weekly time-tables for meeting agents, and they are obliged to give a copy of such a time-table to the chief of their section or branch, so that he may know where (in which conspirational quarters) his subordinates are at a certain moment. From time to time the chiefs of the branches have to see agents together with their operative workers in order to control them.

The residents meet their mass net-work of secret informers usually semewhere near their places of work or residence, but here is also no general rule, everything depending on local conditions. But this is always done according to a shedule the copy of which is being sent to the operative worker who may sometimes control such meetings.

The encounters with the agents are arranged in the comspiratorial lodgings or, depending on the circumstances, in various places: in the streets, in squares and gardens, out of town etc.

The MKVD premises may be used only for seeing residences (rather infrequently) or "itinerant sgents". The latter denomination is used for a special group of sgents employed by the Secret-Political edministration of the MKVD. This group is being recruited from a certain "tint" and is supposed to travel in the domain of their "tint", such agents are usually informed by phone that they must visit a certain person, and then the encounter is arranged in some of the MKVD quarters. But even in these cases the encounters do not take place in the very premises of the MKVD regional edministration, but in some less conspicious, though subordinate to that administration, place.

The general principle of poviet sork with agents any be expressed in few words - "No stone must be left unturned to achieve the sim". Any lies, any provocations may be used for recruiting agents, and any crimes may be staged for the same purpose. All this is called in the wave alang "agenturnays southmetalys" (agenturnays southmetalys" (agent work combination) and is called on according to approved plans. It is also the principal subject in the course of training skyll officials in special achools - in the realist wave school in Moscow, in inter-regional MAYL schools in afficient cities of the Soviet Union and in the Higher school for morder suggest added in Agencow.

fact that the theme concerning and a gents was forked out in connection with the work of the 1st apecial Division therefore as this problem is common for all divisions and administrations of the Gudb MkVD Usake All operative work work with agents, including recruiting and training, is carried out by the operative organs of the MkVD-adB, while the 1st Special Division is only concerned with the operative-statistical recording of agents and supplies the feedback Commissar (now Minister of State Decurity) or the Chief of the MkVD-adB administration it belongs to with operative-statistical information of all kind. It may also give similar information to other MkVD agencies and to the

- 80 -

Party, but only according to the indications of the secreterist of the HKYD Poople's Commissar or the Chief of the MKYD regional edministration this particular 1st Special Divisions belongs to, and only in the wording wished by the above mentioned HKYD insibutions. The same order was preserved when the GUGS HKYD was transformed into the Ministry of State Security.

CHAPTER Y

OF THE GUGS SEVEN USSE

Diegree He 9

The activities of all organs of the State Security of the USER, or, strictly speaking, their operative work with agents, is based, upon the whole, on four principal foundations, mentioned below according to their succession:

- 1. Operative recording:
- 2. Agents;
- 3. Operative technique,
- 4. Inquest.

MGB system supporting the entire practical work of its operative agencies or "organs" (using the Chekist terminology). The operative recording gives a full, manifold and detailed picture of how and where the real or potential centers of resistance to the Communist dictatorship are disposed throughout the country. An intricated and manifold network of agents, that knows no bounds in attaining its purpose, gives full possibility of locating beforehand the centers of such a future resistance, defining its forms, and exposing its participators and possible leaders. The organisation and functions of these two first elements of the doviet state security have been discussed in the previous chapter in connection with the analysis of the structure of the lat Special Division of the GUGB MEVO USAR.

The inquest is the final stage of the whole complicated work, performed by the organs of state security of the UMSE, and will be discussed in the following chapters of this manuscript.

As to the operative technique of the HKYD, it is a system, not less intricated and manifold than the operative recording

"operative technique", applied to the MEVD-MGS, only if one takes into consideration that the Stalinist distatorship is the only and exclusive master of all material and technical resources of this vast country and that the ergans, securing the safety of this distatorship and preventing the outbursts of hatered of the enclaved people, may at any time use any of these unlimited material and technical resources. The MEWD may also fully dispose of such extensive technical mema, and has in its hands such an elaborate and complicated apparatus for making the most of them, that the punitive organs of all other countries cannot even dress of snything like it.

From the operative point of view, the whole of this diverse and exceedingly intricate apparatus, including various technical means, is the concern of the 2nd Special Division of the GUGB MKVD (now MGB) and of its subdivisions in all republican, regional and area administration of the MKVD-MGB.

Formerly the functions of the 2nd Special Division comprised also the protection of the Bolshvist leaders and this task was entrusted to the 1st subdivision of the 2nd Special Division. But by the end of the thirties this subdivision was reorganised into the so-called 1st Division of the GUGS MKVD, the structure and functions of which will be discussed in Chepter 7. however, as regards the operative functions, the 1st Division is still closely connected with the 2nd Special Division, and their fields of operation are so interlink? especially in Moscow, that in many cases it is difficult to draw a line of demarcation between them. The importance of the 2nd Special Division is revealed by the fact that in the period of the "Great Purge" it was headed by Kruglev, who escupied the post of the 2nd Deputy to the People's Commisser of Internal Affairs of the USER after the war.

The operative or special technique which is the consern of the 2nd Special Division of the GUGB MEVD is usually denominated in MEVD-MGB documents as "letter" ("litera"). The most important of such "letters" are :

- MI ("narushneye nablindenie") external observation:
- I photography;
- M membrane control of the telephone network;
- E eavesdropping, i.e. listening in by means of special devices and microphones;
- PK ("perliustratais korrespondentail") consoring of letters;
- P ("pelengetsiye") control, search and location of illegal radio receiving and transmitting sets;
- Sh ("shifrevenie") ciphering;
- RSh ("reschifrovke") deciphering.

Sections and subdivisions that are conserned with all these branches of operative and special technique, are usually denominated by the abbreviations, mentioned above, while letter "L" (abbreviation from the word "litera" - letter) is added to them. Thus, for example, a subdivision, conserned with consoring of letters, is named "L-PK". Each of these subdivisions is, if it pensible to say so, something like a trust, comprising a series of very sumbersome and therefore nearly independent industrial objects.

Let us take a closer view of some of these "letters".

"L-SN" - External Observation or Sutside Surveillance.

The task of this service is the securing of an all-day-round, constant and persistent observation of all persons who are at this period of time "elaborated" by the MEVD. In Moscow this is the sensern of the 2nd Special Division of the MEVD People's Commisserist, in province - of the 2nd Special Divisions of MEVD regional and area administrations, in the aspitals of Union Republics - of the 2nd Special Divisions of republican MEVD-MGB. For this purpose a special brigade of agents of external observation is exceeded for trailing after every "figurent". A car, a notor syste if necessary, is assigned to this brigade, and it is equipped with technical means, needed in every concrete case. The observa-

Bien

is extended not only upon the "figurent" biaself, but upon all persons he may meet and speak to in the streets or in public places. According to the Chekist terminology this is called the "setting of the figurent's connections" ("ustanovka sviszel figurents").

The "setting" means that every person, whom the "figurent" greats or addresses, is followed by an exect - member of the brim gade, whose task is to establish the identity of this person, his place of residence, his profession and place of work. In the Chem kist slang it is calle "to bring the connection up to howe". Then the egent makes a short report about the results of his observations, and this report is called the "setting". Later on, such a "setting" is forwarded to the 2nd sector of the 1st special Livi... sion where it has to be checked whether this person has been spencially recorded and what is his "tint". If the answer is a positive one, these date are copied in the "setting", which is then filed with the "figurent's" case. But even if such a "setting" does not provide any compromising material, nevertheless it is filled for the purpose of "mounting" in case of need. The usual proceedings are as follows: by the end of the day the have-man, heading the brigade, compiles a "summary of external observation of the figurant", fixing to it all "settings" with dets obtained after the checking up with the 1st Special Division. An agent on duty (in especially important cases there may be several amounts) is posted near the dwelling of the "figurent". This egent has to spy on all persons, coming in and out, and make "settings" for them.

Besides "figurant" the external observation invaliably extends upon all foreigners.

Service "L-AN" does not include spying after the "figurent" at his places of residence and of work as well as in the quarters of his friends. This is the tesk of a network of secret informers or egents belonging to the tesm of the operative NKVD official or resident who is concerned with the "elaboration" of this

"figurant". "L-MA" ("narumhka" in the Chekist slang) is not even informed about the essential part of the case of the person under their constant observation. Usually the activity of the brigade is directed by the operative MKVD official who is entrusted with the "elaboration" of the "figurant" in quention. But if the "figurant" is a foreigner or same from some other town, the whole work of observation is performed by the "L-MM" subdivision, and only the results of the work are reported to a certain MAVD division or administration.

It is very difficult, and may be even impossible, for a simple mortal to imagine the scope of work of the "h-da", for instance, in Moscow. This "Moscow MM" means, that many hundreds of "figurants" of different "elaborations" are secretly watched day and night, while this secret observation is entrusted to a brigade of j-4, and sometimes more, persons in each case. Mesides, posts of external observation are needed for watching several dozens, and sometimes hundreds, of conspicuous "figurants", coming to Moscow on their business. These "figurants" are being "elaborated" by different regional administrations and republican MKVD reople's Commissariats, who often notify the 2nd "pecial livision about the necessity of watching certain "figurant" just on the day of his arrival to Moscow.

But that is not all a according to a special instruction of the MKVL People's Commissar, a constant external observation has to be carried on every member of foreign missions, embassies, consulates, all military attaches and their employees, all foreigners coming from abroad, and especially all correspondents of telegraphic agencies and foreign newspapers. It seems that foreign tourists give the least trouble to the organs of "L-MM" as they are always following established routs and are invariably accompanied by an Interpreter who is always in an eyent or even an official on staff of the organs of state accurity. At any rate, the special section of the Intourist, and not the "L-MM", is responsible for the behaviour of foreign tourists and for their intercourse with Soviet citizens in the atreets and public places.

But some foreigners give a lot of trouble to the 2nd Special Division.

Ho. for example, before the war the secretary of the Japanese military attache, a certain Kembo Sasaki, was in the habit of going for a quotidien walk. Evening was his favourite time for this purpose, and he usually fellowed the same route - down the Okhotay Ried and along the Gorky Street to the rushkin monument in the boulevert Ring. He used to have an unlit digerette in his teeth and asked every man he met for light. Thus he aduresued 30-40 persons during his walk, besides he came up to different stalls, flower girls etc., and everywhere entered into short comversations. It is difficult to imagine how many exents were needed to compile a "setting" for everyone he had talked to. Summary of external observation of this waseki alone included daily up to 50-60 "settings", checked up with special records. It was well known in the center that it was sheer mockery from the part of Sasaki who tried his best to give as much trouble to the MAYD as possible, but nevertheless the external observation of paneki persisted in the same scope.

Germans, as well as representatives of the neighbouring countries of the kestern kurope, did not give too such trouble, but the Americans were at first a true plague for the "L-MM". Usually, having not the slightest notion about the real state of things in the poviet Union, and enjoying full liberty back at home, . the Americans strived to preserve all their habits in Moscow and persistently tried to study the life of the Soviet Union applying the same methods that were habitual for the study of all other countries. They visited all public places, were in a hurry to make private acquaintances, and deaks of the recyle's Commissariat of Foreign Affairs were piled with their applications to get the permission of travelling all over the Soviet Union. Not texing into consideration all other reasons, this peculiarity of Americans. that encoyed the MKVD so such, could be explained by the fact that the USA established the diplomatic relations with the Ubik nearly 15 years later than all other great powers, and the American

representatives tried to get into "contact" with Soviet citimens directly at the time when the main point of the MEYD, activity was just to cut off any connections between the Soviet population and the foreigners.

It was not easy for the "L-MA" to headle William C. Bellitt. the first ambassedor of the USA in Moseow (1933-1930). He was very fond of sports and eften attended the "Byname" stadium where he tried to make acquaintenses with Soviet sportsmen. By the way: Mr. Bullitt was the first who taught Boviet officers to play pele. Thus, taking into consideration such habits of the American ambassador, a special intensified brigade of the external observation was required, and several dozens of "settings" more compiled every day. To make the work of the AKVD easier two special agents were attached to Mr. Bullitt : a record runner and a ten's player that has represented the USSE at international games in France, an exceedingly slender woman whose good figure attracted general attention. But the combination with the tennis player did not pass. then the winter came, Mr. Bullitt started skiing out of tom, and this drove to dispair agents, attached to mis, who could not asi well. At the time he, like other americans, sum often discussed by the NKVD men, for there were piles of MH "settings", trying to fix his connections. The MEVD could breathe freely only when Mr. Bullitt "niboled" at an attractive beit - the renowned ballet dencer Lepeshinskeys, sgent of the 2nd Special Division, purposedly sent on a secret message, and spent all his free time exclusively in her company.

Besides all the above mentioned objects, the external observation is carried on for all agents of the Foreign Administration of the HAVD and of the Intelligence Administration of the General Staff of the Soviet army, during their stay in the USBR. Many of the Comintern workers were exposed to such a control observation, which is periodically extended even on the NKVD-MUB men, to check their behaviour and their connections.

all these various tasks explain the fact that only is Moscow there are many thousands of "i-MH" agents. An exception in all ether countries of the world, this extensive "external observations" is a daily practice in the USSR, the usual routine of the "i-MH" section of the 2nd Special Division of the MKVD-MGB.

"i-I" - Photographing

Letter "F" comprises not only the photographing of objects and persons, but also the preparation of photostat copies of documents, drafts, projects and even complete books. Microphotography and photosounting, i.e. preparation of one photure out of several ones, are also within the province of this branch, supplying first-rate "proofs" for lawsuits, recruiting of agents etc.

A classical example of applying such forged photographs is the well-known action against the "Industrial Party" ("Prompartiya) in 1930, when, during the lawsuit, "secret instructions" of the French 2nd Bureau, mounted from the documents dating back to the period of the First World sar, were produced. As another colourful example of applying such "proofs" in the Usba may serve a widespread trick of producing to the accused, denying his acquaintance, let us say, with some leader of the antistalinist opposition in the Communist Party, a photomounting, on which he is represented conferring with Trotaky or Bucharin.

The team of the "L-F" includes also a special sub-unit, the printing one, that is sole to prepare any certificate or vise in any language, with any stamps or signs. So, for example, during the reception of molotov in the British House of Commons, in 1942, the galleries for guests were inveced by street dritish communists, who used cards that had been forged in moscow for the purpose of entering the House. The same team may forge any technical draft or calculation in an extraordinarily short time.

Let us again turn to examples: once, in summer 1,37, an agent of the Secret Intelligence administration of the People's Commissariat of Defense, who was at the same time employed on the staff of the Japanese military attache in Moscow, informed his administration about the necessity of an urgent interview. The

latter took place in the same evening, approximately at 22.00 in the neighbourhood of the Timiryesev Agricultural Academy. During the interview the agent stated that the assistant of the military attache had just received a percel with the following stamps all-Union Communist Party (bolsheviks), Central Committee, Milk-tary Departments, and locked it in his safe. The agent was ordered to bring this parcel. Approximately at 1 c.m., a second interview took place and the agent handed the parcel to the efficial of Intelligence administration.

Some 20 minutes later the percel was pessed to the 2nd upecial Division of the MEVD for an urgent preparation of forged docusents to be returned to: the sale of the Japanese stracks. At 6.30 in the morning, at a third interview, the agent received the percel back, and did not even suspect that he got a copy, suich had been considerably changed in comparison with the original. This forged copy was passed off for the use of the attache. The envelope contained some ten documents, including 3 drafts, which had been approved by the rusple's Commisser for Defense Industry, the deputy People's Commisser for Defence, and by the Chief of the Military Department of the Central Farty Committee. The matter was in the switching of a giant plant on the production of a new type of the anti-eirefft guns. Forged calculations and drafts were prepared for the desinformation of the attache. The signatures were made so well that they did not call out any suspicions, but in the case of a graphological analysis they would not be identical and the document would be considered as a sample of forgery, made by the foreigners.

By the by, it has to be mentioned to the credit of the Japanese Intelligence Service, that the military attache get into the personales of the documents only one hour and a half later than the director of the plant, who received them personally from the meretary of the Military Department and acknowledged their receipt with his signature.

The "L-F" functions include also copying and changing of let-

accounts etc. For instance, a letter from a certian Prof. Eluchalkoy was sent to the address of his asquaintense, a lawyer dolchanovsky, employed in the People'sCommissarist for Foreign Affairs, who was at that time being "elaborated" as a conspicuous "figurant". In this letter Kolchenovsky was invited to call on the professor and pick the book he was in need of. This letter was intercepted at the post-office by a "L-FX" eyent and forwarded to the "F" branch where it was changed and then posted again. This time the letter requested the "figurest" to take an inglish book from the library of the People's Commissariat for Foreign Affairs and give it to Kluchnikov's domestic worker, who would come a ecially for this purpose from the summer cottage of the professer. Two days later Kolchenovsky was summoned to the MAVI where he was told that a secret document of the Commissariat, employing him, was found in the book which he sent to the professor. This document was even shown to the penic-stricken Kolchanovsky, and soon thereafter he was recruited as a NKVD informer and gave detailed statements about his business conversations with boviet Foreign Commisser Mexim Litvinov and his deputy Karakhan, both of when were also under secret "elaboration" of the Secret-Political administration of the MEVD.

Such forgeries do not exberses in the least the postiffs of the Soviet "justice", and are systematically studied in all MAVD schools as examples of "eperative work combinations".

"L-PK" - Censoring of Letters. The scope of work of this branch is so extensive that it is impossible to give a detailed description of its functions. Covering themselves with the formal garantee of inviolability of private correspondence, stated in the "Stalinist Constitution", the "L-PK" agents constantly open, read and even make photographs of the correspondence of the devict eitisens with their relatives or friends abroad, as well as of the whole correspondence of those estegories or "tists" of the population which are being "elaborated" by the organs of the State Speurity at this period of time. In the course of mass purges and

repressions or at some particular moments of international or internal tension, the "L-PK" agents read all letters in the USLE.

All major post-offices (up to the district ones) have special officials who are censoring the correspondence. But the post-office chiefs are not aware of this fact, at least not officially. Usually it is done in such a way : the chief of the special branch "recommends" to the head of the Regional Administration of Post and Telegraph to appoint made "Courade 1." as a telegraphist or se a clerk to a certain post-office. This man appears before his new chief showing simply a paper from the provincial office of Post and Telegraph. For some time he carries on the usual work of an ordinary clerk and is completely subordinate to the chief of the post-office. Then he is instructed to get into contact with a certain group of employees of this post-office, and proceeds to his special tasks, not reporting about them to the chief of the postoffice. Usually this work is entrusted to letter-carriers, employees sorting out the correspondence or taking the letters out of the letter-boxes.

Copies of the letters that are characteristic in any way are forwarded to the district section of the MAYD, and in provincial effices - to the chief of the 2nd Special Division of the MAYD administration for this region. Depending on the "general line" of the Party and on the MAYD instructions, the utaust attention may be paid to "alien elements", to pursons connected with different kinds of epposition, to "corrupt elements" in the army etc

In the army this system is completed in such a way that every military unit has its own letter-box, and all soldiers and junior officers are obliged to use it for mailing their letters (office-ally it is done to have the letters posted free of charge). All these letters are read by the efficials of the MKVD Special Section ("Osobiy Otdel") or of the political section of the military unit. During the war such a system ascounted for the fact that a letter sent through the field post at Palkeve (five miles from Lemingred) reached the addressee in Lemingred only in ten days.

All correspondence of "figurents" of special "claborations" is under a constant control of "L-PE", and summaries of this sent-rol are being separately forwarded to the 2nd Special Division. The "L-PE" team sometimes includes special agents, controlling the work of the "L-PE" man. These agents belong to the group "ap/ag" - special agents - and are specially paid. Ordinary "L-PE" men usually work as secret informers, i.e. without pay, but from time to time they may get some rewards.

conscrehip without informing the eniefs of the post-offices, the letters in the USER often disappear or reach the addressess with a considerable delay. This system erestes most favourable conditions for abuses on the part of post officials, with an obvious purpose of facilitating the work of "L-PK" agents, long before the war in the USER an obligatory rule was introduced that the address of the sender had to be written on the obverse side of the envelope. In all telegrams the address of the sender had to be inveriably mentioned.

rolling the telephone conversations. The center of its activity in Moscow is the special section of the central telephone station, in the capitals of the Union Republics and in regional centers - special sections of local telephone exchanges.

most popular means of the "eleborations". Usually the number of the "figurent" is taken for control, and any call, even from the submatic telephones, is easily checked up. The number of the phase is submatically recorded after the conversation by means of the operative technique "H", and therfore the "H" summary always shows on which telephone the sall was made and where this telephone is situated, if the call was made from a booth with entenatic telephone. There is nothing new in such a method, and it is regularly applied by the police agencies of other countries, but there, in the time of peace, it is used only for the expesition

and seisure of particularly desperous criminal offenders, while in the USSR it is a constant and exceedingly ramiform. System for assisting the Party in its daily struggle with all elements of apposition in the country.

The operative technique "M" is particularly eften applied for the "elaboration" of prominent "figurants", as the bureaucratic circles of the Soviet Union make a broad use of the telephone network. The Soviet people knew very well that the telephone conversations are tapped, and therefore they get accusteded to use a code for their telephone calls. But exactly this codified character of the simplest telephone conversations is necessary for the NKVD, being just the proper thing for the "elaborations", blackmailing and bringing charges, sometimes of a phantestic and improbable nature.

The case of the former head of the Central Council of "Osoaviakhim" (the semi-miliraty organization for development of earial and chemical defence of the Soviet Unden) General R.P. Mideman, who was executed together with Marshal Tukhachevsky in 1937, may serve as a characteristic example of the work of "L-M" branch. It was known in the circles of the leading MKVD efficials that at the moment when the Tukhachevsky plot had been exposed, so compromising material was available for Eideman who had only ander some suspicions. Rideman was a close friend of General Kork, the Commanding Officer of the Frunse Military Acedeny, who was also executed later on for having been involved in ... the Tukhashevsky plot. The following trick was used to expose Eldemen : on NETD agent rong him up through a local telephone exchange of the "" branch, and, calling himself Kork, "warned" him of the impending denger of an immediate errest. An MKYD man was selected for this conversation, whose voice had exactly the same timbre as that of Kork. The well infermed MEVD efficiels mentioned afterwards that Eldemen took immediate steps to disappear and was arrested at the assent when he was ready to get into his car.

Division of the GUGB Sacharev who was present at the inquest of Eldenan, told his intimate friends that Eldenan immediately started to make confessions after having been directly asked where he wanted to flee and what were the reasons for his flight. Then Eldenan gave an evesive enswer, probably to gain time, he was essed without beating around the bush : did he receive a warning about an impending arrest? When Eldenan answered in the negative, the investigator declared that he was lying, that the apparatus of the control telephone station was used for this communication and that he spoke with a EKVD man and not with Kork.

Then Eidemen confessed that such a conversation had really taken place, and that having been warned he decided to flee, but did not know where. After that he was questioned about the reason of his denying the call and the warning (all persons, examined in the MKVD, have to sign all their enswers without any delay) and he had to explain, why he, a person without any sense ofguilt, decided to leave his summer cottage near Moscow and to flee not knowing where?

Thus, such a measure provided the investigator with concrete material, and on its base, one hour later, dideman gave detailed depositions; still later, the same bideman convicted others, including Kork, at the cross-examinations.

The listening-in of telephone conversations is called "passive measures" in the instruction about the operative technique "M". But the "M" tasks of the 2nd opecial Division include also the column "active measures" where following steps are enumerated: "to cut off the conversation", or "in case of a conversation about some appointment to make it one hour later, urgently notifying the section ..." or "to switch off the telephone from... till..." etc.

Besides "figurents" the "i-M" constantly taps the following estegories of stajects :

- a) foreign embassies and consulates;
- b) private telephones of all foreigners,

- e) all telephones of such hotels as "Messew", "Metropel" and "Sevey":
- d) all telephones of People's Commisseriats of Foreign Affairs, of Defence, of External Trade and of the Executive Committee of the Communist International (Commisser).

"Kremlin Automatic Telephone Exchange" (or "whirligig" in the Chekist slang), the "i-M" control describe extends with only very few of the highest leaders of the USER. They are put on the list by Stelin himself and the list is forwarded through the Special Sector of the Central Party Committee. This sector is supervised by the member of the ORGburo Shkisystov.

branch comprise sending of eighered radiograms from the central MEVD administrations in Moscow to every corner of the Moviet Union, receiving of such ciphered radiograms from local MEVD agencies, discovering the presence of underground radio-stations on the USEE territory and locating them, as well as muffling of all undesirable broadcasts what ever their origin may be.

The section "L-P" has its own redio-stations and radio loomtion posts as well as other devices for sarrying out these various and complicated tasks. Before the war the Central MAYD radiostation was located in the hamlet Monine near Mosesw, but in Ostober 1941, when the German troops draw nearer to the Soviet capital, it was partly evacuated and partly destroyed by the desclition detechments of the MAYD. The authors of this manuscript are not informed about the location of this radio-station after the war.

Already before the war, the functions of the "i-i" acquired much a scope that it became accessary to bring into effect a fundamental reorganization of the whole branch.

So, for instance, the new functions of the "L-P" included the propagands brooksate in foreign languages which were received and re-brooksated further through secret redic-stations of local Communist parties. A great stress was put on this work in relation to the Latin-American countries (Cuba, the region of the Panama Channel, Brazil, Chile etc.). The habitual time for such broadcasts was the period from 1 a.m. till 5 a.m. (Moscow time). The so-celled "white spots" appeared for that period in the regular broadcasting program of the Moscow radio-committee, and mothing was officially known about these "spets".

The using of the short-wave stations of the USSE for current instructing of the foreign agents of the Foreign EKVD Administration, the Intelligence Administration of the General Staff, and the Communist International (now Cominform) is another function of the "L-P" branch. Usually a code is used for such transmissions Anyhow, in a series of cases - for example, instructions to the Spanish guerills in Asturia in 1939-41 (and now, undoubtedly, to the Greek generals), - such broadcasts wer made openly, but, of course, in the name of the Central Committee of the corresponding Communist party. So, for instance, it is known, that the order for the dismissal of Harry Pollitt (British Communist party) in as result of his tactical error at the moment of the declarathen of the war, came through radio directly from Moscow.

The information intended for the agents is usually received by the ciphering branch of the Soviet embassy of of the Soviet conservable representation with the help of "PPBh-38" radio set, and is transmitted further in the same way, i.e. to the receiver of the agent, which has, as a rule, only one wave for transmissions, thus making possible the control of the setting from some other point.

The scope of work for deciphering or simply for tapping of foreign broadcasts and radio-telephone communications was also increased in an unusual way. Already before the war, a special section for recording the radio-telphone communications between the Foreign Departments of London and dashington was organized in the "L-P" branch. There are also some evidences that the first successful attempts to intercept the transatlantic talks between Churchill and Roosevelt took place in 1940.

Finally, the "L-P" was transferred into a huge erganisation with international staff of workers. These were mostly members of foreign Communist parties who were went to Moseow in the result of a secret mobilisation which was personally performed by the secretaries of the Communist parties abroad. The old premises in the Malaya Labyanks Street were too small for this department, and in 1941 it was transferred into a spacious building in Lenin Hills by Moseow. The whole central Comintern apparatus had been transferred there from the Sepeshkov Square somewhat earlier, in 1940. As to its erganisation, the "L-P" still belonged to the MEVD system but practically it was subordinated to the Special Sector of the All-Union Communist party Central Committee.

"Lab". The work of this branch consists in overheaving the conversations in different premises with the help of special devices. The central Moscow hotels are the principal field of operations of this branch, for they usually give shelter to foreigners and most prominent party men, coming to Moscow from the provinces.

The most habitual method of listening-in is the installation of special membranes-dictophones into the switches, ventilators, clocks, table legs etc. Hidden wires go from these membranes through the intensifying sub-stations to the Control center (in Malaya Lubyanka Street 7).

The "L-E" branch pays even more attention to the buildings of foreign embassies, missions, consulates and different commercial and cultural representations. But this portion of work belongs first of all to the field of operations of the MEVD Foreign and Counter-Intelligence Administrations and will be discussed in more details in the corresponding chapters of this maning book.

Such are the manifold and intricate functions of the 2nd Special Division of the GUGS MEVD USSR. The specific features of its work secount for the fast, that each of its branches has a considerable independence and the Chief of the Division only co-ordinates the functioning of different kinds of operative technique. Like the 1st Special Division it does not perform any

eperative work of its our and is intended to assist all operative divisions and administrations of the NKVD wherever such an assistance might be needed. This is true for Moscow and for all NKVD regional administrations, each of which has its own 2nd Special Division, subordinated to its territorial NKVD administration and to the 2nd Special Division of the Moscow NKVD headquarters:

pretection of leaders, but some years before the world for II this task went ever to the newly created 1st Division of the GUGB. The 1st Division of the MKVD USSR exists only in Mostow, and the protection of all provincial leaders is still entrusted to the 2nd Special Division, or, to be more exact, to its "L-MM" branch.

The majority of the workers of the 2nd Special Divizates are the MKVD staff officials and they message are on the MKVD pay-rell. This division usually hires "special sgents" for the needs of operative MKVD divisions and administrations - thieves, burglars, pick-pockets, specialits in kicking up a row in the street, and other criminals.

The abundance of technical devices in this division and their complexity accounts for the fact that this branch is one of the most expensive in the RKVD system. According to some data the "technique" absorbs up to 50% of official budget appropriations for the RKVD needs.

The organization of the 2nd Special Division is shown on the diagram No 9.

SEE HE

CHAPTER VI

THE INCURSE DIVISION OF THE CUCH MAYD USER

60

Diegree No 10

It has already been mentioned above that the work of the MKVD organs is besed on four principal foundations: operative recording, agents, operative technique and inquest. To avoid a gap in the unity of exposition, we place the analysis of structure and principles of work of the MKVD inquest organs immediately after the analysis of atructure and functions of the 1st and 2nd Special Division and previously to the study of the activity and atructure of purely operative agencies of the MKVD.

Pirst of all, let us call to our mind that by a normal legal procedure the inquest is the preliminary stage for the exposure of the circumstances of the crime and for the establishment of the identity of persons who might have possibly committed it. and the conclusions of the investigator are in no way obligator; for the decision of the court. The investigator cannot take part in the proceedings of the court or influence them in any way. The body of the crime has to be irrefutably proved, and only under this condition the verdiet of guilty may be passed. Furthermore, the court cannot be influenced only by indirect proofs and evidences when passing in a verdict. An inward conviction of the jury that the escused really committed a certain crime, not substantiated by any preofs, cannot be a reason, sufficient for passing a sentence. These elementary raise of legal procedure are obligatory for judicial organs of normal countries but not for those of the Soviet Union.

In order to understand the role of Soviet inquest organs and notheds of their work, it is necessary to dwell upon the principles of judicial proofs in the Soviet law. The nost detailed consideration of this problem is found in the book of the

fermer Attorney General of the USSR, new Minister of Foreign Affairs A.I. Vishinsky "Sheery of Judicial Proofs in the Soviet Les"
(first edition - Moscow, 1941; second - 1946). Vishinsky was
everded the Stalin premium of the first grade (200,000 rubles)
end the title of the regular member of the Academy of Sciences
of the USSR for this work. This book served also as an initial
point for the compilation of new ariminal and civil sodes of the
USER (this work was begun in 1947). Vishinsky does not set out
any new standards or regulations in his work, but he lays down in
very plain and precise terms the fundamental regulations of the
Seviet legal procedure already used in practice.

These fundamental regulations may be briefly fermulated as follows:

- 1. The Soviet jurisprudence is permeated by party-spirit and is based upon the Mixist- Leninist methodology.
- 2. The Soviet state (i.e. the Communist party) is the begetter of the Soviet court which is flesh and blood of the new Socialist society.
- 5. The inward conviction of the Soviet judges is connected with their socialist interpretation of the law, with their communist conception of law based upon the social-political world outlook of the working class. The sentence passed by the court is based upon this conviction of the judges, but this conviction has to be persuasive being supported by the Marxist-Leninist principles of the Soviet juridical science.
- 4. If there is a lack of direct proofs or if they are insufficient to state the body of the crime, the decisions of the Soviet court may be based upon indirect proofs or evidences.

These four regulations make the Seviet court a simple tool of the ruling party, one of the organs of the Stalinist distatorable. The Seviet court may condom a person even if the direct proofs of his guilt are lacking - and this is its principal peculiarity. Analyzing numerous facts, purposedly selected out of practice of Seviet courts, Vishinsky rather cynically states that if the indirect proofs are applied correctly, the court-

exemination may be absolutely reliable and the results, thus ash neved - veritable and persuasive. This statement of Vishinaky is nothing but an attempt to lay a theoretical foundation for iniquity and slub-law of the MEVD-MGB "judicial boards", "special councils" and "troikes".

In the Seviet Union the system of public legal procedures with their pleadings, debates, with leaving the secused the right
of defending himself, with sitution of witnesses etc. - is phetieally reserved only for "People's Court" ("Marsud") that considers
only criminal offences, unimportant misdemeanours or litigations,
and controversies between separate citisens or institutions. At
the trials of these insignificant offenders the Soviet courts adher to the usual standards of legal procedure, and this enables
the Soviet government and its numerous naive or dishonest friends
abroad to demonstrate the fairness, legality and even democratic
character of Soviet justice.

However, in all cases when the Soviet government itself or the Communist party plays the role of the accuser - and this happens in the absolute majority of cases and leads to the most drastic sentences, - this nermal standard of legal procedure is not followed, the trial takes place behind closed doors, even without the accused and his defenders, and is practically reduced to the approval of accusing materials or "notices", that had been prepered by the investigator beforehend. We have already dwelt on . this procedure when we mentioned the Special Council attached to the People's Commisser of the NEVD. This kind of "triel" is nothing but mockery at all norms of legal procedure and at the very conception of justice. But mesely this was the practice of condensing millions of innocent citisens of the Soviet Union to execution, long years of imprisonment or departation. In all these dames special HEVD-MGS "courts" have passed their verdicts on the bests of indirect proofs, so in majority of such cases the MEVD investigators are usually unable to discover any direct proofs of the "guilt".

When the setions of the EETD-mes follow the line of a now compaign of political terror proclaimed by the Polithure, and

this is mostly the ease, - the inquest is not the preliminary but the final stage of the court-exemination (if we can apply this name to the procedure, habitual in the USSR), and it concludes the process, that had its beginning in the operative recording and the so-called "elaboration of the figurant". The "notice" submitted by the investigator to the judgement of the "special board" usually encloses not only the material, provided by the inquest itself, but also the indictment and a suggestion as to the punitive measure, in the form of a certain paragraph of the Criminal Code of the ABFER or some other Union Republic. The work of the "Special Council" usually consists only in approving of the investigator's conclusions or in the selection of some other clause of the Criminal-Political Gode with the corresponding changes in the punitive measures. The "legal procedure" of the "troiks" is even more simplified (See chapter "Regional Organs of the UKVD").

Usually, in the practice of the MAVD work the operative part is not separated from the inquest (especially at the periods of political campaigns and purges). One end the same MAVD operative worker begins the elaboration of the case, i.e. organizes the trailing after the "figurent", collects preliminary data and is very often charged with detaining of this person and making a search of his lodgings. After the arrest of the "figurent" or of a group of persons involved in the same case, the operative worker is temporarily transferred to the inquest department, he personally makes the examination and, having completed the investigation, he reports on the case to the corresponding MAVD court. He ving completed and closed the case, the operative worker returns again to his operative unit. This may be illustrated by the following example:

£ .

The operative recording of the 1st Special Division descloses a group of terrist officers, noblemen and other "have beens" among the lecturers and prefessors of the Leningrad university.

The "elaboration" of this group is entrusted to the operative

agent-representative of the secret-political division of the Leningred MEVD regional administration. We organizes the trailing, fixes the network of agents, succeeds in his efforts to secure the expulsion from the party of all persons who "wriggled" into the renks of the Party, and finally arrests them as "enemies of the people".

Having completed all these preliminary stages, he is transferred to the inquest division of the Leningrad MAVD regional administration and starts to obtain from the arrestees such "confessions" of the crimes which seem to him to be the most suitable ones in this case. Having completed the investigation, he compiles a "reference notice" ("sprayks") which is ennounced at the meeting of the "troiks" of the Leningrad MKVD regional administration. Thereafter the case is considered to be closed, and the operative worker in question is again returned to his permanent work in the secret-political division. If the case is brought before the "special Council", this operative agant-representative, having compiled a "notice" and the indictment, leaves for Moscow and personally reports his material at a meeting of the "Special Council" of the MKVD USCR.

Such an order of carrying on the investigation is especially favourable for the inequity, club-law and fabrication of false cases and forged accusations, as the operative agent-representative carrying on the lawsuit, is pursonally interested in condensing persons whom he has been "elaborating". This is a kind of a chain reaction and the only possible result is the conviction of all suspected persons.

Procticelly, a person is convicted already at the moment when his name appears on the registration card of the 1st Special Division. The only question is how long it will take to liquidate him and what forms will this liquidation assume. Having received the order for the "elaboration" of a certain person and being in personate of the data, provided by special recording, the agent-representative must obtain the confirmation of these materials,

securing the conviction of his victim. Already when he starts working of the case, he is emere of the fact that is he does not get the required confirmation of the data, provided by special recording, the case will not be closed, but passed over to another MEVP man, and he timself will be recorded as a "complice" of this "fi-gurant" and will be liquidated seemer or later.

Therefore the question of the real sulpability of this man does not exist for the agent. He must be gailty, if the agent-representative wants to be safe and sound. The oulpability of the "figurent" is a settled thing for the agent-representative elecated at the moment when the "elaboration" of this person is being entrusted to him. "The MAVD does not arrest for nothing" - such is the standard answer, given to all, trying to protest their relatives or intigates who got into trouble, and expressing a naive hope that it is only a mistake, a misunderstanding.

grow the very beginning of the "elaboration", the suspected men becomes the personal energy of the operative-agent-replesentative as the well-being and security of the later depend on the "success" of the elaboration. The Chekist-spy-investigator-judge persecutes his victim with the obstinacy and fury of a hound trying to hunt his down as soon as possible.

After the errest of the "enemy of the people" the operative agent-representative assumes the role of the investigator, and he must prove that the arrest and all the accusations of the "figurent" have been justified, otherwise another MKVD man will be entrusted with the imquest, and this operative agent-representative will be punished in some way for his failure, at least losing his efficial position. In this stage he is not even interested in getting to the bottom of the matters the accused has to be convicted and the difficulty lies only in the best "mounting" of the cape. If several cases have been successfully sounted and their "form" west found to be adequate, this investigator, i.e. the operative agent-representative, will be promoted and rewarded; if the accusting is found to be poor, he will stay without premotion or

- 105 4

will be even reduced to a lewer rank. The MKVD-MGB releases its victims from its deadly grip only in those rare cases when the supreme party organs have some reasons for sending general instructions to reconsider cases of all persons, whose arrests have not been substantiated, and rehabilitate them. This happened, for instance, in 1939, when Beris replaced Yeshev in the post of the head of the MKVD.

The structure of the inquest division is comparatively simple and it reflects in general lines the structure of the NKVD-MGB operative agencies (See diagram 80 10).

Each NKVD edministration or division has the inquest section or the inquest branch which is subordinated both to this MKVD administration or division and to the inquest division of the center, in Moscow. It is more convenient to make an analysis of this structure using, as an example, the inquest section of the NAVD regional seministration. In this case the inquest branch is composed out of several sections, depending on the number of the operative divisions of this MKVD regional administration. Usually it consists of the following sections: 1st - Secretariat; 2nd - "serving" the Counter Intelligence Division (KRO); 3rd - serving the secret-rolitical Division (SPO); 4th - serving the Aconomic Division (ERO), and 5th - serving the Special Division ("Osobiy Otdel").

Operative workers of each group of the inquest branch are divided in accordance with the number of operative sections accommodated by this inquest group. Thus in 1938-39 the 3rd group of the inquest branch of a large regional MKVD administration consisted at least extend 8 senior investigators, and was organised in such a way that one of them worked with the 1st section of the 8FO, the other - with the 2nd etc. In such a way the investigators are specialised on cases of a similar type, and besides it is very helpful in respect to the eccapiracy, for only one person is informed about all cases under the jurisdiction of this section.

Usually every section of the provincial inquest branch comsists of only one senior investigator with the rank of an operative egent-representative, and of several <u>investigators</u> having the rank of assistant operative egents-representatives. But, as we have seen In the above mentioned example, of a branch serving the Secret-Political Division (SPO), the number of senior investigators may be considerably increased depending on the attention paid to a certain operative division or administration of the MKVD. This example refers to the persiod when the essential attention of the Communist party and of the MKVD itself was drawn to the Secret-Political Administration.

The staffs of the branches in the central inquest division in Moscow are such more numerous and the investigators have higher ranks there. Besides, there is a special inquest branch serving the 1st Division of the HKVD USER, i.e. considering the cases connected with the protection of the members of the Soviet Government, party leaders and the Kremlin.

Every central administration of the GUGB (now MGB) also has its own inquest section or inquest branch which is subordinated to the inquest division of the GUGB MKYD UBLA. It consists of subsections which correspond to the division of this central administration of the GUGB. Thus, for example, the inquest section of the Economic Administration of the GUGB is composed of sub-sections concerned with all industry, fishing trade etc.

Inquest and Methods of Examination

We have already discussed above the particularities of the inquest in the HKVD practice. Its purpose is not the finding out of the fact, under which circumstances the real crime was committed, and not the ascertaining of the persons who have possibly committed that crime, but only the maintaining of decorum in the retribution of the arrested "enery", who usually has to be liquidated only on the basis of some general instructions of higher Party organs and of the data of the operative recording and of his previous "elaboration" by the HKYD agents. In the observhelming majority of cases the HKYD-HGB investigators succeed only in squeezing out of their victims the confessions about some crimes they intended to commit, but very seldom the arrestees admit that they have really committed these crimes.

Permelly, the NEW investigators must stick to certain norms of the legal procedure, but prestically they never either to them and nebody prevents them from applying any "methods of physical influence", i.e. tertures to their victims. The most horrid tertures the besting and termenting of excestoes were always practiced by the Cheke-GPU-MEVD-MGB, but they eshieved unheard-of dimensions at the times of Yeshev - this period is called the "Great Purge" abroad, but - the "yesovahina" in the Soviet Union. Yeshov's predecessor on the post of the MKVD People's Commissariet, Yagoda attached a very great importance to the operative technique and to the work with agents. He was an adherent of applying chiefly the psychological and not the physical methods of influence. Just when he was heading the MKVD, a masterly system of trailing, spying, blackmailing and provocations was set to work. He used to say that if the investigator beats or tortures an arrestee, he seknowledges his own utter insbility of extorting a confession from this erestee by any other means. Of course it does not mean that at the times of Yegoda the MKVD investigators behaved like gentlemen with their victimes tortures and bestings always took place but they were not the only or the essential method.

all these "coresonies with the enemies of the people" were completely rejected in the fearful period of the "Greet Purge" and of Yeshov's reign. The deputy to the MKVD People's Commissar Zekovsky behaved with particular brutality. In 1937-38 he introduced a system of mass bestings and murders during the inquest. At the same time Zekovsky held the effice of the Chief of the Messow regional MKVD administration, while prior to that he had been heading for several years the MKVD administration of the Lemingred region. As an illustration of the inquest methods introduced by this dreadful man in Seviet punitive organs may serve the beastful Scalaration of Zekovsky himself, at a meeting of leading MKVD officials in Messow, in 1938, that "in six weeks he contrived to draw a confession out of 11 thousands of spices in the Lemingred region". It is very significant that the herrid period of 1937-38, called "Yeshovshina" (Yeshov's reign) by the

Soviet people, was usually nominated "Zakovehehina" in the Chekist circles.

great, that no apy-work of agents ("agenturnays rebote") was possible before the beginning of the inquest in prison. People were arrested by hundreds soldly on the basis of the data of operative recording or as a result of a libel, squeezed out of some prisoner by means of horrid tortures. For several years an ignorant, cruel and dull investigator became the "MKVD God" while the leg of a chair, the handle of a revolver or simply a boot or a fist, combined with dirtiest awaring and most fearful insults sere his "methods of inquest". Then "softhearted" Beris replaced Yezhov, he declared 1 " it is not forbidden to best, and it is necessary to best, but not everybody as \$5 wes down before".

In all periods of the boviet regime in hussia the investigators of the punitive organs have acted and still act abre according to the principle of "revolutionary consciousness" then secording to juridical norms. Besides all ressons, mentioned above, this is elso explained by the fact that the investigators (1.e. the MKVD operative agends-representatives) very often have no notion about these norms in general, and it they refer in the end of every case to the clause 200 of the Criminal Code (about the conclusion of the inquest), they do it only because it has been ordered by the office of the Attorney General to do so. They are directed in all their actions by the simple rule that "purpose justifies the means", and if the "enemy" has already been arrested he has to be forced to make his confession by say means. The usual and the most widespread method of the Soviet investigators of screwing real or, much more often, felse confessions out of a prisoner, may be briefly represented in the following formula : 1) terrorising of the prisoner by bringing against him the most phentastic accusations; 2) a systematic exhaustion of all physical and moral strength of the prisoner; 3) erousing hopes and striking of a psychological bargain between the investigator and the prisoner.

This method rejact the lifes of thousands and even millions of Massian people. After the war the same method is applied to the new hundreds of thousands or even millions of victims of the Soviet regime in the countries of the Contral and South-Mastern Europe. Therefore it deserves to be studied in the nest detailed and ettentive way.

The authors of this work have interviewed several dozens of persons, former prisoners of Soviet places of detention and consentration camps as well as former MEVD men as to this problem. The picture of the gradual "working up" of the victims of this institution is nearly the same in its pricipal features though semewhat differs in details. The following method is the most typical:

For instance, the operative agent-representative of the Secret-Political Division of the Moscow regional MEVD administration
is ordered to "elaborate" the economist of the Moscow machinebuilding plant "Sharikepedshipnik", a certain Ivanov. The MEVD
has no incriminating materials for this Ivanov, but a registration card has been filled out for his by the special recording
as he was seen in the theatre in the company of Petrov, engineerconstructor of the same plant who had been arrested after having
told a week, connected in some way with the attempt upon the life
of Kirov, to other workers of his section. Ivanov was not present
then, but owing to this casual encounter in the theatre he was
included into the "agentur case" of the "in-teller" Petrov, who
was sentenced to ten years of banishment for his crime.

By the way, it is worth of mentioning that a wave of arrests, executions and depostations which followed the assasination of Kirov was called by the people "the Kirov recruitment", a similar wave that followed the doubt of Kuibyahov - "the Kuibyahov recruitment", and the fearful period of 1936-1938, the se-called "Teshovshehine,", was also defined as "the Great Recruitment".

Thus, the operative agent-representative begins the "elaboration" of the economist Ivanev, who, since this very mement, has been transferred in the SKYD files into the "figurent Ivanev".

The operative agent-representative makes enquiries in the special section of the plant, and the collected information shows that Ivamev is a painstaking and securate employee, and that during the whole period of his work at this plant he was never reprimended by his chiefs. But he leads a very reticent life, develop all his free time to his family (he has a wife and two children), selden attends meetings, does not display any enthusiasm at the prospect of a new subscription to the loan, evades social obligations and therefore was recorded as a "passive member" by the trade-union organisation. Direct anti-Soviet declarations (criticism of the Soviet regime) were not recorded, but he likes to take from the "Techprop" (propagands of technical knowledge) American technical magazines, and when the Austrian film "Feter" appeared on Soviet sorsens, he made the following remark: "At last we shall be able to see a really good film".

But this scarce information does not disappoint the operative agent-representative. He decides to classify Ivanov with the cate-gory of "concealed 808" (socially dengerous elements) and to "Greate" the material for his "elaboration". Hehashing the old provers, the MKVD men say in such cases : "Find the man, and you will find the case".

And so a systematic elaboration begins. Through the secret informers at Ivanov's place of work, and through the "lodging agent" at his place of living the operative agent-representative learns little by little all the details of Ivanov's biography, he becomes acquainted with his character, manuers, habits, his circle of/ friends, his way of life.

Meanwhile the MKVD agencies gathered information at his place of birth and his former place of residence. Similar information was also gathered for his wife. It has been found out that his father had a small grecery shop in Seratov before the revolution, and that the father of his wife was "dekulakised" ("reskulacion") in 1930 and deported to the Kasakhstan steppes for colomisation. This information "lawfully" enables the operative agent-representative to consider Iveney as SOE (socially deagerous element

(in Bassian - "sesialjae openny element?), for he has conscaled both his end his wife's origin. There are still so constate accommentations against Ivenev, but his "case" gradually swells with these and other "indirect proofs", as Vishinsky calls them. Thenthis case is sufficiently voluminous, the operative agent-representative gets as order for the "detention of potentially dangerous and suspicious as to his connections citizen Ivenov".

At might a cer steps near Ivenov's house ... Sleepy and frightened Ivenov, not understanding enything, is roused from his bed. A search is made and Ivenov is stummed by horrifying questions: "Where is the pistel?", "where have you hidden it?", "We know everything, so better confess, it will help you"...

The first task of the operative agent-representative is to frighten his victim with accusation of some most terrific crises and victous intentions. Thus, the "working up" of the arrestee begins with terrorising him. He is brought to the MAYL and is left till morning in the waiting-room jamed with the "night take". Frightened people, not understanding anything, sit or stand around him. While he is still not able to come to his senses, a man in the MAYD uniform approaches him and looking into some papers asks: "You are citizen so-end-so?" The flabbergasted arrestee answers "yes" in a sheky voice and wants to ask thy he was arrested, but the man in the uniform sutters: "A fine fellow indeed! It took us a long time to eateh you!", -end steps aside.

The legs of the arrestee give way under him. He wants to make the situation clear, he wants to say that he was arrested by mistake, but everybody he addresses, gives the same enjawer: "Keep silent, it is prohibited to speak here!" In the norming he is summened for registration, a careful courch is made once more, all his personal belongings are taken away and approximately at 10 s.m. he is brought to a evergranced prison call.

Innedictely he is surrounded by sene unshaken, tanglehaired persons in rumpled coats and overcoats. He hears questions: "Why have you been arrested?", "That news are there in the free world?", and so forth. The arrestee decides that he has been put into a cell with criminals and timidly clings to the well. But gradually it becomes known that persons, surrounding him, are also economists, engineers, professors, actors, officers of the Red Army and party workers. He does not put any questions, his instinct of a Soviet citizen tells him that all of them are "enemies" who have been arrested for some real crimes, but he is quite innocent and therefore this misunderstanding will be cleared after the first interview with the investigator. But, of course, he has to shun any contact with these "enemies of the people".

The second stage of the previous "working up" takes place. The arrestee is left in peace, and it seems to him that the investigator has forgotten him. Meanwhile, other prisoners are sumnoned to the inquest. They are brought back after a long time and in a terrific state. Sometimes they are pushed into the cell being quite unconscious. The new prisoner (in our case - Ivanev) begins to realise that people do not leave this place, but still he nurses the hope that he will be set free as soon as the "misunderstanding" will be cleared. In the meantime he listens to sed and hopeless tales of other prisoners, who have been arrested in the some unexpected way, but still he refuses to believe them. Gredually all his surroundings create a psychological preparedness for his first interview with the investigator. This preparatory period may be different as to its duration - from one day up to several weeks, depending on the intentions of the investigator and the number of other cases he has at hands at that time.

At lest our Ivanov is summoned to the inquest. He is led through long corridors, and on the way he must stand with his face turned to the well if some other prisoner meets him helfway. He will hear all the time the jingling of a large key, besting against the clasp on the soldier's belt; that is how the warders netify each other that snother arrestee is being brought along the corridor, to enable the warder to turn his prisoner with his face to the wall - so that the prisoners might not see each other. But at last he enters the investigator's room. A formal inquest begins, and its purpose is the ascertaining of biographical data

of the prisoner and his social origin.

"where were you born, where did you live and work, who are your parents, your grandfather and grandather, shat was their occupation?" - these questions have to be answered in details, day after day, year after years. During this preliminary inquest the investigator studies the prisoner, tries to understand his psychology, and his conclusions as well as the impression, made by the prisoner, will determine the behaviour of the investigator, during this first inquest. Depending on them he will be either polite and obliging, treating the arrestee to tee and sandwiches and offering him digarettes, or will knock with his pistol at the table, swear and shout; "I'll kill you like a dog!"

At last the formal part of the inquest is finished. The investigator came to certain conclusions and he proceeds to the "case" as such.

His first question as to this "business part" has normally such a sense though it may vary as to the form :

"Your stitude towards the boviet regime?" - whereby he adds:
"You have to take into account, that we know everything, and you have to make an open-hearted confession, which will prove your complete loyalty to the Party and Soviet Covernment. In that case we shall not bring you to the trial. But if you persist in denying your guilt, I shall remind you of the words of Maxim worky: "If the enemy does not surrender, he is crushed".

By saying this, the operative agent-representative at once shows the prisoner the general direction - denounce yourself as such as possible. But in spite of this all prisoners usually vost that they are absolutely loyal and are ready to sacrifice their life for the Seviet Power and their leaders.

At this moment of the inquest, the investigator comes down upon the arrestee with all his stock of information collected from secret informers. He tells the prisoner about his intimate friends. He shows that he knows who and when paid any visits to the arrestee, he describes the character of these persons and the kind of relations between them and the prisoner. He may even

describe the celour of the hair of the girl with show the prisoner had an effeir and he may mention a shole series of the most intimate details of the prisoner's life. But he will not say a word about his enti-Seviet actions or crimes, for his information does not mention any of such actions or crimes. He will only slap the file of the case with the back of his hand, repeating again and again : "You see, we know everything but we would like you to confess sincerely in all your errors. Repent, and we shall forgive you. But if you don't plead guilty, you sill be executed as an inveterate class enemy".

sation is brought into action which the the operative agent-representative (who is now acting as the investigator) invented
and prepared during his preliminary "elaboration" of this man.
Such versions and combinations greatly vary, and they may be even
of fautastic nature: from an attacht to all stella and other
members of the Soviet Government up to an intention to blow up
a coal mine. This part completely depends on the phantasy and
tastes of the investigator. In such cases the very first inquest
beging with sweering, threstening and beating.

but in many cases the investigator does not bring any concrete accusation against the prisoner at the first inquest, but simply mentions several manus of persons, known to the prisoner, who have been arrested some time before, and affirms, that they have already confessed everything, and that the MAVD knows about the part of the prisoner in their crimes, but he does not mention the crimes as such. From time to time he only puts some leading questions, provoking the prisoner to chose the necessary version.

But notwithstending the nature of the chosen version, the investigator leads the inquest in such a way that the prisoner has the impression that he is not considered by the investigator to be the chief culprit, but only a blind tool in the names of some main persons, who have to be brought to light with the help of this prisoner. Thus, from the very beginning, the investigator gives the prisoner a clue for the future psychological bergain,

while the form and character of this bergain are determined by the investigator in the course of the inquest, depending on the personal qualities of the prisoner, his education, intellectuality, etc.

This first stormy attack of the investigator usually at once sets the prisoner off the rails. He is abached, he has never expected that all the details of his personal life, his acquaintenses and connections, even his own words and thoughts are so wall known to the investigator. Hearly every citizen of the Soviet Union has in his past such facts which, he carefully conscals from the representatives of the Soviet power. All these facts from his own past or that of his parents, as insignificant as they may be in reality, here, in the investigator's room, sequire in his tormented brain the meaning of a terrible deathly danger threatening this and to his family. Such a state of mind is explained by the "normal" psychology of the Soviet Citizen, terrorised by constant purges, check-ups, self-criticism etc. and this factor is fully taken into consideration by the investigator.

Some of the arrestees "crack-up" i.e. agree to sign anything suggested by the investigator, already during the first inquest, but in the most cases the first violent attack of the investigator dees not give any decisive results, and the prisoner
keeps on proving his innocence. In such cases the investigator,
aprawling on a chair and smoking one cigarette after another,
for many hours will repeat his only requirement : "Speak!". In
the intervals he will knock at the table with his pistol, swear,
stemp with his feet, threaten with tortures and execution and
even best the prisoner, though it is not always done in the course
of the first inquest.

The continuence of the first inquest may vary from several hours to several days. This depends entirely on the investigator, his intentions, the character of the material collected during the preliminary "elaboration", on the version of the "erime", prepared by the investigator, on the impression erested by the arrestee, on the 'physical and moral firmness of the prisoner himself.

The inquests that lasted for several days were especially widespread in the period of "Yeshovshchina" when the lack of naturial that had to be collected previously, and the abundance of "cases" did not give any possibility to the investigators to pursue a systematic "working up" of the prisoners, and forced them to try "cracking" the arrestees by means of a single furious attack.

In the case of one of the authors of this work, such an inquest in the Special Division of the MEVD lasted for five days and a half without any interruption.

If such method is applied, after some hours of the inquest, when the will of the prisoner in not yet broken but the organisa already begins to lose capacity of resisting owing to the fatigue and hervous strain, the investigator usually leaves with the words : "Stand and think!" Here it is necessary to have in view that during the inquests in the EKVD the prisoners are very rarely allowed to sit. Usually the arrestee has to stand all the time he is in the investigator's room. This necessity of standing for many hours and sometimes even for several days is already a cruel torture in itself, and may break the resistance even of fire people: but the chief purpose of this measure is to bring prisoners to a half-concious state when they lose control over their enswers. Sometimes (as in the case with one of the authors of this book) the prisoner under investigation is driven to such a state that, being influenced by the investigator on duty, he begins imagining that the latter helps him and proposes the best version for his defence and the best course to adopt in this situation. But this measure is not included into the category of "physical acesures for influencing" and represents the "normal" way of the "work" of the MIYD organs. Depriving the prisoner of food and drink during the inquest, or feeding his with herrings not giving any water afterwards, is also considered to be the usual method. To emphasize this measure, the investigator usually puts a carefe with water and a glass on his deak, and smuses himself from time to time by pouring water into the glass and back again into the carafe.

١

And so, the investigator leaves. Instead of his some operative worker in a low rank who is on duty, or a student of advanced course of the Moscow School of the SKVD investigators who is on probation, stay with the prisoner. The exterly MAVD man uninterruptedly speaks with the prisoner, using, as a rule, the most insulting language, trying to humiliate and outrage him. The purpose of such a behaviour is to oppress morally and to tire physically the person under investigation not giving him a single minute of rest. If the prisoner, exhausted by sleeplessness and long inquest, falls salesp while standing, the MEVD man on duty wakes him with a new flood of bad language and scaetimes by pushing him. So it goes for a long time. Every six hours the investiggators on duty are changed while the man under investigation sust keep standing and "thinking". For emphasizing this measure the investigator sometimes draws two lines on the wall near the shoultders of the prisoner or on the floor near his feet, and prohibits to swerve from it or to step over them.

At lest, on the next day, the investigator appears egain. He has slept well and rested, he is cleanly shaven, even aprayed with eau de Cologne. He is quite ready to begin his normal working day. But the prisoner hardly stends on his feet by this time. The investigator usually begins this second helf of the inquest with a violent strack, demanding the prisoner to take a seat and writes down his testimony as he had time enough to think them over by night. And usually the investigator adds : "Then you can go and aleep". A characteristic detail has to be mentioned here : almost always in the beginning of the first inquest the investigator eddresses the prisoner in the second person of plurel ("vy"the polite form in Eussian), but later on he replaces this form by a rude "ty" (the second person of singular), and rerely uses other expressions than "villein", "rescal", "fascist Vermin" etc. while addressing his victim. He returns to the polite form "vy" only when the prisoner agrees to take a sest and write the required testimony.

In such case the prisoner is always given tea with sendwiches, and a package of eigerettes or of cheep tobacco is put on the table for his use. All arrestees know about it, and after a crammed cell, swarming with bugs, this tes with sandwiches and the possibility of smoking again turn into such an alluring bait that cannot be resisted by many a prisoner.

Here the investigator applies the following, very typical psychological trick. Before closing the night inquest be comes down upon the prisoner with some horrible and even fantastic: accusation, as, for instance, the organization of an attempt upon Stalin's life, an attempt of blowing up the plant where the prisoner works or something like that. The prisoner is left for the night to "think over" this terrible accusation, that threatens him with a "pass into eternity". In the course of the night the prisoner gets accustomed to the thought of the impending death and all his mental ability is directed upon attaining only one purpose : to avoid this terrible menacing prospect and at least to save his life. If in the beginning of the inquest the prisoner strove to prove his innocence and wanted to be set free. he has only one wish now - to escape impanding death and as soon as possible to put an end to this excruciating inquest. his feet are swollen from the long standing, his brains are inflamed and he has slaost lost his capacity for understanding.

The investigator takes into consideration such a state of the prisoner and absuptly changes his tactics, he begins the morning inquest in a soothing tone: "Both of us lost our temper yesterday, Each of us was tired. Your enemies have slandered you a lot. But we know that you are not such a bed man, kverybody may make an error, we do not want to ruin innocent people, we want only to know the truth." - The further harangue is of the similar nature but ends with releasing the prisoner from the most terrible accusation while the prisoner is summoned to sign some "trifle", i.e. the testimony of a "disloyal attitude towards the Soviet power", "petty wreekage" etc. Here the investigator adds with a pretended sympathy to the fate of the prisoner: "Nothing particular will threaten you for that, May be you will be only

forced to spend a couple of years in a camp. Then the Soviet power will forgive you and you will be free again." After the terrible experience of the last night the prospect of "going to a camp for a couple of years" seems to be almost a blessing to the weary prisoner. Many take the bait of the "compassionate" investing to and ruin themselves and their relatives and intimates.

But if the prisoner is firm enough to refuse signing this "trifle", the investigator uses floods of bad language, and throwing saids all his "compassion" and "sympathy" applies to the prisoner the most cruel "measures of physical influence" in the result of which the prisoner usually loses his senses. Then cold water is poured on his and he is dragged into the solitary confinement cell or back to his ordinary cell, or even to the prison hospital depending on the wish of the investigator and on the state of the prisoner.

But besides the "physical influence" there is also the following method which is applied very frequently. Being tired out with shouting and having exhausted his stock of curses the investigator declares: "All is finished with you. You are such an incorrigible vermin that there is nothing else to be done with you but to shoot you down. That's enough!"

The prisoner is put into an elevator, he ftels that he comes down somewhere. The memories of all his past life pass before his mental sight. But suddenly the elevator stops. The door is opened and the prisoner sees a long corridor, disly lit by electrical bulbs. Two NKVD men stand by the elevator holding pistols in their hands. The prisoner is ordered to go sheed, btsagering, clinging to the well, he slowly moves and sees the bullet marks on the corridor walls. The NKVD men gradually fall behind, he hears their steps, echoing hollowly in the stillness of the corridor. Emanges This is an end ...

But no shots are fired. The prisoner reaches the end of the corridor. Again he is put into an elevator and brought before the investigator who meets him with the words : "well, have you seen? I was sorry for you and thought you might repent. You have wife and children, then think it over once more! "e don't stand upon ceremony with the enemies of the people; one, two and ready!"

Again the horrid accusation of terrorism, spying activities, diversion etc. appears on the stage, then the investigator again has "pity" on the prisoner, and summons him to sign some "trifle" which will cost him only two-three years in the camp. Variations and forms of the methods used by the investigator may be different, but the argumentation is nearly always the same : "Dign this "trifle" and the accusation of terrorism and diversion will be taken off, as you will show that you sincerely repent in your errors". At lest the worn-out man signs this "trifle" and is sent to some concentration camp for 5-10 years.

nowever, the investigator rarely achieves his purpose in the course of the first inquest though it may last for several days. In opinion is alde-spread abroad that the MKVL investigators can model enything out of the prisoners so if they were soft wax. buth an opinion was created after the "big processes" of 1950-35 but it is quite a wrong one.

These blg processes are called "show trists" or "demonstrative triels" in the U. k. but in reality they do not demonstrate enything. Unly such "ensules of the people" who "cricked up", capitulated and agreed to be partners of drylenko and vishinaky appear on the platform of the Column mell of the abscow union house. But all those who have courageously endured moral and phybical tortures simply get a bullet into the happe of their necks and this is done without may posposity. It is sufficient to mention only the most popular names of those who perished without this conedy of an open trial - the names of mershelf . Tumnschevsay, Yegorov, Blucher, Army Generals Kork, Uborevich, Iskir, Admirals Fandershansky and Orlow, ministers of the government and members of the Central Party Committee and even of the Folithure as kudsutak, Kossior, Postyshev and others, prominent diplomats es Karakhan and Haskolnikov, and shat is more important - let us recollect millions of courageous Russians, men whose names and whose very existence reseined unnoticed by the foreign correspondents, eager only to find a sensation - millions of patriots and anti-communists, tortured and executed in the secret MAND places, killed as they could not be curbed or broken.

The names of generals Vlassov and Malyshkin, Trukhin and Meandrov who were executed in 1946 without witnesses, may serve as a symbol of all, than innumerate army of fighters for freedom who conquered the horrors of the SKVD system.

Thus, this monstrous system of morel and physical violence is not always the winner. More often it is conquered by the human spirit, strong in its hate of all evil, in its love of the good, i.e. by those qualities of the people which the Communism was unable to change in the long thirty years of its complete mastery over bodies but not the souls of the Russian people.

The unknown victims of Stelin's dictatorship lead their heroical struggle against their tormentors for long months, though they are denied all human rights and though they are fully aware of the fact that this struggle leads only to their death. Many lose their strength and firmness in this inequal struggle, sign everything they are requested to, and even turn into obedient agents of their formentors. But still greater number of Russian people remain firm to the very end in spite of all indescribable physical and moral tortures.

The procedure of a gradual influence of the NaVD investigetor upon the prisoner's mind, as described above, is goten spun our for many months and even years. It happens very often that one and the same investigator is in charge of several dosess of cases, and as a result of this, persons under investigation are called cat by him for the inquest once in a way. In 1937-38 it was not infrequent that people were summoned to the first inquest only after 4-5 months of imprisonment, and then they were again forgotten for someral months. There were also cases when persons errested in the very height of "Yeshovahahina", i.e. in winter of 1937-38, had not been estiled for the inquest until Tesher himself was dismissed by the end of the year 1958, and then they were set free, "for lock of the body of the crime". These people never learnes why they had been arrested and my they had to spend a year in prison. But all these cases have to be considered as exceptions and they counct be characteristic for the weal methods of the inquest in the MKYD prisons.

In order to understand the actions of the investigator and of the prisoner in such cases when the investigation is not limited only by the first violent inquest but is spun out for a long period of time, it is necessary to take into consideration the atmosphere of the NKVD prison cell. In the period of great repressions 25-30 persons were cransed into normal cells, designed for four persons. People could sit only by turns, and for the night large wooden shields were brought into the cells and put on the plank-beds scross the whole cell. Thus the whole space of the cell was divided into two or three stores the height of which did not exceed one meter. 8-10 and even more prisoners were placed on these storess, so that they were lying tightly pressed to each other and filling almost the whole of the cubature of the cell with their bodies. Those who had to lie on the floor under the plank-beds and the first row of shields were in the worst positios. In the Moscow prisons these places were called "subways".

ing in plank-beds and in the shields, an impossibility of washing, shaving or combing, a thin soup called "balanda" with a piece of bread for dinner and supper, complete luck of news from outside and the agonizing incertitude about the fate of two relatives and intimates, shrieks of tortured men, means of those who have come back from an inquest, the night calls "without things" for execution and desfaning rear of sutemobile motors that had to muffle the sound of shots in the cellars - all this created such an atmosphere in the cells, in comparison to which even the sorat concentration camp seemed like a rest home.

In such conditions the investigator had only to create in the mind of the prisoner a certitude that he won't be released under any circumstances and that death is lurking for him. Such a state of mind was achieved in the result of the most terrible and even fantastic accusations and by means of brutal bestings and tortures during the first inquests. Then, for some time, the prisoner is left in passe. As it is prohibited to speak in a loud voice in the cells, the prisoners talk in a low whisper sith each

tell their stories and ask for advice as to their behaviour at future inquests, though each prisoner is aware of the fact that two-three secret egents are normally present among the prisoners of the cell. However, each arrestee tells his fellow-prisoners only a part of the truth - the fear of the investigator is too strong. Therefore, of course, it is impossible to speak about any co-ordinated actions of the insates of one and the same cell - each of them takes his own risk and sets according to his own plan. The inveterate habit of Soviet people to hide their innermost "I" from the eyes of the strangers is preserved even in the hell of a NEVD cell. The analysis of the conditions in the HEVD prisons is not the purpose of this work, but we are obliged to dwell on the following two points that are of decisive value :

1. Such conditions have been created in the NAVD prisons, in comparison to which any punitive measure (with the only exception of a death penalty) seems to the prisoners a facilitation of their fate.

2. Collective demonstrations, riots, hunger-strikes etc. take place in the prisons of other countries, while in the EKVD prison, as a rule, a duel between the investigator and the prisoner is going on.

Though the circumstances of each separate case may greatly vary, it is possible to state three essential lines in the behaviour of the prisoners, and consequently all political prisoners of the NKVD are divided into three main categories.

The first estegory embraces those persons who rapidly lose their moral and physical strength, strike a bargain with the investigator, "crack up" i.e. sign everything they are suggested to by the investigator, and in the most cases perish or consent to become MEVD agents.

The second category consists of persons who are strong enough to bear all tortures of the inquest as well as inhuman conditions of their imprisonment, admitting none of the points of the secusation, brought against them by the investigator. Many of them perish in the result of felse testimenies of minds other prisoners or friends, colleages and follow-workers who have not been arrested but berrorised to beer witness against them. However, a certain number of such prisoners are lucky enough to be released "because of the lack of the body of the crime" after many agaths of inhuman tortures and at the cost of a colossel strain of their physical and moral strength. Usually they draw this fortunate lot is such instances when the Frenlin decides, for certain reasons, to reconsider the cases of the prisoners.

The third category is the most numerous and the most chargeetristic one for the Soviet conditions, though such a category cannot be found among the prisoners of any other countries. It consists of persons who rather quickly come to the conclusion that they won't be able to enatch out of the NAVD clutches, and therefore these people lead their struggle with the investigator not for their freedom, but for applying to their cases such a clause of the criminal code in the indictment which seems to them to be the most favourable one. This is approximately the sene course of action, adopted by the advocates of other countries when they see the impossibility of gaining a lawsuit for their client. But here is a principal difference : the defeuders of obviously hopeless cases concentrate their efforts on the extenuating circumstances in so far as the fact of the crime is beyond any doubt. The Soviet prisoners of the third category have themselves invented for their "cases" such crimes that have never been committed by them, and direct all their phantagy and mental ability to bring the characterisis and circumstances of these "erimes" in conformance with certain clauses of the criminal code that may threaten them "only" with deportation to: a concentretion comp.

The tectics of this original "defease" of the NKVD prisoners is approximately the following :

end a certain stage of the investigation the prisoner clearly sees that he won't be repleased, that his conviction has been decided beforehend by the investigator and his superiors. The atmosphere in the cell and tortures during the inquests gradually

undermine his will for struggle. On the other hand the absurdity of the investigator's version of his "erime" is also obvious to him in all its details. His brain is painfully and strenuously working in the effort of making this version like the truth, but at the same time taking care that the punishment does not exceed "deportation to the camp for 2-5 years". Usually this way is chesen by persons who have been arrested by the organs of the Meaner and Administration of the HKVD and charged with "diversion", "economic spying" and "wreekage".

arrestees begin consulting their fellow-prisoners. In every cell there are always several "specialists" as to the Criminal Code, who know by heart the most frequently used clauses of the Loviet Criminal Code and punitive measures involved by them. The prisoner choses a clause which seems to him to be the most suitable one, and starts sorking on the details of him "crime" as well as on the general plan of his "confession". Then such a plan is made out, the prisoner comes up to the judes in the door of his cell and waks the warder to give him an interview with the investigator for "giving testimony". Such an interview is normally given without any delay. Seing brought before the investigator he declares that he has "reslized his arrors" and wants to "make an open-hearted confession" and therefore asks for some ink, pen and the files of his case.

Having received all this, the prisoner, in the presence of the investigator, begins working at his own case. The attitude of the investigator is immediately changed into the most sympathetic one and the prisoner invertiably gets tes with sandwiches and eigerettes or tobacco. The investigator has by that time fully realised all the discrepancies and even absurdations of his version of the accusation, and he gladly accepts the prisoner's co-eperation. He is interested meither in the essential part of the "case" as such mor in the punitive measure, but only in the suitable "downting" or "framing" of the notice which he has to prepare for the session of the "troike" or "Special Council". The redeness of the investigator's abuses, blows and tortures

are immediately stopped at this stage, and the investigator puts on a sympathetic and even good-humoured mask.

This way is usually chosen by intellectuals and specialists. As seen as the prisoner has started writing his "version", he hecemes the temperary master of the situation. In such cases he works without hurrying, trying to prolong his "leave" from the cell and enjoy comperatively human conditions. There are cases when prisoners work at their "testimonies" for a week or even more, and they compile a really scientific work, inbued with formulas and calculations. The investigator does not hasten him, and only attentively wathes over the prisoner to prevent him from trying to prove his complete innocence. As long as he "confesses" and does not rebut directly the version of the investigator - the latter will not intrude.

Starting this strange and unnatural "co-operation" with the investigator, the prisoner may pursue different objects, but in the majority of cases he strives to facilitate his fate or that of his family. Under the most favourable circumstances such a "detailed confession" may lead to the appointment of a commission for revising his case. But much more frequently the prisoner "goes" to a camp for several years and all his inventiveness serves only for mitigating his fate to a certain extent and semeshat shertening his prison term. This strange work of prisoners for inventing the crimes they have never committed shows in the clearest way how desperate and hopeless the people feel in the MIVD prisons. In fact, it is the same principle of the Soviet "self-criticism" but amounting to absurdity in prison.

Senetimes the wish to escape from the lowey and stinking soil and to go to the concentration samp sequires the character of a real psychosis. Heapty and weary people begin to paint in the brightest colours the pistures of the Siberian taigs (vast forests) and of rivers, absunding in water and examing with fish. They can discuss for hours and with the participation of all insertes of the cell, how they will fell trees, build their barracks in the desolate taigs, how they will go e-fishing and cook a

fish-easy. In their imagination the "correctional camp" of the MIVD turns into the climax of the human well-being, and in order to, schieve their deporatation as soon as possible, people compile the versions of the crimes, never committed by them but required by the investigator. Such paychoses, very profitable for the investigator, are sensitines provoked by him through his agents in the cell. A lot of people under investigation, especially former soldiers and officers of the Red Army, try to be deported to a camp as soon as possible, while they are still healthy and strong in order to flee from there. On this account there is even a special saying in the prisons: "I go to the camp, - to the green prosecutor..."

There are also cases when the prisoners try to sock quite consciously at their ignorant investigators. So, for instance, in 1937, an inmate of the HKVD prison invented with all details a story how he intended to sink several ships of the Black See nevy in Armevir, and the investigator put down all this nonsense, not knowing that Armavir is situated 500 miles away from the Black See coast. Only on the next day he see what a trick was played on him by the prisoner, summoned this prisoner to his room and best him so that he was more deed them alive. Another "participator of an ermed revolt on the Lower solga" signed a testimony that he, being the chief of the auto-repairing shop of the MIS (Machine-tractor station), intended to make tanks out of the tractors "Fordson" and armoured ears out of the auto-cisterus in order to secure the success for this "revolt". But more often there are cases when weary and desperate prisoners - this is mostly the case with almost elliterate peasants and workers - ask the investigator to write down exactly what he wants and finds better for them and thus sign themselves their death sentences.

It is absolutely impossible to give a detailed analysis of all methods of the inquest and investigation of the MKVD-MGB in a short chapter of this book. Buch an analysis must be a themater a special work.

Closing this chapter it is only necessary to point out that the chief weapon of a MKVD investigator is neither the material which has been cellected by him during the "elaboration of the figurant", nor the physical measures of influence, but this atmosphere of ultimate despair and complete lewlesanese which envelops every prisoner since the very first mement of his arrest, and to which he has been prepared by all his previous life in the "normal" Soviet surroundings. It won't be an exaggeration if we say that the atmosphere of this "normal" Soviet life differs from the atmosphere of an MKVD prison only by a concentration and acuteness of the measures of enforcement as here and there the Soviet citisen has no personal freedom and all his bide fate is in the hands of the authorities in power.

The work with the witnesses is of a much simpler nature. The investigator reads to the summoned witness a false testimony of the prisoner, where the letter makes a clean breast of everything. If the witness does not want to say snything that may be of any harm to the prisoner, the investigator declares : "sell, you are such an enemy as he is, even a more dangerous one, for he has confessed and reputs openheartedly for what he has done while you want to conceal everything from us".

Having been summoned to the HKVD, the witness cannot leave the premises without the signature of the investigator on his pass. The investigator suggests to the witness to go out into a corridor and think there, while a soldier bids him to stand with his face turned to the wall, and he may be kept in such a position for many hours according to the investigator's order. As a result persons of weak character sign everything given to them by the investigator, only envisue to leave this demned building.

The foreigners often ask ; what does the Soviet government arrest such a let of people for, especially as they are obviously innecent? The usual answer is that it is necessary for the reinforcement of the army of the prisoners who are earrying out the most difficult work without being paid. But this answer does not give an exhaustive explanation of the problem, as the whole population of the Soviet Union already works for the state, i.e. party,

and gots starvation wages for their labous. And the work of a slave is always less productive then that of a free men, even if his freeden is as ephdneral as it is in the Seviet Union. Therefore, the above question will be more correct if we put the word "why" instead of "what for", used there.

Then the enswer will be as fellowing a because being afraid of the people's hetred the Seviet government created a multimillianed army of jailars, who have to arrest, torture and deport millians of people in order to justify their existence, and because there is no organ in the Seviet Union that could stop on a certain limit the signal, received from the center, for liquidating or "purging" that or another group of the moviet population. Thus the well-known theory of the mow-ball is brought into life. The dictatorship of the Communist party cannot exist without the army of MKVD-MGB butchers, and this army requires millions of visting to justify its existence. This is a vicious circle from which there is no other escape but the making away of both the dictatorship and the butchers in its service.

CHAPTE III

OF THE GUGS MEAD ASSE

The task of this division is to protect stelln and other top ranking leaders of the Farty and Gevernment, as the stellars oligarchy is officially nominated.

The 1st Division is particularly concerned with the protestion of a Stalin, all members and candidates of the Polithuro; secretaries of the Central Party Committee, members and candidates of the Orghuro, the chairman and some members of the Commission for Party Control, all Vice-Chairman of the downstrom (now - Council of Ministers) of the UBSM, and some People's Commissars (now ministers) as well as a series of the highest officials scoording to a list approved by Stalin himself.

The most important objects, guarded by the 1st division, are t

- a) the Freelin ;
- By the building of the Central Committee of the Party;
- c) the building of the bownerkos in Okhotny misd in Moscow;
- d) the buildings of the Party Control Commission, of the Executive Committee of the Commission, that of the Central Committee of Acasomol, and a series of others;
- e) the building of the MKVD USbit moscow, Diershinsky Square, House Se 2:
- f) Stelia's country-house;
- g) Country-houses of all the Polithuro members and other persons under protection of the 1st Division;
- h) the road from the Kremiin to the country-houses of the above mentioned persons;
- 1) Government villas in the Causania and the Crises,
- j) Government trains, seroplemes, cars, yechts and other transport means.

Besides these nain objects, the 1st Division guards absolutely all places, visited by Stalin and his closest collaboratories as well as all roads, chosen for their routes. For instance, the 1st Division guards the government besses in the Moseon Art Thester in the Bolshoi and Hely Thesters, the government hunting askaling near Moscow etc.

The strictly specific task of the 1st Division is, naturally, reflected in its whole structure (see Biogram So 11), Unlike all other organs of the GUGB (now MGB) the 1st Division has no residuations going downwards, and it exists only in the central nomperatus of the GUGB, as its main object is the region of the city of Moscow.

The 1st Division is closely connected in all its work with the 2nd Special Division, especially with its "L-an" branch. In the capitals of the Union Republies and regional centers the functions of the 1st Division as to the protection of local party leaders (secretaries of regional and area committees) go over to the 2nd Special Divisions of the corresponding Mayu administrations in these cities, however, when Stalin and other sources leaders visit these cities, they are guarded on their easy and during their stay there by the 1st Division, though the latter uses the already existing brigades and groups of the 2nd Special Division of the local MAYD administrations for the exterior observation, regulation of traffic and other purposes.

they are accompanied by a special reinforced brigade of the MEVD men on the staff of the 1st Division. Two of these men must also mays accompany the leader wherever he goes, eithout leaving his alone. They may wear uniforms or plain clothes. Besides, long before the "leader" leaves for a certain country, a special bragade of the 1st Division is sent there (usually under the pretames of sending sheed technical workers of the Boviet delegation), being entrusted with the task of securing protective measures in local conditions. During the whole stay of the leader shread, all the serving personnel consists of the 1st Division men. So. for instance, during the diplomatic journey of Molotov to Sam-

Prencioco in the spring of 1945, he was accompanied by a whole plateon of gueres of the 1st Bivinian, and Eregiov bincolf, the future Majeter for State Security, was extrusted with the general direction of operations for accuring the sofety of Massie's leader to 2.

The journey of Stalin abroad is technically impossible. The position of Stalin prevents his from using foreign means of communication, and it would be necessary for the 1st Division to get the exclusive right for guarding everything that has to de with Stalin's reste, i.e. the guarding of all resds, railway stations, ports, streets that lie in the Stalin's way, and the government of no country will agree to much a measure. For the lest 30 years Stalin formally crossed the boundaries of the Scriet Stalin early twice : in Sovember 1945, going to februar, and in August 1945, leaving for Poteden. But in both cases he practically moved in the regions, occupieds by the Soviet troops, and therefore there was full possibility for the 1st Division to as-

But even in such conditions, precentions of quite exceptional nature were taken in Teleran and Potades. In the first cases up to three thousands MEVD sen on staff of the 1st Division emispecial Sector of the Central Committee of the All-Union Communist Party as well as a bettalian of treeps, guarding the Aresida, arrived in Teleran. The conference with Churchill and Housevelt took place in the premises of the Soviet embassy, and in its course Stella left the building only twice I for the first time to pay official calls to Recovelt and Churchill, and for the second to attend the celebration of Churchill's birthday.

In Potedam the inhabitants were custed from all buildings in the streets adjaining the area, where the conference took place, and the whole area was encompassed by the intensified detechments of "MERRER", "L-ME" and 1st Division. All the way from Moscow to Potedam was gnarded by the METD treeps, and Stalin arrived & Potedam in a special train, leaving Derlin saids.

The 1st Division originated as a special organ evidently after the attempt upon lemin's life in August 1918, but its organmisstional set-up was not completed during Lemin's life. It is:
possible to assume that in these times Trotaly, and not Lemin.
peid more attention to the development of this organ. It was
frotally who took for his private use the train that formerly belonged to the Russian tear, and that was he who introduced mosainal
body-quard for himself and other Soviet leaders. This bodysmand
was the initial stage of the 1st Division. It is difficult to demide which part was played by Stalin in the creation of this speeifle organ in that early period of the Soviet power, but it is
sheresteristic that during the defense of Taeritsyn (Stalingred)
in suturn 1918, Stalin surrounded himself by a detachment of thekists and under no circumstances parted with this special body-

in the OGFU period the 1st Division was joined with the hid Special D vision and, according to some information, it was assembling like a subdivision of the 2nd Special Division. though its functions were highly specialised. In the other hand, the semeral structure of the HEVD and the numeration of its main divisions and administrations make as suppose that the 1st upocial Division and the 1st Division constituted formarly a general 1st Division, which was divided later into three divisions in connection with the complication and specialisation of its functions. However, the suthors did not succeed as yet in finding a definite ensure as to the history of organization of the 1st Division.

In any case there is no doubt that before the war the 1st: Division closely coordinated its activity with the 2nd Special Division, and both these divisions were suburdinated to the them. Beputy People's Commisser of the MKYD, S.N.Krugiov, who was personally responsible for the safety of Stelin and other Moscow leaders. The same Krugiov appointed the superintendent of the Area-lin and checked up all technical workers on the staff of the Central Committee of the All-Union Communist Party, and of the Sownerkon of the USSE. After the war Kruglev was appointed the Minister for Individual Affairs of the USSE.

Wellke other central ergons of the MIVD-MGB, the Tat Division is an independent unit, practically subordinated not be Was MIVD People's Semissor (Minister), but to the Special Sector of the Sentral Party Commisson (.e. to the Stalin's secretarist. If Stalin or any other leader leaves Mossow to go to the province, all lead agencies of the MIVD-MGB are bound to fulfil exactly and with absolute submission all orders of the MIVD man on the staff of the 1st Division, secompanying this leader (of source, only in the questions concerned with the protection of the leader during his stay in a certain republic or region). The chief of the 1st Division is subordinated both to the eniof of the GUGB and directly to the respie's Commissor of Interrior Affairs (now to the Minister of State Security or directly to Levresty Serie).

According to the information callected by the authors of this work, the 1st Division included the following units :

- a) Operative section;
- b) Inquest section;
- g) Personnel section;
- d) Registration and information section;
- e) Chief of the bodyguard;
- f) Commander of the Kremlin guard with the 1st Commandant's of:ice of the Kremlin guard and the guard division subpradinated to him;
- g) Commander of the guard of objects with the 2nd Commander dants office subordinated to him;
- he Transport section;
- 1) the Frenlin supply department;
- k) the M20 section (material-technical provision);
- 1) Administrative and maintenance section.

probably there we's series of subdivisions of this division, not mentioned on our list; on the other hand, it is quite possible that some of the mentioned units have been joined together. The unusual secrety in the expenisational structure of the 1st Division makes very difficult the construction of schemes and the correct denomination of its sections and subunits. This must be the chiest of further studies.

Probably the field of operations and the character of the activity of these sections of the 1st Division are as follows:

Operative sestion (probably several of them). Plans the work of the special operative groups subordinated to the 1st Division. The number of persons, constituting these groups may very as well as the teaks, carried out by them.

for example, Stelia attends some theater performance in seccom. Several operative groups of the 1st Division will be sent to this theater during Stelin's stey there in order to secure his sefety.

of each "leader", which is directly subordinated to the command of the bodyguard.

Hesides these essential tasks the personnel of the operative groups makes arrests carrying out the orders of the 1st bivinion, and searches the quarters of pursons, "elaborated" by this division. Besides all this, the operative groups may carry out other operative tasks which are the concern of the 1st Division.

Inquest section. Is carrying on inquests and inquiries of persons, arrested by the 1st Division. It has to be mentioned here that the whole work of the 1st Livision is carried on in slose contact with the private secretarist of stelin and with the Special Sector of the Central Party Committee, more minushan precisely with the so-called "Stelin's bettalion". In the period of the "Great Parge", 1956-1958, all arrests of members of the Polithero, the Central Committee and the Sewmerkon, who were not lunky enough to please Stelia, were partly carried out through the inquest section of the 1st Division. Therefore, it has to be assumed that the field of operations of the inquest section of the 1st Division is not limited only with cases of persons, arrested for breaking the rules, set for the pretection of the leaders. Practically the investigators of this section execute the functions of

the investigators for especially important and super-secret sames. 59, in 1937-38, excests of all MEVD bosses, to begin with Especial and Yeshov, were carried out with the assent of the Special Sector of the Contral Party Committee, and the cases went through the impuest section of the 1st Division.

for the whole 1st Division and also enecks up and selects technical workers for the maintenance of the Krenlin, "nomenclature objects" (i.e. government buildings) and private accommodation of all persons under protection of the lat Division.

The personnel section of the 1st Division is connected is. its work with the Personnel Administration of the MAVD USDAR but is not bound to carry out all its oraders. However, the instructions of Stalin's passon private secretarist as tog the selection, cheek-ing-up and distribution of the personnel are obligatory for the personnel section of the 1st Division. It is even possible to may, that the Special Sector, i.e. Stalin's private secretarist, if we want to be more precise, is directing the work of the whole ist Division through its personnel section.

hazintration and Information beginners all travels of the persons who have to be guarded and accordingly gives instructions to the operative section and to the commandants, neglesters all persons, visiting the Krealin, who are not in the peasession of personent passes, and carries on all other forms and kinds of registration, necessary for the current work of the lest bivision. Is personally connected in its work with the 2nd sector of the 1st Special Division (the recording of anti-boviet elements) from which it gets all the necessary information, it is possible to assume that formerly this section was a part of the 1st Special Division. The registration section is also directly connected with Stalin's private secretarist, as well as with the secretarist of the Polithure and that of the Central Perty Committee.

According to the data that have not been verified, it publicates a secret information bulletin for the 1st Division. The Meacord Office of the 1st Division is attached to this section.

The Commander of the bodymard. Is subordinated directly to the Chief of the 1st Division (and through him to the Special Section of the Control Committee) and is concerned with guarding Stalin and other persons under the protection of the lat Division. The corresponding sen of the bodyguard of the persons, assisticated shows, are subordinated to him.

the BEVD-med on the staff of the 1st Divinion, is attached to each "leader". Two of his bodyguards have always to accompany the "leader" wherever he is and wherever he goes. These men are changed every eight hours. Thus, the brigade of the bodyguards normally consists of 6 guards and one commender. Then "leader" leader to so brigade of the brigade of the brigade of the brigade to the brigade of the bodyguards is reinforced by the operative tive group. Sesides, the country-houses where the "leaders" resaides have their internal and external guard.

Atelin and all members of the rolithuro have quarters in the fremita and, besides that, country-houses, situated none 25-4 miles from Adecom slong the Moshaisk road, on the banks of the riever Moskva. All the Area around these government, william with the redius of 5-70 kiloseters has been proclaimed "torbidden some", and is guarded by a special division of MAVL troops. Every person who enters this forbidden some without a special pass, has to be arrested without delay, and his identity has to be assertained through the special resording of the have.

.

The Commender of the Kremlia Guards. Is conserned with the whole internal and external guard of the Arealia and is subordinated to the Chief of the 1st Division (and through him - to the Special Sector of the Central Committee). The commander of the Kremlin guards has under him :

- a) the 1st commandant's office of the Kremin guerd;
- b) the division of the Kremiia guards a division of the Chekist troops corps d'elite of the MAVD, armed and manned scorving to special previsions. This division is entrusted with the service of the internal and external guarding of the Kremiia, carried out together with the students of the special military school, bearing the name of the Supreme Soviet of the USSE and situated within the Kremiin walls.

By the way, the commender of the Kremlin guards has not to be confused with the Kremlin superintendent. The latter carries on the edministrative and supply duties as to the inner regulations in the Kremlin, receives foreigners of high standing, plans and organises different receptions at Stalin's, holotov's and other "leaders", is responsible for the maintenance of order during the messions of the Supreme Soviet in the Sig Kremlin salace etc.

The Kremlin is underbeetly the most carefully guarded abject of the whole world, though an unitiated person will hardly notice it. The visitors can enter the Kremlin mainly through the gates of the Spansky Tower, spening on the med square, and they may be used only by persons, living in the Kremlin and having a permanent pass for entering it. The Spansky gate is open in the day time, and the way is apparently beried only by two sentries in the uniteriors of the supreme Soviet military school, but it is, probably, much more difficult to pass through this open gate than to gat tothe American depot where stom bomos are stored.

Foreign diplomets of high standing and foreign guests of one loviet government, having been invited to visit the aremila, pass the Spassky gate simpst without any impediments, and they cannot even imagine what it means for an ordinary noviet citizen to go through the mole procedure for getting a pass to the aremila. Such a ress can be not only in the result of a call made of some of the high party and government institutions located there, or eccording to a passonal invitation of one of the leaders. The usual order of issuing a pass is as follows:

the person, calling that or another visitor, sends to the community of the Ereslin guards a request of the established type, indicating name, petronymis, surname or the visitor, his address, piece of work and the reseas of his being called to the Arealin. The commander sends the copy of this request through the registrative section of the 1st Division to the special recording sector of the 1st Division of the Günd. If this person is a non-restant of Moscow, a siphered enquiry about his is based sent

By the way, the commender of the Krealia guards has not no be confused with the Krealia superintendent. The latter carries on the edministrative and supply duties as to the inner regularizations in the Krealia, receives foreigners of high standing, plans and other organises different receptions at Stalin's, Molotov's and other "leaders", is responsible for the maintenance of order during the sessions of the Supreme Soviet in the Sig Krealia salace etc.

The Krealin is undoubtedly the most carefully guarden or jette of the whole world, though am unitiated person will hardly metide it. The visitors can enter the Krealin mainly through the gates of the Spassky Tower, epoping on the hed oquare, and they may be used only by persons, living in the Krealin and heving a persons used only by persons, living in the Krealin and heving a personal pess for entering it. The opensky gate is open in the day time, and the way is apparently beried only by two sentries in one uniforms of the supreme Soviet military school, but it is, prosently, much more difficult to pass through this open gate than to be tothe increase depot where stom bombs are stored.

Foreign diplomets of high standing and foreign guests of the Joviet government, neving been invited to visit the aremith, was the Speakey gets simpst without any impediments, and they can be even imagine what it means for an ordinary doviet citizen to high through the shole procedure for getting a pass to the aremithmough the shole procedure for getting a pass to the aremithmough the shole procedure in the leguit of a call made by some of the high party and government institutions located there, or seconding to a personal invitation of one of the leaders. The usual order of issuing a pass is as follows:

the person, calling that or another visitor, secus to the person, calling that or another visitor, als address,

The commander semis the copy or this request through the registration section of the 1st Division to the special recording sector of the 1st Special Division of the Guds. If this person is a non-resident of Mossow, a diphered enquiry about his is because sent

M.O.

the 1st Special Division of the regional administration of the MKWD that is concerned with his place of residence or work. If such a person was recorded with the registration files of the AMM (anti-Soviet elements), the pass will not be issued to him, but neither he, nor the person who submitted the request for seeing him will be informed about the recesses of the deniel.

If the ensure of the 1st Special Division is a favourable one, the request is being forwarded to the office of the Armalia. superintendent, that summons this person to visit the Kremlin on a certain day and at a certain time. In such cases a car on duty with the transport section of the 1st Division is being seat to bring the man to the Spansky Tower. My this time a pens has elreeny been made out, in four copies and usually of different colors, in the pess office. All these four copies are handed to the visitor and he is told, politely but firmly, to go in a certain direction without stopping enywhere or staring at enything. Dome two hundred meters away the visitor is met by a gourdanan who checks up his passes, leaves one of them with him and directs the visitor to the next guardesen with the same instructions. The last guardesen on duty accompanies him to the door of the reon where he has been called. There he is met by the private secretary of the person calling him, who checks up his documents and instructs the Visitor to give a short account of his business, not detaining the chief with unnecessary talk. As soon is the "audience" is closed, the visitor is assempenied exectly in the seme way to the exit from the Krealia.

If a Polithuro member works outside the Kremlin walls, the same procedure is introduced in the institution where he is the bear. So, for instance, when issue M.Kaganovich was the People's Commisser for heil Rays (1935-1942), the pass to the building of the People's Commisseriet was issued by the Transport administration of the MKYD, but a special efficial of the 1st Division issued the passes to the flat where the effice of Kaganovich was located. In this case the visiter also received four passes, the last of which he handed to the official of the 1st Division on dutyful the

Narkon's flat, who showed him the necessary door and instructed him to pess quickly without stopping and looking at the boards on other doors. Two guards in the EKW uniform, armed with guas were on duty at the door of Regenswich's reception-room.

Ordahonikidse, the only one from all members of the Folithure, who firstly refused to have special guards, and made the access to him comparatively simple. Ordahonikidse protested against the setting up of the bodyguard in such a categorical way, that the 1st Divinion was obliged to protest him secretly, in a way, not noticeable to Ordahonikidse himself.

Commander of the Guard of Objects is concerned with guarding of the government objects, mentioned above, with the exception of the Erealin. He has in his subordination the seconds commandant's office (vtores managements komendature) that has in its disposal the following units of the NEVD guard troops:

- a) bpecial division MUD (regulirovks ulicknows dvisheniyas regulation of traffic). This division consists of approximately
 three thousand MAVD men, that have been specially trained. The division owes its mame to the fact, that a considerable part of its
 personial wears the militia miforms with the oversleeve sign "MUL".
 This division guards the road from the Kremlin to the country residences of Stalin and other persons on the "nomenclature list".
 Their permanent duties include also the regulation of the traffic
 and the guarding of all streets between the Kremlin and the buildings occupied by the Central Party Committee, the Central Cummittee
 of the Komsomol, the Council of the People's Commissars of the
 USBR and other objects under protection of the 1st Livision. If
 Stelin or other members of the Politbure visit some plants or constructions in Moseow, the guarding of all streets included in the
- b) A special division of night guards is used for guarding the governmental high road in Moscow at sight. The posts manued by these guards intensify the protection of this road, already secured by other sub-units. The staff of this division is situated in one of the houses in the Bolshoy Gnezdikovsky lane.

e) Quart division of the MKTD - menned and amed assorbing to the same standards as the guard division of the Kremlin, in guarding the territory, where persons under protection of the lat Division reside.

Besides this, a special group of water militie, guarding the part of the river Neskva where it flows through the territory reserved for the residence of the Government members, is obviously subordinated to the 3nd semmedent's office.

Resides the two Kommendature's (commendant's offices), mentioned above, there are other Kommendantures, concerned with the guarding of other objects under protection of the 1st Division. The authors had no possibility of clearing up the functions and tasks of all these kommendantures of the 1st Division, but it is known that the rrd Kommendanture is concerned with the enti-eireraft defence of Moscow.

The protection of Stalin and other high party officials during their daily journey from the Kremlin to the "governmental area" is carried on with utmost care, and even at the time of peace surpasses by far emything that was permitted, for example, by Mit-ler during the years of war.

According to the general plan of reconstruction of Moseow eli streets, included into the daily route of Stalin and his collaborators, acquired unusual breadth of 40 and even 60 meters, that is practically absolutely unnecessary. The cars of "leaders" run always along the very middle of these streets most practically excludes every possibility of an attempt. The inhabitants of the houses along this route are subjected to a special shedk-up of the let Division, and all families that sweke a suspicien in any may are immediately outset these other regions of Moseow.

nent villas and Sauther-cheed, for some 80 miles from Hossew, is divided into several kommendantures, with an all-day-round duty in the area of each homsendanture. Before the war these kommendantures were manned employees of the 1st Division, and this system has probably been preserved after the war.

Usually these men wore the militia uniforms without any distinguishing festures of their special destination. Each section of the road was secured with signal posts and telephones. Then Stalin left the Kremlin or the gates of his ville, the "slaw" signal was given to all posts.

As soon as the cortege of Stalin or of some other leader has left the section of one kommendantura, the next one is notified by a special signal about the approach of ears in order to stop any cross-movement. Any person, riding or walking along the highroad at this moment and stopping for any reason (for instance. to pump the tire of a car or a bicycle, etc.) has to present him personal documents for a check-up, and if anything seems suspicious he is arrested and questioned in the inquest section of the 1st Division. One former prisoner of the Ukhts-rechors "corrective labor camp" told the authors of this work that one of his fellowinmetes was a collective farmer from the environs of Mondow, when was sentenced in 1936 for an attempt upon Stalin's life. This collective farger came to Moscow on some business. My the evening he had s drop too. much, and being drunk, fell down to sleep somewhere near the Moshaisk highroad. He soke in the SKYD. During the search a "weapon" was found on him - a kitchen mails of the kind used in the country. Three days later this collective farmer was brought to the Butyrks prises, and the "troiks" of the Moses w regional MEVD administration seutenced him to five years of deportation, according to the clause 58, par.8 - terrorism. Taking into consideration such cases one must not be astonianed at the fact, that Moscow citisens try to turn into the side streets as seen as they hear the heetess of the approaching government cars.

Stalin's cortège for his journeys in Mossow and along the Moshaisk highrood usually consists of 3-4 cers with the "Als-7" trade-mark. These cers are home-made, armoured, their greenish glasses are bullet-proof. A representative of the 1st Division must be always present at their reception from the plant.

The first ear in the Stalin's cortege has the tank of knock-ing down all persons crossing the read before the cortage as well

as any ear that might be a danger to the governmental cars. Head dee the driver, men of the 1st Division are in the first ear, knowing an attentive eye on all persons and cars on Stella's route. Stella's number himself is usually in the second or in the third ear, which performed to the head of the column only before the very entrance to the Kremlin or directly at the gate of Stella's villa. The drivers of all governmental cars were without any exception on the staff of the 18t Division as workers of its transport section

The commandant of the guard of objects is also consermed with guarding the government hunting estates. The so called "presserve" at the station los of the Morthern railway by Moscow, was one of such estates. Alk were among other animals of this estates, though ordinary citizens of the Soviet Union were prohibited to hunt them.

Transport section. Is concerned with all governmental means of transportation.

while travelling over the moviet Union, Stalin and other folithurs members use their private railway cars. Sefore the war the Soviet leaders almost never used the simplenes, finding this kind of transport too risky for their precious selves. According to some information, a special, absolutely secret order was immeded by Stalin before the war, formally prohibiting to the "nomemblesture workers" to use planes without exceptionally serious reasons and without his own approval of every flight, May be, the "great leader" feered that someone of his collaborators might flee abroadfil As far as it is known, btalin himself flew only once of from Moscos to Teheran, in 1943.

The former chief of the government trein Mislevodek-Sochi informed the authors about the following details of protecting Stalin and other "leaders" during their railway travels.

Every member of the Polithure has its own private railway car that may be used only by himself and by his family members. As to their outward appearance these cars differed in no way from the usual passenger's cars, but they were exceedingly lime xurious inside. So, for instance, mahagony was used for the

interior decoration and farmiture of Stalin's car, Karelian birth was used for the same purposes in Regenerich's car etc. The car:

were constructed in such a way that the jerks at the joints of rails were not felt inside the car. For this aim a thick layer of lead, two layers of rough felt and one of cark were put under the wooden planking of the floor which was covered in its turn with a layer of felt, lineless and a negalificant carpet. Such a personal car was used only for 20-30 days in the year, but nevertheless every year there were obligatory capital repairs, the same of which amounted to hundreds of thousands of roubles for only one car.

The Soviet burequerate of a lever rank travelled generally in sleeping-ears (the se-called "Mitropa" cars) of the usual fast trains; several fast trains were accomplating them a the "Med Arrow" express plying between Moscow and Lemingred, "Lax-Express so 1" - Moscow-Manakuria etc. The governmental train Kislovodak-Sochi, plying between the groups of apas, was of the same Kind.

their personal car was coupled in the end of the train, and it was followed by exactly the same "covering" car with an MiVI de-technent. Such an order existed only for the governmental train Kislovodsk-Sochi; if Stalin or his: collections were travelling in other directions, a special train was put together for each of them including the personal car of the "leader". Before such person got into the train, the chief of the train had been summoned to the MIVID headquarters of this railroad can signed a special premise of avoiding any leakage about the person of the traveller and his guards.

when the train leaves the station, the chief of the train and the chief of the railresd MEVD get into the lecomotive and stay there until the train reaches its place of destination.

A day or two before the arrival of Stelia, a special official of the 1st Division comes to every relired educates than to work out with the chief of the relired SKVD measures securing the safety of the "leader". Stelia is accompanied only by a small

Declassified in Part - Sanitized Copy Approved for Release 2012/10/04 : CIA-RDP80-00926A003100010005-3

group of his bodyguard and officials of the 1st Division, coming from Hoseev. All the rest of the guards are provided by the chief of the railroot HKVD. The men of the HKVD teem always wear plain clethes, and are distributed in a more or less proportional way to stand in the tembours of the whole train, or too mixed up with other passengers of the train. Hene wen always take a seet in the diming-our to listen the conversations of the passengers. The chief of the relirect HKVD, travelling in the locasetive, is considered to be the shief of the local guards, but besides him, a pagementative of the 1st Division, is travelling in Stalin's car. Hefere the train leaves the station, the chief of the train is introduced to him, and the orders of this official of the 1st Division are obligatory both for the chief of the train and the chief of the railroad HKVD.

Besides those three persons nobody else has the right to know who travels in the special car, coupled in the end of the train. But usually the personnel of the train and the station masters guess the rank of the traveller by the character of the protective measures. Such a train stops only at central stations to take water. When the train has to pass, all arrival and departure railway points are tightly closed with spixes at all stations. A pointment stands together with an MAVD agent-representative of this station at each railway point. The guards wearing MAVD uniforms, eperative agents-representatives of the Transport Section of the railroad MAVD, the railway militie stand along the transhes, in tunnels and along the road-bed.

-

The train is stopped at the departure and arrival platforms in such a way that the purposes personal car of Stelin or of any other member of the Polithure would be exactly eppealte the operative pest of the SKYD of this station. Immediately after the arrival of the train the SKYD guards in plain elothes range themselves in lines on both sides of the ear, and a group of guards fills in the adjoining part of the platform and in different ways prevents the public to go sheed, though no formal order is given to the people to stop. At first two official of the 1st

Division alight from the car, then they are followed by Stalin and a couple of EXVD men. All this group passes quickly the EXVD post and gots into some cars, looking exactly the same and wait ing for Stalin. Usually the "Buick" cars are waiting for Stalin at the Sochi station. During all this coronony even the anies of the train cannot approach the Stalin's car. All these measures of precaution are taken in spite of the fact that only the members of the government, the high ranking party officials and some distinguished generals enjoy the right to travel in this governmental train.

In case of any breakage or direpair in Stalin's car, the master may enter it only accompanied by the chief of the railroad MAVD, and his bex with tools is previously inspected with greatest care. A "forbidden some" with a redius of more than 5 kilometers has been established around the governmental villas between Booki and Matsesta. But the fear of the MAVD is so intense, that people don't even try to approach this some. when molotov, assemovich. Voroshilov, indreyev, thdanev and other leaders were travelilia. the same precaution measures were taken. The only exception was made by the member of Politburo and reople's Commisser for demys Industry, Sergo Ordshonikicze (died in 1937) who liked to walk slong the platform emong the public that halled him. buch a new haviour of the "leader" drove to dispair the men of the 1st wivision who had to guard him. The second-best "leaders" travelied in general cars of this governmental train, anile nudenniy spent most of his time in the dining-car, where he took a lot of aring a of different mand.

from the dining-car during their travels, as each of them had, a kitchen in his personal ear, where food for him and the group of persons, secompanying him, was prepared. The normal car of thim train had eight two-seated compartments, with a bath-roum for each two compartments. Stalin's car consisted of a kitchen, a study, secretary's office, two bed-rooms, a bath-roum, a drawing-room and a reserve compartment. All of this was furnished with highest possible confort and luxury that beat by far the interior decora-

tion of the former tears train. It is characteristic that the train of the murdered tear Mikolai the Second was left on the side-track of Detakoye Selo (formerly Tearskeye Selo) near Lenia-grad and its cars could not be used for this governmental train, - not saying anything about using them for Stalia's personal needs, - as they were found to be "unsufficiently comfortable".

The yearly maintenance of only this governmental train gave about a million roubles of dead loss, which was covered out of the special fund of the Sownerkon of the Ubaka Capital repairs of this train were made every year, when absolutely all the equipment of the cars was changed, while all other passenger trains in the USSR are subjected: to capital repairs once in six years. And what are the costs for maintaining all (mensonal cars? There are more than a thousand of them in the USAR for the use of different Soviet and Party bureaucrats, though, of course, they are not furnished with such a luxury, as Stalin's car. It is sufficient to mention that before the war personal cars were assigned, besides the Krealin aristocracy, to all the secretaries of the regional party committees, all chiefs of the regional MAYD administrations, all the commenders of the military districts, all chiefs of the railways, all chiefs of the railways MayDis etc., etc. That is how the leaders of the "first socialistic state in world" arrange their personal life !

If Stalin's train is stopped on its way even for five minutes, all the personnel guilty of this "crime" is subjected to immediate arrest. Such a case occured once in 1934 on the way from mostov to Sochi. A train of tank-cars with benains was running essually sheed of Stalin's train, and for some reasons or others it could not be put on the side track. As a result of this, the governmental train was stopped before the semaphore of an intermediate station for three minutes. This happened at night, and Stalin did not even motice it, but the men on duty at the station the station-master and even the chief of the railromantal distoly errested.

All, described election saves some ideas of the functions and tasks of the areasport section of the 1st Division.

the Krewlin Supply Department. Controls all food products received for the use in the Kremlin and in governmental country-

houses. Is subordinated to the arealin superintendent and to the

shief of the 1st Division.

.

The department consists of sanitary section, laboratory sur transport section. The laboratory is concerned with the many six of all food stuffs coming to the Kremlin, while the transport we-Sion of the Fremlin supply department not only delivers these food products to the Kremlin, but also takes care that they may not wa ypoisoned on the way.

30, for instance, if, let us say, milk is being delivered to the Kremlin from the governmental state farm near Mo. com, it is accompanied without fail by an official of the transport sec-- clon of the supply department of the lat Division.

The ETO section (material-technical provision) is concerned with covering the material and technical needs of the lat bivision, from sims, military and civil clothing and up to rose full the auto-transport section.

Administrative and agintenance section. Is concerned with the problems of supplying the officials of the 1st bivision, of providing them with lodgings, permits for a place in a rest-fine and fulfils hundreds of other administrative and maintenance functions, connected with the well-being of the employees of them. 1mt Division.

Buch are teaks, structure and field of Operations of the est Division of the MEVE Usek. Let us call once some to our sind An that the 1st Division exists only in Moscow, while the protection of provincial "leaders" of the Communist party and soviet boversment is carried on by the 2nd Special Divisions of the corresponding territorial, administrations of the MalVi-was.

This chapter sould not be so complete and exact as it might be desirable, but it is possible to give a complete survey of the ectivity of the 1st Division only after a long and minute collection Declassified in Part - Sanitized Copy Approved for Release 2012/10/04 : CIA-RDP80-00926A003100010005-3

The leaders of the Kremlin distatorably and this fork parcularly difficult. The authors were obliged to collect this forformation from different persons, each of whom, as a rule, they
very little about these innermost secrets of the Kremlin. Inserfore, just in this chapter one may expect to find various insecurecies not only in the structure of a section, but even in the